This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

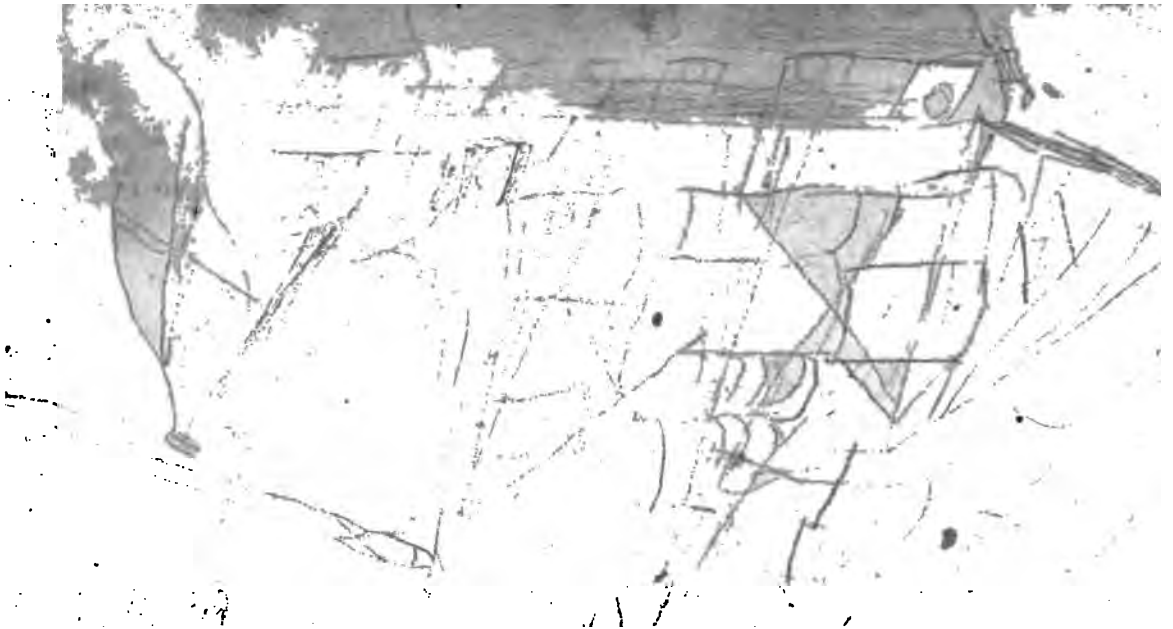
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 3433 07609548 2

EDOX LIBRARY

Duyckinck Collection.
Presented in 1878.

NOT



THE

WORKS

OF

Dr JONATHAN SWIFT,

Dean of St Patrick's, Dublin.

VOLUME IV.

EDINBURGH:

Printed for A. Donaldson, at Pope's Head.

MDCCLXI.

LENOX LIBRARY
NEW YORK

The CONTENTS.

GUlliver's Travels.
The publiſher to the reader 3
Gulliver's letter to his couſin Sympſon 5

PART I.

A VOYAGE to LILLIPUT.

Chap. I. The author gives ſome account of himſelf and family. His firſt inducements to travel. He is ſhipwrecked, and ſwims for his life; gets ſafe on ſhore in the country of Lilliput, is made a priſoner, and carried up the country 10

Chap. II. The Emperor of Lilliput, attended by ſeveral of the nobility, comes to ſee the author in his confinement. The Emperor's perſon and habit deſcribed. Learned men appointed to teach the author their language. He gains favour by his mild diſpoſition. His pockets are ſearched, and his ſword and piſtols taken from him 21

Chap. III. The author diverts the Emperor and his nobility of both ſexes in a very uncommon manner. The diverſions of the court of Lilliput deſcribed. The author has his liberty granted him upon certain conditions 31

Chap. IV. Mildendo, the metropolis of Lilliput, deſcribed, together with the Emperor's palace. A converſation between the author and a principal ſecretary concerning the affairs of that empire. The author's offers to ſerve the Emperor in his wars 38

Chap. V. The author, by an extraordinary ſtratagem, prevents an invaſion. A high title of honour is conferred upon him. Ambaſſadors arrive from the Emperor of Blefuſcu, and ſue for peace. The Empreſs's apartment on fire by an accident; the author inſtrumental in ſaving the reſt of the palace 43

Chap. VI. Of the inhabitants of Lilliput; their learning, laws, and cuſtoms, the manner of educating their children. The author's way of living in that country. His vindication of a great lady 49

Chap. VII. The author, being informed of a deſign to accuſe him of high treaſon, makes his eſcape to Blefuſcu. His reception there 5

Chap. VIII. The author, by a lucky accident, finds means to leave Blefuſcu; and, after ſome difficulties, returns ſafe to his native country

PART II.

A VOYAGE to BROBDINGNAG.

Chap. I. A great ſtorm deſcribed, the long-boat ſent to fetch water, the author goes with it to diſcover the country. He is left on ſhore, is ſeized by one of the natives, and carried to a farmer's houſe. His reception, with ſeveral accidents that happened there. A deſcription of the inhabitants 1

Chap. II. A deſcription of the farmer's daughter. The author carried to a market-town, and then to the metropolis. The particulars of his journey 8

Chap. III. The author ſent for to court. The Queen buys him of his maſter the farmer, and preſents him to the King. He diſputes with his Majeſty's great ſcholars. An apartment at court provided for the author. He is in high favour with the Queen. He ſtands up for the honour of his own country. His quarrels with the Queen's dwarf 9

Chap. IV. The country deſcribed. A propoſal for correcting modern maps. The King's palace, and ſome account of the metropolis. The author's way of travelling. The chief temple deſcribed 10

Chap. V. Several adventures that happened to the author. The execution of a criminal. The author ſhews his ſkill in navigation 10

Chap. VI. Several contrivances of the author to pleaſe the King and Queen. He ſhews his ſkill in muſic. The King inquires into the ſtate of England, which the author relates to him. The King's obſervations thereon 11

Chap. VII. The author's love of his country. He makes a propoſal of much advantage to the King, which is rejected. The King's great ignorance in politics. The learning of that country very imperfect and confined. The laws, and military affairs, and parties in the ſtate 12

Chap. VIII. The King and Queen make a progreſs to the frontiers. The author attends them. The manner in which he leaves the country very particularly related. He returns to England 13

PART III.

A VOYAGE to LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI, LUGGNAGG, GLUBBDUBDRIB, and JAPAN.

Chap. I. The author ſets out on his third voyage, is taken by pirates. The malice of a Dutchman. His arrival at an iſland. He is received into Laputa 142
Chap. II. The humours and diſpoſitions of the Laputians deſcribed. An account of their learning. Of the King, and his court. The author's reception there. The inhabitants ſubject to fear and diſquietudes. An account of the women 149
Chap. III. A phænomenon ſolved by modern philoſophy and aſtronomy. The Laputians *great* improvements in the latter. The King's method of ſuppreſſing inſurrections 157
Chap. IV. The author leaves Laputa, is conveyed to Balnibarbi, arrives at the metropolis. A deſcription of the metropolis, and the country adjoining. The author hoſpitably received by a great lord. His converſation with that lord 164
Chap. V. The author permitted to ſee the grand academy of Lagado. The academy largely deſcribed. The arts wherein the profeſſors employ themſelves 167
Chap. VI. A further account of the academy. The author propoſes ſome improvements, which are honourably received 175
Chap. VII. The author leaves Lagado, arrives at Maldonada. No ſhip ready. He takes a ſhort voyage to Glubbdubdrib. His reception by the governor 181
Chap. VIII. A further account of Glubbdubdrib. Ancient and modern hiſtory corrected 191
Chap. IX. The author returns to Maldonada. Sails to the kingdom of Luggnagg. The author confined. He is ſent for to court. The manner of his admittance. The King's great lenity to his ſubjects 202
Chap. X. The Luggnuggians commended. A particular deſcription of the Struldbrugs, with many converſations between the author and ſome eminent perſons upon that ſubject 205
Chap. XI. The author leaves Luggnagg, and ſails to Japan. From thence he returns in a Dutch ſhip to Amſterdam, and from Amſterdam to England 215

PART IV.

A VOYAGE to the country of the HOUYHNHNMS.

Chap. I. The author ſets out as captain of a ſhip. His men conſpire

conſpire againſt him, confine him a long time to his cabin, ſet him on ſhore in an unknown land. He travels up into the country. The Yahoos, a ſtrange ſort of animal, deſcribed. The author meets two Houyhnhnms 2

Chap. II. The author conducted by a Houyhnhnm to his houſe. The houſe deſcribed. The author's reception. The food of the Houyhnhnms. The author in diſtreſs for want of meat, is at laſt relieved. His manner of feeding in this country 2

Chap. III. The author ſtudious to learn the language; the Houyhnhnm, his maſter, aſſiſts in teaching him. The language deſcribed. Several Houyhnhnms of quality come out of curioſity to ſee the author. He gives his maſter a ſhort account of his voyage 2

Chap. IV. The Houyhnhnms notion of truth and falſehood. The author's diſcourſe diſapproved by his maſter. The author gives a more particular account of himſelf, and the accidents of his voyage 2

Chap. V. The author, at his maſter's commands, informs him of the ſtate of England. The cauſes of war among the princes of Europe. The author begins to explain the Engliſh conſtitution 2

Chap. VI. A continuation of the ſtate of England under Queen Anne. The character of a firſt miniſter of ſtate in European courts 2

Chap. VII. The author's great love of his native country. His maſter's obſervations upon the conſtitution and adminiſtration of England, as deſcribed by the author, with parallel caſes and compariſons. His maſter's obſervations upon human nature 2

Chap. VIII. The author relates ſeveral particulars of the Yahoos. The great virtues of the Houyhnhnms. The education and exerciſe of their youth. Their general aſſembly 2

Chap. IX. A grand debate at the general aſſembly of the Houyhnhnms, and how it was determined. The learning of the Houyhnhnms. Their buildings. Their manner of burials. The defectiveneſs of their language 2

Chap. X. The author's œconomy, and happy life, among the Houyhnhnms. His great improvement in virtue by converſing with them. Their converſations. The author hath notice given him by his maſter, that he muſt depart from the country. He falls into a ſwoon for grief; but ſubmits. He contrives and finiſhes a canoe by the help of a fellow-ſervant, and puts to ſea at a venture 2

Chap. XI. The author's dangerous voyage. He arrives at New Holl

land, hoping to ſettle there. Is wounded with an arrow ne of the natives. Is ſeized, and carried by force into rtugueſe ſhip. The great civilities of the captain. The or arrives at England 284

XII. The author's veracity. His deſign in publiſhing work. His cenſure of thoſe travellers who ſwerve from truth. The author clears himſelf from any ſiniſter ends riting. An objection anſwered. The method of plant- colonies. His native country commended. The right of crown to thoſe countries deſcribed by the author, is ju- d. The difficulty of conquering them. The author s his laſt leave of the reader; propoſes his manner of g for the future; gives good advice, and concludes 292

cal eſſay upon the faculties of the mind 299
tions for the year 1708; by Iſaac Bickerſtaff, Eſq; 305
count of the death of Mr Partridge the almanac-maker 315
Bickerſtaff detected; by John Partridge 318
and impartial account of the proceedings of Iſaac Bic- taff, Eſq; againſt me 319
lication of Iſaac Bickerſtaff, Eſq; 325
ous prediction of Merlin the Britiſh wizard 331
ronderful wonder of wonders 336
ronder of all the wonders that ever the world wondered at 341
poſal for correcting, improving, and aſcertaining the Eng- tongue 344
free thoughts upon the preſent ſtate of affairs 362
ghts on various ſubjects 383

TRAVELS into ſeveral REMOTE NATIONS of the world.

By Lemuel Gulliver, firſt a Surgeon, and then a Captain of ſeveral ſhips.

In FOUR PARTS.

The PUBLISHER to the READER.

THE author of theſe travels, Mr. Lemuel Gulliver, is my antient and intimate friend; there is likewiſe ſome relation between us on the mother's ſide. About three years ago, Mr. Gulliver, growing weary of the concourſe of curious people coming to him at his houſe in Redriff, made a ſmall purchaſe of land with a convenient houſe near Newark in Nottinghamſhire, his native country, where he now lives retired, yet in good eſteem among his neighbours.

Although Mr. Gulliver was born in Nottinghamſhire, where his father dwelt, yet I have heard him ſay, his family came from Oxfordſhire; to confirm which, I have obſerved in the church-yard at Banbury, in that county, ſeveral tombs and monuments of the Gullivers.

Before he quitted Redriff, he left the cuſtody of the following papers in my hands, with the liberty to diſpoſe of them as I ſhould think fit. I have carefully peruſed them three times: the ſtyle is very plain and ſimple; and the only fault I find is, that the author, after the manner of travellers, is a little too circumſtantial. There is an air of truth apparent through the whole; and indeed the author was ſo diſtinguiſhed for his veracity, that it became a ſort of a proverb among his neighbours at Redriff, when any one affirmed a thing, to ſay it was as true as if Mr. Gulliver had ſpoken it.

By the advice of ſeveral worthy perſons, to whom, with the author's *permiſſion*, I communicated theſe papers, I

 now

now venture to ſend them into the world, hoping they may be, at leaſt for ſome time, a better entertainment to our young noblemen, than the common ſcribbles of politics and party.

This volume would have been at leaſt twice as large, if I had not made bold to ſtrike out innumerable paſſages relating to the winds and tides, as well as to the variations and bearings in the ſeveral voyages, together with the minute deſcriptions of the management of the ſhip in ſtorms in the ſtyle of ſailors; likewiſe the account of longitudes and latitudes; wherein I have reaſon to apprehend, that Mr. Gulliver may be a little diſſatisfied: but I was reſolved to fit the work as much as poſſible to the general capacity of readers. However, if my own ignorance in ſea affairs ſhall have led me to commit ſome miſtakes, I alone am anſwerable for them: and if any traveller hath a curioſity to ſee the whole work at large, as it came from the hand of the author, I will be ready to gratify him.

As for any further particulars relating to the author, the reader will receive ſatisfaction from the firſt pages of the book.

RICHARD SYMPSON.

ETTER from Capt. GULLIVER to his couſin SYMPSON.

Written in the year 1727.

YPE you will be ready to own publickly, when-
er you ſhall be called to it, that by your great and
nt urgency, you prevailed on me to publiſh a very
and uncorrect account of my travels, with direction
: ſome young gentleman of either univerſity to put
in order, and correct the ſtyle, as my couſin Dam-
id by my advice, in his book called, *A voyage round*
rld. But I do not remember I gave you power to
it, that any thing ſhould be omitted, and much
at any thing ſhould be inſerted: therefore, as to the
I do here renounce every thing of that kind; parti-
y a paragraph about her majeſty queen Anne, of moſt
and glorious memory; although I did reverence and
r her more than any of human ſpecies. But you, or
interpolator, ought to have conſidered, that as it
ot my inclination, ſo was it not decent to praiſe any
l of our compoſition before my maſter Houyhnhnm:
ſides, the fact was altogether falſe; for to my
ledge, being in England during ſome part of her ma-
[redacted], ſhe did govern by a chief miniſter; nay even
o ſucceſſively, the firſt whereof was the lord of Go-
in, and the ſecond the lord of Oxford; ſo that you
nade me *ſay the thing that was not.* Likewiſe, in
count of the academy of projectors, and ſeveral
es of my diſcourſe to my maſter Houyhnhnm, you
either omitted ſome material circumſtances, or min-
: changed them in ſuch a manner, that I do hardly
mine own work. When I formerly hinted to you
ing of this in a letter, you were pleaſed to anſwer,
ou were afraid of giving offence; that people in
were very watchful over the preſs, and apt not
o interpret, but to puniſh every thing which looked
Innuendo (as I think you call it.) But, pray how
that which *I ſpoke ſo many years ago*, and at above

five thouſand leagues diſtance, in another reign, be applied to any of the Yahoos, who now are ſaid to govern the herd; eſpecially at a time when I little thought on, or feared, the unhappineſs of living under them? have not I the moſt reaſon to complain, when I ſee theſe very Yahoos carried by Houyhnhnms in a vehicle, as if theſe were brutes and thoſe the rational creatures? and indeed, to avoid ſo monſtrous and deteſtable a ſight was one principal motive of my retirement hither.

Thus much I thought proper to tell you in relation to yourſelf, and to the truſt I repoſed in you.

I do in the next place complain of my own great want of judgment, in being prevailed upon by the intreaties and falſe reaſonings of you and ſome others, very much againſt my own opinion, to ſuffer my travels to be publiſhed. Pray bring to your mind how often I deſired you to conſider, when you inſiſted on the motive of *publick good*, that the Yahoos were a ſpecies of animals utterly incapable of amendment by precepts or example: and ſo it hath proved; for, inſtead of ſeeing a full ſtop put to all abuſes and corruptions, at leaſt in this little iſland, as I had reaſon to expect; behold, after above ſix months warning, I cannot learn that my book has produced one ſingle effect according to mine intentions. I deſired you would let me know by a letter, when party and faction were extinguiſhed; judges learned and upright; pleaders honeſt and modeſt, with ſome tincture of common ſenſe, and Smithfield blazing with pyramids of law-books; the young nobility's education entirely changed; the phyſicians baniſhed; the female Yahoos abounding in virtue, honour, truth, and good ſenſe; courts and levees of great miniſters thoroughly weeded and ſwept of wit, merit, and learning rewarded; all diſgracers of the preſs in proſe and verſe, condemned to eat nothing but their own cotton, and quench their thirſt with their own ink. Theſe, and a thouſand other reformations, I firmly counted upon by your encouragement; as indeed they were plainly deducible from the precepts delivered in my book. And it muſt be owned, that ſeven months were a ſufficient time to correct every vice and folly to which Yahoos are ſubject, if their natures had been capable of *the leaſt* diſpoſition to virtue or wiſdom: yet, ſo far have

you been from anſwering mine expectation in any of your letters; that on the contrary you are loading our carriet every week with libels, and keys, and reflections, and memoirs, and ſecond parts; wherein I ſee myſelf accuſed of reflecting upon great ſtates-folk; of degrading human nature (for ſo they have ſtill the confidence to ſtile it) and of abuſing the female ſex. I find likewiſe, that the writers of thoſe bundles are not agreed among themſelves; for ſome of them will not allow me to be the author of mine own travels; and others make me author of books, to which I am wholly a ſtranger.

I find likewiſe, that your printer hath been ſo careleſs as to confound the times, and miſtake the dates of my ſeveral voyages and returns; neither aſſigning the true year, nor the true month, nor day of the month: and I hear the original manuſcript is all deſtroyed ſince the publication of my book; neither have I any copy left; however, I have ſent you ſome corrections, which you may inſert, if ever there ſhould be a ſecond edition: and yet I cannot ſtand to them; but ſhall leave that matter to my judicious and candid readers to adjuſt it as they pleaſe.

I hear ſome of our ſea-Yahoos find fault with my ſea-language, as not proper in many parts, nor now in uſe. I cannot help it. In my firſt voyages, while I was young, I was inſtructed by the oldeſt mariners, and learned to ſpeak as they did. But I have ſince found that the ſea-Yahoos are apt, like the land ones, to become newfangled in their words, which the latter change every year; inſomuch, as I remember upon each return to mine own country, their old dialect was ſo altered, that I could hardly underſtand the new. And I obſerve, when any Yahoo comes from London, out of curioſity to viſit me at mine own houſe, we neither of us are able to deliver our conceptions in a manner intelligible to the other.

If the cenſure of the Yahoos could any way affect me, I ſhould have great reaſon to complain, that ſome of them are ſo bold as to think my book of travels a mere fiction out of mine own brain; and have gone ſo far as to drop hints, that the Houyhnhnms and Yahoos have no more exiſtence than the inhabitants of Utopia.

Indeed I muſt confeſs, that as to the people of Lilliput, Brobdingrag (for ſo the word ſhould have been ſpelt, and not erroneouſly

erroneouſly Brobdingnag) and Laputa, I have never yet heard of any Yahoo ſo preſumptuous as to diſpute their being, or the facts, I have related concerning them; becauſe the truth immediately ſtrikes every reader with conviction. And is there leſs probability in my account of the Houyhnhnms or Yahoos, when it is manifeſt as to the latter, there are ſo many thouſands, even in this city, who only differ from their brother brutes in Houyhnhnm-land, becauſe they uſe a ſort of Jabber, and do not go naked? I wrote for their amendment, and not their approbation. The united praiſe of the whole race would be of leſs conſequence to me, than the neighing of thoſe two degenerate Houyhnhnms I keep in my ſtable; becauſe from theſe, degenerate as they are, I ſtill improve in ſome virtues without any mixture of vice.

Do theſe miſerable animals preſume to think, that I am ſo degenerated as to defend my veracity? Yahoo as I am, it is well known through all Houyhnhnm-land, that, by the inſtructions and example of my illuſtrious maſter, I was able in the compaſs of two years (although I confeſs with the utmoſt difficulty) to remove that infernal habit of lying, ſhuffling, deceiving, and equivocating, ſo deeply rooted in the very ſouls of all my ſpecies; eſpecially the Europeans.

I have other complaints to make upon this vexatious occaſion; but I forbear troubling myſelf or you any further. I muſt freely confeſs, that ſince my laſt return ſome corruptions of my Yahoo nature have revived in me by converſing with a few of your ſpecies, and particularly thoſe of mine own family, by an unavoidable neceſſity; elſe I ſhould never have attempted ſo abſurd a project as that of reforming the Yahoo race in this kingdom: but I have now done with all ſuch viſionary ſchemes for ever.

April 2, 1727.

*** That the original copy of theſe travels was altered by the perſon, through whoſe hands it was conveyed to the preſs, is a fact; but the paſſages, of which Mr. Gulliver complains *in this letter*, are to be found only in the firſt editions; for the

Dean.

1 having reſtored the text wherever it had been altered, the copy to the late Mr. Motte, by the hands of Mr. les Ford. This copy has been exactly followed in every :quent edition, except that printed in Ireland, by George ener; the editor of which, ſuppoſing the Dean to be ſerious n he mentioned the corruptions of dates, and yet finding unaltered, thought fit to alter them himſelf; there is how- ſcarce one of theſe alterations, in which he has not com- :d a blunder; though while he was thus buſy in defacing arts that were perfect, he ſuffered the accidental blemiſhes :hers to remain. *Hawkeſ.*—See the preface to this edition.

TRAVELS

TRAVELS into ſeveral REMOTE NATIONS of the world*.

PART I.

A VOYAGE to LILLIPUT.

CHAP. I.

The author gives ſome account of himſelf and family: his firſt inducements to travel. He is ſhipwrecked, and ſwims for his life; gets ſafe on ſhore in the country of Lilliput: is made a priſoner, and carried up the country.

MY father had a ſmall eſtate in Nottinghamſhire; I was the third of five ſons. He ſent me to Emanuel college in Cambridge at fourteen years old, where I reſided three years, and applied myſelf cloſe to my ſtudies; but the charge of maintaining

* Theſe voyages are intended as a moral political romance; in which Swift ſeems to have exerted the ſtrongeſt efforts of a fine irregular genius. But while his imagination and his wit delight, the venomous ſtrokes of his ſatire, although in ſome places juſt, are carried into ſo univerſal a ſeverity, that not only all human actions, but human nature itſelf, is placed in the worſt light.——Perfection in every attribute is not indeed allotted to particular men. But, among the whole ſpecies, we diſcover ſuch an aſſemblage of all the great and amiable virtues, as may convince us, that the original order of nature contains in it the greateſt beauty. It is directed in a right line, but it deviates into curves and irregular motions, by various alterations and diſturbing cauſes. Different qualifications ſhine out in different men. BACON and NEWTON (not to mention BOYLE) ſhew the divine extent of the human mind: of which power Swift could not be inſenſible; but his diſappointments rendered him ſplenetic, and angry with the whole world.——Education, habit, and conſtitution, give a ſurpriſing variety of characters; and

whilſt

taining me, although I had a very ſcanty allowance, being too great for a narrow fortune, I was bound apprentice to Mr. James Bates, an eminent ſurgeon in London, with whom I continued four years; and my father now and then ſending me ſmall ſums of money, I laid them out in learning navigation, and other parts of the mathematics, uſeful to thoſe who intend to travel, as I always believed it would be ſome time or other my fortune to do. When I left Mr. Bates, I went down to my father; where, by the aſſiſtance of him and my uncle John, and ſome o-

while they produce ſome particular qualities, are apt to check others. Fortitude of mind ſeldom attends a ſedentary life: nor is the man whoſe ambitious views are croſſed, ſcarce ever afterwards endued with benevolence of heart. The ſame mind that is capable of exerting the greateſt virtue, by ſome defect in the firſt ſteps of education often degenerates into the greateſt vice. Theſe effects take their ſource from cauſes almoſt mechanical. The ſoul, in our preſent ſituation, is blended and incloſed with corporeal ſubſtance, and the matter of which our body is compoſed, produces ſtrange impulſes upon the mind.——To correct vice, by ſhewing her deformity, in oppoſition to the beauty of virtue, and to amend the falſe ſyſtems of philoſophy, by pointing out the errors, and applying ſalutary means to avoid them, is a noble deſign, and was, I would fain flatter myſelf, the general intent of this hieroglyphic writer.——Gulliver's travels are chiefly to be looked upon as an irregular eſſay of Swift's peculiar wit and humour. The inhabitants of Lilliput are repreſented, as if reflected from a concave mirror, by which every object is reduced to a deſpicable minuteneſs. The inhabitants of Brobdingnag, by a contrary mirror, are enlarged to a ſhocking deformity. In Lilliput we behold a ſet of puny inſects, or animalcules in human ſhape, ridiculouſly engaged in affairs of importance. In Brobdingnag the monſters of enormous ſize are employed in trifles.——In the two firſt parts there are many ridiculous adventures, even ſuch as muſt have excited mirth from Heraclitus. Where indelicacies do not intervene, the narrative is very entertaining and humorous. In ſome parts, Gulliver ſeems to have had particular incidents, if not particular perſons in his view. His obſervations on education are uſeful: and ſo are his improvements on the inſtitutions of Lycurgus. *Orrery.*

ther

ther relations, I got forty pounds, and a promiſe c
pounds a-year to maintain me at Leyden: there I
phyſic two years and ſeven months, knowing it w
uſeful in long voyages.

Soon after my return from Leyden, I was reco
ed by my good maſter Mr. Bates to be ſurgeo
Swallow, Captain Abraham Pannell, commander
whom I continued three years and a half, making
age or two into the Levant, and ſome other parts
I came back, I reſolved to ſettle in London; t
Mr. Bates, my maſter, encouraged me, and by hi
recommended to ſeveral patients. I took part of
houſe in the Old-Jury; and being adviſed to a
condition, I married Mrs. Mary Burton, ſecond d
to Mr. Edmund Burton hoſier in Newgate-ſtre
whom I received four hundred pounds for a porti

But, my good maſter Bates dying in two year
and I having few friends, my buſineſs began to fa
my conſcience would not ſuffer me to imitate
practice of too many among my brethren. Having
fore conſulted with my wife, and ſome of my a
tance, I determined to go again to ſea. I was ſurg
ceſſively in two ſhips, and made ſeveral voyage
years to the Eaſt and Weſt Indies, by which I g
addition to my fortune. My hours of leiſure I
reading the beſt authors, antient and modern, b
ways provided with a good number of books; an
I was aſhore, in obſerving the manners and diſpoſi
the people, as well as learning their language, w
had a great facility by the ſtrength of my memor

The laſt of theſe voyages not proving very fo
I grew weary of the ſea, and intended to ſtay a
with my wife and family. I removed from the O
to Fetter-lane, and from thence to Wapping, ho
get buſineſs among the ſailors; but it would not
account. After three years expectation that thing
mend, I accepted an advantageous offer from Cap
liam Prichard, maſter of the Antelope, who was
a voyage to the South-Sea. We ſet ſail from Briſt
4. 1699; and our voyage at firſt was very proſ

It would not be proper, for ſome reaſons, to tro
reader with the particulars of our adventures i

Let it ſuffice to inform him, that, in our paſſage thence to the Eaſt-Indies, we were driven by a violent ſtorm to the north-weſt of Van Diemen's land. By obſervation we found ourſelves in the latitude of 30 degrees 2 minutes ſouth. Twelve of our crew were dead by immoderate labour, and ill food; the reſt were in a very weak condition. On the 5th of November, which was the beginning of ſummer in thoſe parts, the weather being very hazy, the ſeamen eſpied a rock within half a cable's length of the ſhip; but the wind was ſo ſtrong, that we were driven directly upon it, and immediately ſplit.

Six of the crew, of whom I was one, having let down the boat into the ſea, made a ſhift to get clear of the ſhip and the rock. We rowed by my computation about three leagues, till we were able to work no longer, being already ſpent with labour while we were in the ſhip. We therefore truſted ourſelves to the mercy of the waves, and in about half an hour the boat was overſet by a ſudden flurry from the north. What became of my companions in the boat, as well as of thoſe who eſcaped on the rock, or were left in the veſſel, I cannot tell; but conclude they were all loſt. For my own part, I ſwam as fortune directed me, and was puſhed forward by wind and tide. I often let my legs drop, and could feel no ground: but when I was almoſt gone, and able to ſtruggle no longer, I found myſelf within my depth; and by this time the ſtorm was much abated. The declivity was ſo ſmall, that I walked near a mile before I got to the ſhore, which I conjectured was about eight o'clock in the evening. I then advanced forward near half a mile, but could not diſcover any ſign of houſes or inhabitants; at leaſt I was in ſo weak a condition, that I did not obſerve them. I was extremely tired, and with that, and the heat of the weather, and about half a pint of brandy that I drank as I left the ſhip, I found myſelf much inclined to ſleep. I lay down on the graſs, which was very ſhort and ſoft, where I ſlept ſounder than ever I remembered to have done in my life, and, as I reckoned, about nine hours; for when I awaked, it was juſt day-light. I attempted to riſe, but was not able to ſtir: for as I happened to lie on my back, I found my arms and legs were ſtrongly faſtened on each ſide to *the ground*; and my hair which was long tied

and

and thick, tied down in the ſame manner, I likewi
ſeveral ſlender ligatures acroſs my body, from m
pits to my thighs. I could only look upwards, the ſ
gan to grow hot, and the light offended my eyes. I
a confuſed noiſe about me; but, in the poſture I lay,
ſee nothing except the sky. In a little time I felt ſom
alive moving on my left leg, which advancing gent
ward over my breaſt came almoſt up to my chin;
bending my eyes downward as much as I could,
ceived it to be a human creature not ſix inches higl
a bow and arrow in his hands, and a quiver at his ba
the mean time, I felt at leaſt forty more of the ſam
(as I conjectured) following the firſt. I was in the
aſtoniſhment, and roared ſo loud, that they all ra
in a fright; and ſome of them, as I was afterward
were hurt with the falls they got by leaping from m
upon the ground. However, they ſoon returned, a
of them, who ventured ſo far as to get a full ſight t
face, lifting up his hands and eyes by way of admi
cried out in a ſhrill but diſtinct voice, *Hekinah degu*
others repeated the ſame words ſeveral times, but
knew not what they meant. I lay all this while, as t
der may believe, in great uneaſineſs; at length
gling to get looſe, I had the fortune to break the
and wrench out the pegs, that faſtened my left arm
ground; for, by lifting it up to my face, I diſcover
methods they had taken to bind me, and at the ſam
with a violent pull, which gave me exceſſive pain,
tle looſened the ſtrings that tied down my hair
left ſide, ſo that I was juſt able to turn my head
two inches. But the creatures ran off a ſecond ti
fore I could ſeize them; whereupon there was a
ſhout in a very ſhrill accent, and after it ceaſed, I
one of them cry aloud, *Tolgo phonac*; when in an
I felt above an hundred arrows diſcharged on n
hand, which pricked me like ſo many needles; a
ſides, they ſhot another flight into the air, as we do
in Europe, whereof many, I ſuppoſe, fell on my
(though I felt them not) and ſome on my face, v
immediately covered with my left hand. Whe
ſhower of arrows was over, I fell a groaning with gr
pain, and then ſtriving again to get looſe, they diſc

nother volley larger than the firſt, and ſome of them attempted with ſpears to ſtick me in the ſides; but by good uck I had on me a buff jerkin, which they could not pierce. thought it the moſt prudent method to lie ſtill, and my leſign was to continue ſo till night, when, my left hand eing already looſe, I could eaſily free myſelf: and as for he inhabitants, I had reaſon to believe I might be a natch for the greateſt army they could bring againſt me, f they were all of the ſame ſize with him, that I ſaw. But ortune diſpoſed otherways of me. When the people oberved I was quiet, they diſcharged no more arrows: but, by the noiſe I heard, I knew their numbers increaſed; and about four yards from me, over-againſt my right ear, I heard a knocking for above an hour, like that of people at work: when turning my head that way, as well as the pegs and ſtrings would permit me, I ſaw a ſtage erected about a foot and a half from the ground, capable of holding four of the inhabitants, with two or three ladders to mount it: from whence one of them, who ſeemed to be a perſon of quality, made me a long ſpeech, whereof I underſtood not one ſyllable. But I ſhould have mentioned, that before the principal perſon began his oration, he cried out three times *Langro dehul ſan*: (theſe words and the former were afterwards repeated and explained to me). Whereupon immediately about fifty of the inhabitants came and cut the ſtrings that faſtened the left ſide of my head; which gave me the liberty of turning it to the right, and of obſerving the perſon and geſture of him that was to ſpeak. He appeared to be of a middle age, and taller than any of the other three who attended him, whereof one was a page that held up his train, and ſeemed to be ſomewhat longer than my middle finger, the other two ſtood one on each ſide to ſupport him. He acted every part of an orator, and I could obſerve many periods of threatnings, and others of promiſes, pity, and kindneſs. I anſwered in a few words, but in the moſt ſubmiſſive manner, lifting up my left hand and both my eyes to the ſun, as calling him for a witneſs; and being almoſt famiſhed with hunger, having not eaten a morſel for ſome hours before I left the ſhip, I found the demands of nature ſo ſtrong upon me, that I could not forbear ſhewing my impatience (perhaps againſt the ſtrict rules of decency)

cency) by putting my finger frequently to my mouth, to ſignify that I wanted food. The *Hurgo* (for ſo they call a great lord, as I afterwards learned) underſtood me very well. He deſcended from the ſtage, and commanded that ſeveral ladders ſhould be applied to my ſides, on which above an hundred of the inhabitants mounted, and walked towards my mouth, laden with baskets full of meat, which had been provided and ſent thither by the King's orders, upon the firſt intelligence he received of me. I obſerved there was the fleſh of ſeveral animals, but could not diſtinguiſh them by the taſte. There were ſhoulders, legs, and loins, ſhaped like thoſe of mutton, and very well dreſſed, but ſmaller than the wings of a lark. I eat them by two or three at a mouthful, and took three loaves at a time about the bigneſs of musket bullets. They ſupplied me as faſt as they could, ſhewing a thouſand marks of wonder and aſtoniſhment at my bulk and appetite. I then made another ſign, that I wanted drink. They found by my eating, that a ſmall quantity would not ſuffice me, and being a moſt ingenious people, they ſlung up with great dexterity one of their largeſt hogſheads, then rolled it towards my hand, and beat out the top; I drank it off at a draught, which I might well do, for it did not hold half a pint, and taſted like a ſmall wine of Burgundy, but much more delicious. They brought me a ſecond hogſhead, which I drank in the ſame manner, and made ſigns for more; but they had none to give me. When I had performed theſe wonders, they ſhouted for joy, and danced upon my breaſt, repeating ſeveral times, as they did at firſt, *Hekinah degul.* They made me a ſign that I ſhould throw down the two hogſheads, but firſt warning the people below to ſtand out of the way, crying aloud, *Borach mevola*, and when they ſaw the veſſels in the air, there was an univerſal ſhout of *Hekinah degul.* I confeſs, I was often tempted, while they were paſſing backwards and forwards on my body, to ſeize forty or fifty of the firſt that came in my reach, and daſh them againſt the ground. But the remembrance of what I had felt, which probably might not be the worſt they could do, and the promiſe of honour I made them, for ſo I interpreted my ſubmiſſive behaviour, ſoon drove out theſe imaginations. *Beſides*, I now conſidered myſelf as bound by the laws of hoſpitality

ality to a people, who had treated me with ſo much
ce and magnificence. However, in my thoughts I
not ſufficiently wonder at the intrepidity of theſe
utive mortals, who durſt venture to mount and walk
my body, while one of my hands was at liberty,
ut trembling at the very ſight of ſo prodigious a crea-
as I muſt appear to them. After ſome time, when
obſerved that I made no more demands for meat,
appeared before me a perſon of high rank from his
rial Majeſty. His Excellency, having mounted on
nall of my right leg, advanced forwards up to my
with about a dozen of his retinue. And producing
edentials under the ſignet royal, which he applied
to my eyes, ſpoke about ten minutes without any
of anger, but with a kind of determinate reſolution,
pointing forwards, which, as I afterwards found,
owards the capital city, about half a mile diſtant,
er it was agreed by his majeſty in council that I
be conveyed. I anſwered in few words, but to no
ſe, and made a ſign with my hand that was looſe,
ig it to the other (but over his excellency's head, for
f hurting him or his train) and then to my own head
ody, to ſignify that I deſired my liberty. It appear
hat he underſtood me well enough, for he ſhook his
by way of diſapprobation, and held his hand in a
re to ſhew, that I muſt be carried as a priſoner.
ever, he made other ſigns to let me underſtand, that
ild have meat and drink enough, and very good treat-
. Whereupon I once more thought of attempting to
my bonds, but again, when I felt the ſmart of their
's upon my face and hands, which were all in bliſters,
many of the darts ſtill ſticking in them, and obſerv-
kewiſe that the number of my enemies increaſed, I
tokens to let them know, that they might do with
hat they pleaſed. Upon this the *Hurgo* and his train
lrew, with much civility, and chearful countenances.
after I heard a general ſhout, with frequent repetiti-
f the words, *Peplom ſelan*, and I felt great numbers
ople on my left ſide, relaxing the cords to ſuch a de-
that I was able to turn upon my right, and to eaſe
lf with making water; which I very plentifully did,
great aſtoniſhment of the people, who conjecturing,

by my motion, what I was going to do, immediately o
pened to the right and left on that ſide, to avoid th
torrent which fell with ſuch noiſe and violence from m
But before this, they had daubed my face and bot
my hands with a ſort of ointment very pleaſant to th
ſmell, which in a few minutes removed all the ſmart o
their arrows. Theſe circumſtances, added to the refreſh
ment I had received by their victuals and drink, whi
were very nouriſhing, diſpoſed me to ſleep. I ſlept abo
eight hours, as I was afterwards aſſured; and it was n
wonder, for the phyſicians, by the Emperor's order, h
mingled a ſleepy potion in the hogſheads of wine.

It ſeems that, upon the firſt moment I was diſcovere
ſleeping on the ground after my landing, the Emperor h
early notice of it by an expreſs; and determined in cou
cil, that I ſhould be tied in the manner I have relate
(which was done in the night while I ſlept) that plen
of meat and drink ſhould be ſent to me, and a machi
prepared to carry me to the capital city.

This reſolution perhaps may appear very bold a
dangerous, and I am confident would not be imitated b
any prince in Europe on the like occaſion; however,
my opinion, it was extremely prudent, as well as gen
rous, for ſuppoſing thoſe people had endeavoured to k
me with their ſpears and arrows while I was aſleep,
ſhould certainly have awaked with the firſt ſenſe of ſma
which might ſo far have rouzed my rage and ſtrengt
as to have enabled me to break the ſtrings, wherewith
was tied; after which, as they were not able to make r
ſiſtance, ſo they could expect no mercy.

Theſe people are moſt excellent mathematicians, a
arrived to a great perfection in mechanics by the count
nance and encouragement of the Emperor, who is a r
nowned patron of learning. This prince hath ſeveral m
chines fixed on wheels for the carriage of trees and oth
great weights. He often builds his largeſt men of wa
whereof ſome are nine feet long, in the woods where t
timber grows, and has them carried on theſe engines thr
or four hundred yards to the ſea. Five hundred carpe
ters and engineers were immediately ſet at work to pr
pare the greateſt engine they had. It was a frame of wo
raiſed three inches from the ground, about ſeven feet lo
a

four wide, moving upon twenty-two wheels. The
it I heard was upon the arrival of this engine, which
eems ſet out in four hours after my landing. It was
ight parallel to me, as I lay. But the principal diffi-
y was to raiſe and place me in this vehicle. Eighty
es, each of one foot high, were erected for this purpoſe,
very ſtrong cords of the bigneſs of packthread were
ned by hooks to many bandages, which the workmen
girt round my neck, my hands, my body, and my
. Nine hundred of the ſtrongeſt men were employed
draw up theſe cords by many pullies faſtened on the
es, and thus, in leſs than three hours, I was raiſed and
g into the engine, and there tied faſt. All this I was
, for, while the whole operation was performing, I
in a profound ſleep by the force of that ſoporiferous
licine infuſed into my liquor. Fifteen hundred of the
peror's largeſt horſes, each about four inches and an
high, were employed to draw me towards the metro-
s, which, as I ſaid, was half a mile diſtant.
About four hours after we began our journey, I awaked
a very ridiculous accident; for the carriage being ſtopt
hile, to adjuſt ſomething, that was out of order, two
three of the young natives had the curioſity to ſee how
ooked, when I was aſleep; they climbed up into the
ine, and advancing very ſoftly to my face, one of them,
officer in the guards put the ſharp end of his half-pike
ood way up into my left noſtril, which tickled my noſe
a ſtraw, and made me ſneeze violently*: whereupon
ſtole off unperceived, and it was three weeks be-
I knew the cauſe of my awaking ſo ſuddenly. We

It has been remarked, that courage in whatever cauſe,
ugh it ſometimes excites indignation, is never the object of
tempt; but this appears to be true, only becauſe courage is
poſed to imply ſuperiority: for this *officer in the guards* be-
es extremely ridiculous and contemptible, by an act of the
daring curioſity, which ſets him in compariſon with Gul-
r; to whom he was ſo much inferior, that a blaſt of the
mountain's noſtrils would have endangered his life; and if
piſm itſelf is not proof againſt ridicule, thoſe ſurely are Lil-
tians in philoſophy, who conſider ridicule as the teſt of
th. *Hawkeſ.*

made a long march the remaining part of the day, a
reſted at night with five hundred guards on each ſide
me, half with torches, and half with bows and arrow
ready to ſhoot me, if I ſhould offer to ſtir. The ne
morning at ſun-riſe we continued our march, and arriv
within two hundred yards of the city-gates about noo
The Emperor, and all his court, came out to meet t
but his great officers would by no means ſuffer his Maj
ſty to endanger his perſon by mounting on my body.

At the place where the carriage ſtopt, there ſtood
ancient temple, eſteemed to be the largeſt in the whc
kingdom, which, having been polluted ſome years befo
by an unnatural murder, was according to the zeal
thoſe people looked upon as profane, and therefore h
been applied to common uſe, and all the ornaments a
furniture carried away. In this edifice it was determin
I ſhould lodge. The great gate, fronting to the nort
was about four feet high, and almoſt two feet wid
through which I could eaſily creep. On each ſide of t
gate was a ſmall window, not above ſix inches from t
ground: into that on the left ſide the King's ſmith co
veyed fourſcore and eleven chains, like thoſe that ha
to a lady's watch in Europe, and almoſt as large, whi
were locked to my left leg with ſix and thirty padlock
Over-againſt this temple, on the other ſide of the gre
highway, at twenty feet diſtance, there was a turret
leaſt five feet high. Here the Emperor aſcended wi
many principal lords of his court to have an opportuni
of viewing me, as I was told, for I could not ſee then
It was reckoned, that above an hundred thouſand inhab
tants came out of the town upon the ſame errand; an
in ſpite of my guards, I believe, there could not be fe
er than ten thouſand at ſeveral times, who mounted m
body by the help of ladders. But a proclamation w
ſoon iſſued to forbid it upon pain of death. When t
workmen found it was impoſſible for me to break looſ
they cut all the ſtrings that bound me; whereupon I ro
up with as melancholy a diſpoſition, as ever I had in m
life. But the noiſe and aſtoniſhment of the people
ſeeing me riſe and walk are not to be expreſſed. Th
chains, that held my left leg, were about two yards lon
and gave me not only the liberty of walking backwar

›rwards in a ſemicircle; but being fixed within four
› of the gate, allowed me to creep in, and lie at my
ngth in the temple.

CHAP. II.

*Emperor of Lilliput, attended by ſeveral of the no-
ty, comes to ſee the author in his confinement. The
peror's perſon and habit deſcribed. Learned men
ointed to teach the author their language. He
ns favour by his mild diſpoſition. His pockets are
rched, and his ſword and piſtols taken from him.*

WHEN I found myſelf on my feet, I looked about
me, and muſt confeſs I never beheld a more en-
ning proſpect. The country around appeared like a
nued garden, and the incloſed fields, which were ge-
y forty feet ſquare, reſembled ſo many beds of
rs. Theſe fields were intermingled with woods of
ſtang*, and the talleſt trees, as I could judge, ap-
l to be ſeven feet high. I viewed the town on my
and, which looked like the painted ſcene of a city in
tre.

had been for ſome hours extremely preſſed by the
ities of nature; which was no wonder, it being al-
two days ſince I had laſt diſburdened myſelf. I was
great difficulties between urgency and ſhame. The
xpedient I could think on, was to creep into my
, which I accordingly did; and ſhutting the gate
me, I went as far as the length of my chain would
, and diſcharged my body of that uneaſy load. But
was the only time I was ever guilty of ſo uncleanly
tion; for which I cannot but hope the candid reader
ive ſome allowance, after he hath maturely and im-
lly conſidered my caſe, and the diſtreſs I was in.
this time my conſtant practice was, as ſoon as I
to perform that buſineſs in open air at the full ex-
of my chain; and due care was taken every morning,
e company came, that the offenſive matter ſhould

Stang is a pole or perch; ſixteen feet and an half. Hawkeſ.

be

be carried off in wheel-barrows by two ſervants ap
for that purpoſe. I would not have dwelt ſo long
circumſtance, that perhaps at firſt ſight may app
very momentous, if I had not thought it nece
juſtify my character in point of cleanlineſs to the
which I am told ſome of my maligners have been
upon this and other occaſions, to call in queſtion

When this adventure was at an end, I came b
of my houſe, having occaſion for freſh air. The E
was already deſcended from the tower, and advar
horſe-back towards me, which had like to have c
dear; for the beaſt, though very well trained, yet
uſed to ſuch a ſight, which appeared as if a m
moved before him, reared up on his hinder feet:
prince, who is an excellent horſeman, kept his f
his attendants ran in, and held the bridle, while
jeſty had time to diſmount. When he alighted,
veyed me round with great admiration; but kept
the length of my chain. He ordered his cooks a
lers, who were already prepared, to give me vict
drink, which they puſhed forward in a ſort of
upon wheels, till I could reach them. I took th
hicles, and ſoon emptied them all; twenty of the
filled with meat, and ten with liquor; each of the
afforded me two or three good mouthfuls; and I
the liquor of ten veſſels, which was contained in
vials, into one vehicle, drinking it off at a draugh
ſo I did with the reſt. The Empreſs, and young
of the blood of both ſexes, attended by many lad
at ſome diſtance in their chairs; but upon the
that happened to the Emperor's horſe, they alight
came near his perſon, which I am now going to d
He is taller by almoſt the breadth of my nail, t
of his court, which alone is enough to ſtrike an a
the beholders. His features are ſtrong and ma
with an Auſtrian lip and arched noſe, his comple
live, his countenance erect, his body and limbs w
portioned, all his motions graceful, and his dep
majeſtic. He was then paſt his prime, being twen
years and three quarters old, of which he had rei
bout ſeven in great felicity, and generally victorio
the better convenience of beholding him I lay on

ſo that my face was parallel to his, and he ſtood but three yards off: however, I have had him ſince many times in my hand, and therefore cannot be deceived in the deſcription. His dreſs was very plain and ſimple, and the faſhion of it between the *Aſiatic* and the *European:* but he had on his head a light helmet of gold, adorned with jewels, and a plume on the creſt. He held his ſword drawn in his hand to defend himſelf, if I ſhould happen to break looſe †; it was almoſt three inches long; the hilt and ſcabbard were gold enriched with diamonds. His voice was ſhrill, but very clear and articulate, and I could diſtinctly hear it, when I ſtood up. The ladies and courtiers were all moſt magnificently clad, ſo that the ſpot they ſtood upon ſeemed to reſemble a petticoat ſpread on the ground, embroidered with figures of gold and ſilver. His imperial majeſty ſpoke often to me, and I returned anſwers; but neither of us could underſtand a ſyllable. There were ſeveral of his prieſts and lawyers preſent, (as I conjectured by their habits) who were commanded to addreſs themſelves to me, and I ſpoke to them in as many languages as I had the leaſt ſmattering of, which were *High* and *Low Dutch*, *Latin*, *French*, *Spaniſh*, *Italian*, and *Lingua Franca*; but all to no purpoſe. After about two hours the court retired, and I was left with a ſtrong guard to prevent the impertinence, and probably the malice of the rabble, who were very impatient to crowd about me as near as they durſt, and ſome of them had the impudence to ſhoot their arrows at me, as I ſat on the ground by the door of my houſe, whereof one very narrowly miſſed my left eye. But the colonel ordered ſix of the ring-leaders to be ſeized, and thought no puniſhment ſo proper, as to deliver them bound into

† The maſculine ſtrength of features, which Gulliver could not ſee, till he laid his face upon the ground; and the awful ſuperiority of ſtature in a being, whom he held in his hand; the helmet, the plume, and the ſword, are a fine reproof of human pride; the objects of which are trifling diſtinctions, whether of perſon or rank; the ridiculous parade and oſtentation of a pigmy, which derive not only their origin, but their uſe, from the folly, weakneſs, and imperfection of ourſelves and others. *Hawkeſ.*

my

my hands, which ſome of his ſoldiers acco
puſhing them forwards with the but-ends of
into my reach: I took them all on my righ
five of them into my coat-pocket, and as to
made a countenance as if I would eat him
poor man ſqualled terribly, and the colonel
cers were in much pain, eſpecially when th
take out my penknife: but I ſoon put t
fear; for, looking mildly, and immediately
ſtrings he was bound with, I ſet him gently on
and away he ran. I treated the reſt in the ſa
taking them one by one out of my pocket; a
ed both the ſoldiers and people were highly
this mark of my clemency, which was repr
much to my advantage at court.

Towards night I got with ſome difficulty in
where I lay on the ground, and continued to
a fortnight; during which time the Emperor
to have a bed prepared for me. Six hundred
common meaſure were brought in carriages,
up in my houſe; an hundred and fifty of thei
together, made up the breadth and length
were four double, which however kept me
differently from the hardneſs of the floor,
ſmooth ſtone. By the ſame computation th
me with ſheets, blankets, and coverlets, tole
for one, who had been ſo long inured to har

As the news of my arrival ſpread throu
dom, it brought prodigious numbers of ric
curious people to ſee me; ſo that the villa
moſt emptied; and great neglect of tillage

* Gulliver has obſerved great exactneſs in th
tion and appearances of the ſeveral objects thu
magnified. But he dwells too much upon theſe
tions. The mind is tired with a repetition of th
as he points out no beauty nor uſe in ſuch amazi
which might have been ſo continued as to hav
provement, at the ſame time that they gave aſto
too often ſhews an indelicacy that is not agreea
His vein of humour moſt improperly in ſome pl
am afraid, he glances at religion. *Orrery.*

muſt have enſued, if his Imperial Majeſty had not
ed by ſeveral proclamations and orders of ſtate a-
this inconveniency. He directed, that thoſe, who
ready beheld me, ſhould return home, and not pre-
o come within fifty yards of my houſe, without li-
from court; whereby the ſecretaries of ſtate got
erable fees.

he mean time, the Emperor held frequent councils
ate, what courſe ſhould be taken with me; and I
terwards aſſured by a particular friend, a perſon of
uality, who was as much in the ſecret as any, that
urt was under many difficulties concerning me.
apprehended my breaking looſe; that my diet
be very expenſive, and might cauſe a famine.
mes they determined to ſtarve me, or at leaſt to
me in the face and hands with poiſoned arrows,
would ſoon diſpatch me; but again they conſider-
t the ſtench of ſo large a carcaſe might produce
e in the metropolis, and probably ſpread through
ole kingdom. In the midſt of theſe conſultations,
officers of the army went to the door of the great
-chamber, and two of them being admitted, gave
ount of my behaviour to the ſix criminals above-
ned, which made ſo favourable an impreſſion in
aſt of his Majeſty, and the whole board, in my be-
at an Imperial commiſſion was iſſued out, oblig-
the villages nine hundred yards round the city to
in every morning ſix beeves, forty ſheep, and o-
ſtuals for my ſuſtenance; together with a propor-
e quantity of bread and wine, and other liquors;
due payment of which his majeſty gave aſſignments
is treaſury. For this prince lives chiefly upon his
meſnes, ſeldom, except upon great occaſions, raiſ-
ſubſidies, upon his ſubjects, who are bound to at-
m in his wars at their own expence. An eſtabliſh-
as alſo made of ſix hundred perſons to be my do-
, who had board-wages allowed for their main-
, and tents built for them very conveniently on
le of my door. It was likewiſe ordered, that three
d taylors ſhould make me a ſuit of cloaths after
ion of the country: that ſix of his majeſty's great-
ſcholars ſhould be employed to inſtruct me in their
language;

language: and laſtly, that the Emperor's horſes, and th
of the nobility, and troops of guards, ſhould be frequen
exerciſed in my ſight to accuſtom themſelves to me.
theſe orders were duly put in execution, and in ab
three weeks I made a great progreſs in learning th
language; during which time the Emperor frequen
honoured me with his viſits, and was pleaſed to aſſiſt
maſters in teaching me. We began already to conve
together in ſome ſort; and the firſt words I learnt w
to expreſs my deſire, that he would pleaſe to give me
liberty, which I every day repeated on my knees. T
anſwer, as I could apprehend it, was, that this muſt
a work of time, not to be thought on without the adv
of his council, and that firſt I muſt *lumos kelmin p*
deſmar lon empoſo; that is, ſwear a peace with him
his kingdom. However, that I ſhould be uſed with
kindneſs; and he adviſed me to acquire by my patie
and diſcreet behaviour, the good opinion of himſelf
his ſubjects. He deſired I would not take it ill, if he g
orders to certain proper officers to ſearch me; for pro
bly I might carry about me ſeveral weapons, which n
needs be dangerous things, if they anſwered the bulk
ſo prodigious a perſon. I ſaid, his majeſty ſhould be ſa
fied; for I was ready to ſtrip myſelf, and turn up
pockets before him. This I delivered, part in words,
part in ſigns. He replied, that by the laws of the ki
dom I muſt be ſearched by two of his officers; that
knew this could not be done without my conſent
aſſiſtance; that he had ſo good an opinion of my gene
ſity and juſtice, as to truſt their perſons in my hands: t
whatever they took from me, ſhould be returned wh
I left the country, or paid for at the rate which I wo
ſet upon them. I took up the two officers in my han
put them firſt into my coat-pockets, and then into ev
other pocket about me, except my two fobs, and anot
ſecret pocket, which I had no mind ſhould be ſearch
wherein I had ſome little neceſſaries, that were of no c
ſequence to any but myſelf. In one of my fobs there
a ſilver watch, and in the other a ſmall quantity of g
in a purſe. Theſe gentlemen, having pen, ink, and pa
about them, made an exact inventory of every th
they ſaw; and, when they had done, deſired I wo

ſet them down, that they might deliver it to the Emperor. This inventory I afterwards tranſlated into Engliſh, and is word for word as follows:

Imprimis, In the right coat-pocket of the *great mountain* (for ſo I interpret the words *Quinbus fleſtrin*) after the ſtricteſt ſearch we found only one great piece of coarſe cloth, large enough to be a foot-cloth for your Majeſty's chief room of ſtate. In the left pocket we ſaw a huge ſilver cheſt, with a cover of the ſame metal, which we the ſearchers were not able to lift. We deſired it ſhould be opened, and one of us ſtepping into it, found himſelf up to the mid leg in a ſort of duſt, ſome part whereof flying up to our faces, ſet us both a ſneezing for ſeveral times together. In his right waiſtcoat-pocket we found a prodigious bundle of white thin ſubſtances, folded one over another, about the bigneſs of three men, tied with a ſtrong cable, and marked with black figures; which we humbly conceive to be writings, every letter almoſt half as large as the palm of our hands. In the left there was a ſort of engine, from the back of which were extended twenty long poles, reſembling the paliſadoes before your Majeſty's court; wherewith we conjecture the *man-mountain* combs his head; for we did not always trouble him with queſtions, becauſe we found it a great difficulty to make him underſtand us. In the large pocket on the right ſide of his middle cover (ſo I tranſlate the word *Ranſu-lo*, by which they meant my breeches) we ſaw a hollow pillar of iron, about the length of a man, faſtened to a ſtrong piece of timber, larger than the pillar; and upon one ſide of the pillar were huge pieces of iron ſticking out, cut into ſtrange figures, which we know not what to make of. In the left pocket another engine of the ſame kind. In the ſmaller pocket on the right ſide were ſeveral round flat pieces of white and red metal of different bulk; ſome of the white, which ſeemed to be ſilver, were ſo large and heavy, that my comrade and I could hardly lift them. In the left pocket were two black pillars irregularly ſhaped: we could not without difficulty reach the top of them as we ſtood at the bottom of his pocket. One of them was covered, and ſeemed all of a piece: but at the upper end of the other there appeared a white round ſubſtance, about

twice the bigneſs of our heads. Within each of thei
incloſed a prodigious plate of ſteel; which, by our o
we obliged him to ſhew us, becauſe we apprehende
might be dangerous engines. He took them out of
caſes, and told us, that in his own country his pr
was to ſhave his beard with one of theſe, and to c
meat with the other. There were two pockets, whi
could not enter: theſe he called his fobs; they wer
large ſlits cut into the top of his middle cover
ſqueezed cloſe by the preſſure of his belly. Out c
right fob hung a great ſilver chain with a wonderfu
of engine at the bottom. We directed him to dra
whatever was at the end of that chain; which app
to be a globe, half ſilver, and half of ſome tranſ
metal: for on the tranſparent ſide we ſaw certain f
figures circularly drawn, and thought we could
them, till we found our fingers ſtopped by that luci
ſtance. He put this engine to our ears, which ma
inceſſant noiſe like that of a water-mill: and we c
ture it is either ſome unknown animal, or the god t
worſhips; but we are more inclined to the latter op
becauſe he aſſured us (if we underſtood him right,
expreſſed himſelf very imperfectly) that he ſeldo
any thing without conſulting it. He called it his c
and ſaid it pointed out the time for every action
life*. From the left fob he took out a net almoſt
enough for a fiſherman, but contrived to open an
like a purſe, and ſerved him for the ſame uſe: we
therein ſeveral maſſy pieces of yellow metal, whi
they be real gold, muſt be of immenſe value.

Having thus, in obedience to your Majeſty's
mands, diligently ſearched all his pockets, we ob
a girdle about his waiſt, made of the hide of ſom
digious animal, from which on the left ſide hung a
of the length of five men; and on the right a b
pouch divided into two cells, each cell capable of
ding three of your Majeſty's ſubjects. In one of thei

* Perhaps the author intended to expoſe the probable
of opinions derived from the relations of travellers, by
ing, how little truth need to be miſunderſtood to make
hood ſpecious. *Hawkeſ.*

were ſeveral globes, or balls, of a moſt ponderous metal, about the bigneſs of our heads, and required a ſtrong hand to lift them: the other cell contained a heap of certain black grains, but of no great bulk or weight, for we could hold above fifty of them in the palms of our hands.

This is an exact inventory of what we found about the body of the *man-mountain*, who uſed us with great civility, and due reſpect to your Majeſty's commiſſion. Signed and ſealed, on the fourth day of the eighty-ninth moon of your Majeſty's auſpicious reign.

Clefrin Freloc, Marſi Freloc.

When this inventory was read over to the Emperor, he directed me, although in very gentle terms, to deliver up the ſeveral particulars. He firſt called for my ſcymiter, which I took out, ſcabbard and all. In the meantime he ordered three thouſand of his choiceſt troops (who then attended him) to ſurround me at a diſtance, with their bows and arrows juſt ready to diſcharge: but I did not obſerve it, for mine eyes were wholly fixed upon his Majeſty. He then deſired me to draw my ſcymiter, which, although it had got ſome ruſt by the ſea-water, was in moſt parts exceeding bright. I did ſo, and immediately all the troops gave a ſhout between terror and ſurprize; for the ſun ſhone clear, and the reflection dazzled their eyes, as I waved the Scymiter to and fro in my hand. His Majeſty, who is a moſt magnanimous prince †, was leſs daunted than I could expect; he ordered me to return it into the ſcabbard, and caſt it on the ground as gently as I could, about ſix feet from the end of my chain. The next thing he demanded, was one of the hollow iron pillars; by which he meant my pocket-piſtols. I drew it out, and, at his deſire, as well as I could, expreſſed to him the uſe of it; and charging it only with powder, which by the cloſeneſs of my pouch happened to eſcape wetting in the ſea (an inconvenience againſt

† He who does not find himſelf diſpoſed to honour this magnanimity ſhould reflect, that a right to judge of moral and intellectual excellence is, with great abſurdity and injuſtice, arrogated by him who admires, in a being ſix feet high, any qualities that he deſpiſes in one, whoſe ſtature does not exceed ſix inches. *Hawkeſ.*

which all prudent mariners take ſpecial care to provide) I firſt cautioned the Emperor not to be afraid, and then I let it off in the air. The aſtoniſhment here was much greater than at the ſight of my ſcymiter. Hundreds fell down, as if they had been ſtruck dead; and even the Emperor, although he ſtood his ground, could not recover himſelf in ſome time. I delivered up both my piſtols in the ſame manner, as I had done my ſcymiter, and then my pouch of powder and bullets; begging him that the former might be kept from fire, for it would kindle with the ſmalleſt ſpark, and blow up his imperial palace into the air. I likewiſe delivered up my watch, which the Emperor was very curious to ſee, and commanded two of his talleſt yeomen of the guards, to bear it on a pole upon their ſhoulders, as dray-men in England do a barrel of ale. He was amazed at the continual noiſe it made, and the motion of the minute-hand, which he could eaſily diſcern; for their ſight is much more acute than ours: he asked the opinions of his learned men about it, which were various and remote, as the reader may well imagine without my repeating; although indeed I could not very perfectly underſtand them. I then gave up my ſilver and copper money, my purſe with nine large pieces of gold, and ſome ſmaller ones; my knife and razor, my comb and ſilver ſnuff-box, my handkerchief and journal-book. My ſcymiter, piſtols, and pouch were conveyed in carriages to his Majeſty's ſtores; but the reſt of my goods were returned me.

I had, as I before obſerved, one private pocket, which eſcaped their ſearch, wherein there was a pair of ſpectacles (which I ſometimes uſe for the weakneſs of mine eyes) a pocket perſpective, and ſome other little conveniencies; which being of no conſequence to the Emperor, I did not think myſelf bound in honour to diſcover, and I apprehended they might be loſt or ſpoiled, if I ventured them out of my poſſeſſion.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

The author diverts the Emperor and his nobility of both ſexes in a very uncommon manner. The diverſions of the court of Lilliput deſcribed. The author hath his liberty granted him upon certain conditions.

MY gentleneſs and good behaviour had gained ſo far on the Emperor and his court, and indeed upon the army, and people in general, that I began to conceive hopes of getting my liberty in a ſhort time. I took all poſſible methods to cultivate this favourable diſpoſition. The natives came by degrees to be leſs apprehenſive of any danger from me. I would ſometimes lie down, and let five or ſix of them dance on my hand: and at laſt the boys and girls would venture to come and play at hide and ſeek in my hair. I had now made a good progreſs in underſtanding and ſpeaking their language The Emperor had a mind one day to entertain me with ſeveral of the country ſhows, wherein they exceed all nations I have known, both for dexterity and magnificence. I was diverted with none ſo much, as that of the rope-dancers, performed upon a ſlender white thread, extended about two feet and twelve inches from the ground. Upon which I ſhall deſire liberty, with the reader's patience, to enlarge a little.

This diverſion is only practiſed by thoſe perſons, who are candidates for great employments, and high favour at court. They are trained in this art from their youth, and are not always of noble birth, or liberal education. When a great office is vacant either by death or diſgrace (which often happens) five or ſix of thoſe candidates petition the Emperor to entertain his Majeſty and the court with a dance on the rope, and whoever jumps the higheſt without falling, ſucceeds in the office. Very often the chief miniſters themſelves are commanded to ſhew their skill, and to convince the Emperor, that they have not loſt their faculty. Flimnap, the treaſurer, is allowed to cut a caper on the ſtrait rope at leaſt an inch higher, than any other lord in the whole empire. I have ſeen him

do the ſummerſet * ſeveral times together upon a trench er, fixed on a rope, which is no thicker than a common packthread in England. My friend Reldreſal, principal ſecretary for private affairs, is in my opinion, if I am no partial, the ſecond after the treaſurer; the reſt of th great officers are much upon a par.

Theſe diverſions are often attended with fatal acci dents, whereof great numbers are on record. I myſe have ſeen two or three canditates break a limb. But th danger is much greater, when the miniſters themſelve are commanded to ſhew their dexterity; for, by contend ing to excel themſelves and their fellows, they ſtrain ſ far, that there is hardly one of them, who hath not re ceived a fall, and ſome of them two or three. I was a ſured, that a year or two before my arrival Flimna would have infallibly broke his neck, if one of the King' cuſhions, that accidentally lay on the ground, had no weakened the force of his fall.

There is likewiſe another diverſion, which is onl ſhewn before the Emperor and Empreſs, and firſt miniſte upon particular occaſions. The Emperor lays on th table three fine ſilken threads of ſix inches long; one i blue, the other red, and the third green. Theſe thread are propoſed as prizes for thoſe perſons, whom the Em peror hath a mind to diſtinguiſh by a peculiar mark of hi favour. The ceremony is performed in his Majeſty' great chamber of ſtate, where the canditates are to underg a trial of dexterity very different from the former, an ſuch as I have not obſerved the leaſt reſemblance of i any other country of the old or new world. The Em peror holds a ſtick in his hands, both ends parallel to th horizon, while the candidates advancing, one by on ſometimes leap over the ſtick, ſometimes creep under i backwards and forwards ſeveral times, according as th ſtick is advanced or depreſſed. Sometimes the Empero holds one end of the ſtick, and his firſt miniſter the other ſometimes the miniſter has it entirely to himſelf. Who ever performs his part with moſt agility, and holds ou

* Summerſet, or ſummerſault, a gambol of a tumbler, i which he ſprings up, turns heels over head in the air, an comes down upon his feet. *Hawkeſ.*

th

g been daily led before me, were no longer shy, but
come up to my very feet without starting. The
would leap them over my hand, as I held it on
ound; and one of the Emperor's huntsmen upon
e courser took my foot, shoe and all; which was
l a prodigious leap. I had the good fortune to di-
ıe Emperor one day after a very extraordinary man-
I desired he would order several sticks of two feet
and the thickness of an ordinary cane, to be brought
whereupon his Majesty commanded the master of his
s to give directions accordingly, and the next morn-
t woodmen arrived with as many carriages, drawn
ht horses to each. I took nine of these sticks, and
them firmly in the ground in a quadrangular figure,
:et and a half square, I took four other sticks, and
ıem parallel at each corner about two feet from the
d; then I fastened my handkerchief to the nine sticks
:ood erect; and extended it on all sides, till it was
as the top of a drum: and the four parallel sticks,
about five inches higher than the handkerchief, serv-
ledges on each side. When I had finished my work,
red the Emperor to let a troop of his best horse,
y-four in number, come and exercise upon this plain.
Majesty approved of the proposal, and I took them
e by one in my hands, ready mounted and armed,
he proper officers to exercise them. As soon as they
to order, they divided into two parties, performed

in her close chair within two yards of the stage, whence she was able to take a full view of the whol formance It was my good fortune, that no ill ac happened in these entertainments, only once a fiery that belonged to one of the captains, pawing wi hoof, struck a hole in my handkerchief, and his foc ping, he overthrew his rider and himself; but I in ately relieved them both, and covering the hole wi hand, I set down the troop with the other, in the manner as I took them up. The horse that fe strained in the left shoulder, but the rider got nc and I repaired my handkerchief as well as I could; ever, I would not trust to the strength of it any m such dangerous enterprizes.

About two or three days before I was set at li as I was entertaining the court with this kind of there arrived an express to inform his Majesty, that of his subjects, riding near the place where I wa taken up, had seen a great black substance lying ground, very oddly shaped, extending its edges ro wide as his Majesty's bed-chamber, and rising up middle as high as a man; that it was no living cre as they at first apprehended, for it lay on the grass out motion; and some of them had walked rou several times; that, by mounting upon each other's ders, they had got to the top, which was flat and and stamping upon it, they found it was hollow w that they humbly conceived it might be something b ing to the *man-mountain*; and if his Majesty p they would undertake to bring it with only five l Ipresently knew what they meant, and was glad at to receive this intelligence. It seems, upon my first ing the shore after our shipwreck I was in such con that, before I came to the place where I went to my hat, which I had fastened with a string to my while I was rowing, and had stuck on all the time swimming, fell off after I came to land; the string conjecture, breaking by some accident, which I nev served, but thought my hat had been lost at sea. treated his Imperial Majesty to give orders, it mi brought to me as soon as possible, describing to hi use and the nature of it; and the next day the wag

arrived with it, but not in a very good condition; they had bored two holes in the brim within an inch and half of the edge, and faſtened two hooks in the holes; theſe hooks were tied by a long cord to the harneſs, and thus my hat was dragged along for above half an Engliſh mile; but, the ground in that country being extremely ſmooth and level, it received leſs damage than I expected.

Two days after this adventure, the Emperor having ordered that part of his army, which quarters in and about his metropolis, to be in a readineſs, took a fancy of diverting himſelf in a very ſingular manner. He deſired I would ſtand like a *coloſſus*, with my legs as far aſunder as I conveniently could. He then commanded his general (who was an old experienced leader, and a great patron of mine) to draw up the troops in cloſe order, and march them under me; the foot by twenty-four in a breaſt, and the horſe by ſixteen, with drums beating, colours flying, and pikes advanced. This body conſiſted of three thouſand foot, and a thouſand horſe. His Majeſty gave orders, upon pain of death, that every ſoldier in his march ſhould obſerve the ſtricteſt decency, with regard to my perſon; which, however, could not prevent ſome of the younger officers from turning up their eyes, as they paſſed under me: and, to confeſs the truth, my breeches were at that time in ſo ill a condition, that they afforded ſome opportunities for laughter and admiration.

I had ſent ſo many memorials and petitions for my liberty, that his Majeſty at length mentioned the matter firſt in the cabinet, and then in a full council; where it was oppoſed by none, except Skyreſh Bolgolam, who was pleaſed, without any provocation, to be my mortal enemy. But it was carried againſt him by the whole board, and confirmed by the Emperor. That miniſter was *galbet*, or admiral of the realm, very much in his maſter's confidence, and a perſon well verſed in affairs, but of a moroſe and ſour complexion. However, he was at length perſuaded to comply; but prevailed that the articles and conditions upon which I ſhould be ſet free, and to which I muſt ſwear, ſhould be drawn up by himſelf. Theſe articles were brought to me by Skyreſh Bolgolam in perſon, attended by two under-ſecretaries, and ſeveral perſons of diſtinction. After *they were read*, I was demanded to

ſwear

ſwear to the performance of them; firſt in the manner of my own country, and afterwards in the method preſcribed by their laws, which was to hold my right foot in my left hand, and to place the middle finger of my right hand on the crown of my head, and my thumb on the tip of my right ear. But becauſe the reader may be curious to have ſome idea of the ſtyle and manner of expreſſion peculiar to that people, as well as to know the articles upon which I recovered my liberty, I have made a tranſlation of the whole inſtrument, word for word, as near as I was able, which I here offer to the public.

Golbaſto Momaren Evlame Gurdilo Shefin Mully Ully Gue, Moſt Mighty Emperor of Lilliput, delight and terror of the univerſe, whoſe dominions extend five thouſand *bluſtrugs* (about twelve miles in circumference) to the extremities of the globe; monarch of all monarchs, taller than the ſons of men; whoſe feet preſs down to the center, and whoſe head ſtrikes againſt the ſun; at whoſe nod the princes of the earth ſhake their knees; pleaſant as the ſpring, comfortable as the ſummer, fruitful as autumn, dreadful as winter. His Moſt Sublime Majeſty propoſeth to the *man-mountain*, lately arrived at our celeſtial dominions, the following articles, which by a ſolemn oath he ſhall be obliged to perform.

1ſt, The *man-mountain* ſhall not depart from our dominions, without our licence under our great ſeal.

2d, He ſhall not preſume to come into our metropolis without our expreſs order; at which time the inhabitants ſhall have two hours warning to keep within doors.

3d, The ſaid *man-mountain* ſhall confine his walks to our principal high roads, and not offer to walk or lie down in a meadow or field of corn.

4th, As he walks the ſaid roads, he ſhall take the utmoſt care not to trample upon the bodies of any of our loving ſubjects, their horſes, or carriages, nor take any of our ſubjects into his hands without their own conſent.

5th, If an expreſs requires extraordinary diſpatch, the *man-mountain* ſhall be obliged to carry in his pocket the meſſenger and horſe a ſix days journey once in every moon, and return the ſaid meſſenger back (if ſo required) ſafe to our Imperial preſence.

6th, He ſhall be our ally againſt our enemies in the iſland

ſland of Bleſuſcu*, and do his utmoſt to deſtroy their fleet, which is now preparing to invade us.

7th, That the ſaid *man-mountain* ſhall, at his times of leiſure, be aiding and aſſiſting to our workmen, in helping to raiſe certain great ſtones, towards covering the wall of the principal park, and other our royal buildings.

8th, That the ſaid *man-mountain* ſhall, in two moons time, deliver in an exact ſurvey of the circumference of our dominions, by a computation of his own paces round the coaſt.

Laſtly, That upon his ſolemn oath to obſerve all the above articles, the ſaid *man-mountain* ſhall have a daily allowance of meat and drink ſufficient for the ſupport of 1724 of our ſubjects, with free acceſs to our royal perſon, and other marks of our favour. Given at our palace at Belfaborac, the twelfth day of the ninety-firſt moon of our reign.

I ſwore and ſubſcribed to theſe articles with great chearfulneſs and content, although ſome of them were not ſo honourable as I could have wiſhed; which proceeded wholly from the malice of Skyreſh Bolgolam, the high admiral; whereupon my chains were immediately unlocked, and I was at full liberty. The Emperor himſelf, in perſon, did me the honour to be by at the whole ceremony. I made my acknowledgments by proſtrating myſelf at his majeſty's feet: but he commanded me to riſe; and after many gracious expreſſions, which, to avoid the cenſure of vanity, I ſhall not repeat, he added, that he hoped I ſhould prove a uſeful ſervant, and well deſerve all the favours he had already conferred upon me, or might do for the future.

The reader may pleaſe to obſerve, that, in the laſt article for the recovery of my liberty, the Emperor ſtipulates to allow me a quantity of meat and drink ſuffi-

* In his deſcription of Lilliput, the author ſeems to have had England more immediately in view. In his deſcription of Bleſuſcu he ſeems to intend the people and kingdom of France. Yet the allegory between theſe nations is frequently interrupted, and ſcarce any where complete. Several juſt ſtrokes of ſatire are ſcattered here and there upon errors in the conduct of our government. *Orrery.*

cient

cient for the ſupport of 1724 Lilliputians. Some time after asking a friend at court, how they came to fix on that determinate number; he told me, that his Majeſty's mathematicians having taken the height of my body by the help of a *quadrant*, and finding it to exceed theirs in the proportion of twelve to one, they concluded, from the ſimilarity of their bodies, that mine muſt contain at leaſt 1724 of theirs, and conſequently would require as much food as was neceſſary to ſupport that number of Lilliputians. By which the reader may conceive an idea of the ingenuity of that people, as well as the prudent and exact oeconomy of ſo great a prince.

CHAP. IV.

Mildendo, the metropolis of Lilliput, deſcribed, together with the Emperor's palace. A converſation between the author and a principal ſecretary, concerning the affairs of that empire. The author's offers to ſerve the Emperor in his wars.

THE firſt requeſt I made, after I had obtained my liberty, was, that I might have licence to ſee Mildendo, the metropolis; which the Emperor eaſily granted me, but with a ſpecial charge to do no hurt either to the inhabitants or their houſes. The people had notice by proclamation, of my deſign to viſit the town. The wall, which encompaſſed it, is two feet and a half high, and at leaſt eleven inches broad, ſo that a coach and horſes may be driven very ſafely round it; and it is flanked with ſtrong towers at ten feet diſtance. I ſtept over the great weſtern gate, and paſſed very gently, and ſideling, through the two principal ſtreets, only in my ſhort waiſt-coat, for fear of damaging the roofs and eaves of the houſes with the skirts of my coat. I walked with the utmoſt circumſpection to avoid treading on any ſtragglers, who might remain in the ſtreets; although the orders were very ſtrict, that all people ſhould keep in their houſes at their own peril. The garret-windows and tops of houſes were ſo crowded with ſpectators, that I thought in all my travels I had not ſeen a more populous place. The city is an exact ſquare, each ſide of the wall being five hundred

:t long. The two great ſtreets, which run croſs
ide it into four quarters, are five feet wide. The
ıd alleys, which I could not enter, but only view-
ı as I paſſed, are from twelve to eighteen inches.
wn is capable of holding five hundred thouſand
the houſes are from three to five ſtories: the ſhops
rkets well provided.

Emperor's palace is in the center of the city, where
› great ſtreets meet. It is incloſed by a wall of
:t high, and twenty feet diſtance from the build-
had his majeſty's permiſſion to ſtep over this wall;
: ſpace being ſo wide between that and the palace,
eaſily view it on every ſide. The outward court
ıare of forty feet, and includes two other courts:
nmoſt are the royal apartments, which I was very
s to ſee, but found it extremely difficult; for the
ıates, from one ſquare into another, were but
ı inches high, and ſeven inches wide. Now the
gs of the outer court were at leaſt five feet high,
was impoſſible for me to ſtride over them without
damage to the pile, though the walls were ſtrong-
: of hewn ſtone, and four inches thick. At the
me the Emperor had a great deſire, that I ſhould
magnificence of his palace; but this I was not
do till three days after, which I ſpent in cutting
with my knife ſome of the largeſt trees in the royal
about an hundred yards diſtance from the city.
:ſe trees I made two ſtools, each about three
gh, and ſtrong enough to bear my weight. The
having received notice a ſecond time, I went a-
rough the city to the palace, with my two ſtools
hands. When I came to the ſide of the outer
I ſtood upon one ſtool, and took the other in my
this I lifted over the roof, and gently ſet it down
: ſpace between the firſt and the ſecond court,
was eight feet wide. I then ſtept over the build-
ry conveniently from one ſtool to the other, and
ıp the firſt after me with a hooked ſtick. By this
vance I got into the inmoſt court; and, lying down
ny ſide, I applied my face to the windows of the
: ſtories, which were left open on purpoſe, and
ered the moſt ſplendid apartments that can be

imagined. There I ſaw the Empreſs and the young princes in their ſeveral lodgings with their chief attendants about them. Her Imperial Majeſty was pleaſed to ſmile very graciouſly upon me, and gave me out of the window her hand to kiſs.

But I ſhall not anticipate the reader with farther deſcriptions of this kind, becauſe I reſerve them for a greater work, which is now almoſt ready for the preſs, containing a general deſcription of this empire, from its firſt erection through a long ſeries of princes, with a particular account of their wars and politics, laws, learning, and religion, their plants and animals, their peculiar manners and cuſtoms, with other matters very curious and uſeful; my chief deſign at preſent being only to relate ſuch events and tranſactions, as happened to the public or to myſelf, during a reſidence of about nine months in that empire.

One morning, about a fortnight after I had obtained my liberty, Reldreſal, principal ſecretary (as they ſtile him) for private affairs, came to my houſe, attended only by one ſervant. He ordered his coach to wait at a diſtance, and deſired I would give him an hour's audience; which I readily conſented to, on account of his quality and perſonal merits, as well as of the many good offices he had done me during my ſolicitations at court. I offered to lie down, that he might the more conveniently reach my ear; but he choſe rather to let me hold him in my hand during our converſation. He began with compliments on my liberty; ſaid, he might pretend to ſome merit in it: but however added, that, if it had not been for the preſent ſituation of things at court, perhaps I might not have obtained it ſo ſoon. For, ſaid he, as flouriſhing a condition as we may appear to be in to foreigners, we labour under two mighty evils; a violent faction at home, and the danger of an invaſion by a moſt potent enemy from abroad. As to the firſt, you are to underſtand, that for above ſeventy moons paſt there have been two ſtruggling parties in this empire, under the names of Trameckſan, and Slameckſan*, from the high and low heels of their ſhoes,

* *High-Church* and *Low-Church*, or *Whig* and *Tory*. As every *accidental difference* between man and man, in perſon and circumſtances,

, by which they diſtinguiſh themſelves. It is alledg-
deed, that the high heels are moſt agreeable to our
nt conſtitution; but, however this be, his Majeſty
determined to make uſe only of low heels in the ad-
ıration of the government, and all offices in the gift
: crown, as you cannot but obſerve; and particular-
ıat his Majeſty's Imperial heels are lower at leaſt by
rr than any of his court (*drurr* is a meaſure about
urteenth part of an inch.) The animoſities between
two parties run ſo high, that they will neither eat
rink, nor talk with each other. We compute the
eckſan, or high-heels, to exceed us in number; but
ıwer is wholly on our ſide. We apprehend his im-
highneſs, the heir to the crown, to have ſome ten-
towards the high-heels; at leaſt, we can plainly
'er, that one of his heels is higher than the other,
gives him a hobble in his gate. Now, in the midſt
ſe inteſtine diſquiets, we are threatened with an in-
ı from the iſland of Blefuſcu, which is the other
empire of the univerſe, almoſt as large and power-
this of his Majeſty. For as to what we have heard
ffirm, that there are other kingdoms and ſtates in
ɔrld, inhabited by human creatures as large as your-
ɔur philoſophers are in much doubt, and would ra-
onjecture that you dropped from the moon, or one
ſtars; becauſe it is certain, that an hundred mortals
ır bulk, would in a ſhort time deſtroy all the fruits
ittle of his Majeſty's dominions: beſides, our hiſto-
f ſix thouſand moons make no mention of any o-
egions, than the two great empires of Lilliput and
cu. Which two mighty powers have, as I was go-
tell you, been engaged in a moſt obſtinate war for
d thirty moons paſt. It began upon the following
on: it is allowed on all hands, that the primitive
ɔf breaking eggs, before we eat them, was upon the
end; but his preſent Majeſty's grand-father, while
ıs a boy, going to eat an egg, and breaking it ac-

ınces; is by this work rendered extremely contemptible;
eculative differences are ſhewn to be equally ridiculous,
the zeal, with which they are oppoſed and defended, too
exceeds their importance.

cording to the ancient practice, happened to cut one his fingers. Whereupon the Emperor, his father, publiſ ed an edict, commanding all his ſubjects, upon great p nalties, to break the ſmaller end of their eggs. The peop ſo highly reſented this law, that our hiſtories tell us, the have been ſix rebellions raiſed on that account, whei in one Emperor loſt his life, and another his crow Theſe civil commotions were conſtantly fomented by t monarchs of Blefuſcu; and when they were quelled, t exiles always fled for refuge to that empire. It is co puted that eleven thouſand perſons have at ſeveral tin ſuffered death, rather than ſubmit to break their eggs the ſmaller end. Many hundred large volumes have be publiſhed upon this controverſy; but the books of t Big-endians have been long forbidden, and the wh party rendered incapable by law of holding employmen During the courſe of theſe troubles, the Emperors Blefuſcu did frequently expoſtulate by their ambaſſado accuſing us of making a ſchiſm in religion, by offending gainſt a fundamental doctrine of our great prophet I ſtrog, in the fifty-fourth chapter of the Blundecral (wh is their Alcoran.) This however is thought to be a m ſtrain upon the text; for the words are theſe: *That true believers break their eggs at the convenient e* And which is the convenient end, ſeems in my hum opinion to be left to every man's conſcience, or at le in the power of the chief magiſtrate to determine. Nc the Big-endian exiles have found ſo much credit in t Emperor of Blefuſcu's court, and ſo much private aſſ ance and encouragement from their party here at hor that a bloody war hath been carried on between the t empires for ſix and thirty moons, with various ſucce during which time we have loſt forty capital ſhips, an much greater number of ſmaller veſſels, together w thirty thouſand of our beſt ſeamen and ſoldiers: and t damage received by the enemy is reckoned to be ſon what greater than ours. However, they have now quipped a numerous fleet, and are juſt preparing to ma a deſcent upon us; and his Imperial Majeſty, placi great confidence in your valour and ſtrength, hath co manded me to lay this account of his affairs before you

I deſired the ſecretary to preſent my humble duty

the Emperor, and to let him know, that I thought it would not become me, who was a foreigner, to interfere with parties; but I was ready, with the hazard of my life, to defend his perſon and ſtate againſt all invaders *.

CHAP. V.

The author, by an extraordinary ſtratagem, prevents an invaſion. A high title of honour is conferred upon him. Ambaſſadors arrive from the Emperor of Blefuſcu, and ſue for peace. The Empreſs's apartment on fire by an accident; the author inſtrumental in ſaving the reſt of the palace.

THE empire of Blefuſcu is an iſland, ſituated to the north-eaſt ſide of Lilliput, from whence it is parted only by a channel of eight hundred yards wide. I had not yet ſeen it, and upon this notice of an intended invaſion, I avoided appearing on that ſide of the coaſt, for fear of being diſcovered by ſome of the enemy's ſhips, who had received no intelligence of me, all intercourſe between the two empires having been ſtrictly forbidden during the war, upon pain of death, and an embargo laid by our Emperor upon all veſſels whatſoever. I communicated to his Majeſty a project I had formed of ſeizing the enemy's whole fleet: which, as our ſcouts aſſured us, lay at anchor in the harbour ready to ſail with the firſt fair wind. I conſulted the moſt experienced ſeamen upon the depth of the channel, which they had often plummed; who told me, that in the middle, at high-water, it was ſeventy *glumgluffs* deep, which is about ſix feet of European meaſure; and the reſt of it fifty *glumgluffs* at moſt. I walked towards the north-eaſt coaſt, over againſt Blefuſcu; where, lying down behind a hillock, I took out

* Gulliver, without examining the ſubject of diſpute, readily engaged to defend the Emperor againſt invaſion, becauſe he knew, that no ſuch monarch had a right to invade the dominions of another, though for the propagation of truth. Hawkeſ.

my ſmall perſpective-glaſs, and viewed the enemy's fleet at anchor, conſiſting of about fifty men of war, and a great number of tranſports: I then came back to my houſe, and gave orders (for which I had a warrant) for a great quantity of the ſtrongeſt cable and bars of iron. The cable was about as thick as pack-thread, and the bars of the length and ſize of a knitting-needle. I trebled the cable to make it ſtronger, and for the ſame reaſon I twiſted three of the iron bars together, bending the extremities into a hook. Having thus fixed fifty hooks to as many cables, I went back to the north-eaſt coaſt, and putting off my coat, ſhoes, and ſtockings, walked into the ſea in my leathern jerkin, about half an hour before high-water. I waded with what haſte I could, and ſwam in the middle about thirty yards, till I felt ground; I arrived at the fleet in leſs than half an hour. The enemy was ſo frighted, when they ſaw me, that they leaped out of their ſhips, and ſwam to ſhore, where there could not be fewer than thirty thouſand ſouls: I then took my tackling, and, faſtening a hook to the hole at the prow of each, I tied all the cords together at the end. While I was thus employed, the enemy diſcharged ſeveral thouſand arrows, many of which ſtuck in my hands and face; and, beſides the exceſſive ſmart, gave me much diſturbance in my work. My greateſt apprehenſion was for mine eyes, which I ſhould have infallibly loſt, if I had not ſuddenly thought of an expedient. I kept among other little neceſſaries, a pair of ſpectacles in a private pocket, which, as I obſerved before, had eſcaped the Emperor's ſearchers. Theſe I took out, and faſtened as ſtrongly as I could upon my noſe, and thus armed, went on boldly with my work, in ſpight of the enemy's arrows, many of which ſtruck againſt the glaſſes of my ſpectacles, but without any other effect, farther than a little to diſcompoſe them. I had now faſtened all the hooks, and taking the knot in my hand, began to pull; but not a ſhip would ſtir, for they were all too faſt held by their anchors, ſo that the boldeſt part of my enterprize remained. I therefore let go the cord, and leaving the hooks fixed to the ſhips, I reſolutely cut with my knife the cables that faſtened the anchors, receiving above two hundred ſhots in my face and hands; then I took up the knotted end of the cables,

to

to which my hooks were tied, and with great eaſe drew fifty of the enemy's largeſt men of war after me.

The Bleſuſcudians, who had not the leaſt imagination of what I intended, were at firſt confounded with aſtoniſhment. They had ſeen me cut the cables, and thought my deſign was only to let the ſhips run a-drift, or fall foul on each other: but when they perceived the whole fleet moving in order, and ſaw me pulling at the end, they ſet up ſuch a ſcream of grief and deſpair, as it is almoſt impoſſible to deſcribe or conceive. When I had got out of danger, I ſtopt a while to pick out the arrows, that ſtuck in my hands and face; and rubbed on ſome of the ſame ointment, that was given me at my firſt arrival, as I have formerly mentioned. I then took off my ſpectacles, and waiting about an hour, till the tide was a little fallen, I waded through the middle with my cargo, and arrived ſafe at the royal port of Lilliput.

The Emperor and his whole court ſtood on the ſhore, expecting the iſſue of this great adventure. They ſaw the ſhips move forward in a large half-moon, but could not diſcern me, who was up to my breaſt in water. When I advanced to the middle of the channel, they were yet more in pain, becauſe I was under water to my neck. The Emperor concluded me to be drowned, and that the enemy's fleet was approaching in an hoſtile manner: but he was ſoon eaſed of his fears, for the channel growing ſhallower every ſtep I made, I came in a ſhort time within hearing, and holding up the end of the cable, by which the fleet was faſtened, I cried in a loud voice, *Long live the moſt puiſſant Emperor of Lilliput!* this great prince received me at my landing with all poſſible encomiums, and created me a Nardac upon the ſpot, which is the higheſt title of honour among them.

His Majeſty deſired, I would take ſome other opportunity of bringing all the reſt of his enemy's ſhips into his ports. And ſo unmeaſurable is the ambition of princes, that he ſeemed to think of nothing leſs than reducing the whole empire of Bleſuſcu into a province, and governing it by a vice-roy; of deſtroying the Big-endian exiles, and compelling that people to break the ſmaller end of their eggs, by which he would remain the ſole monarch of the whole world. But I endeavoured to divert him from this deſign,

deſign, by many arguments drawn from the topics of policy as well as juſtice: and I plainly proteſted, that I would never be an inſtrument of bringing a free and brave people into ſlavery. And, when the matter was debated in council, the wiſeſt part of the miniſtry were of my opinion.

This open bold declaration of mine, was ſo oppoſite to the ſchemes and politics of his Imperial Majeſty, that he could never forgive me; he mentioned it in a very artful manner at council, where I was told that ſome of the wiſeſt appeared at leaſt by their ſilence to be of my opinion; but others, who were my ſecret enemies, could not forbear ſome expreſſions, which by a ſide-wind reflected on me. And from this time began an intrigue between his Majeſty, and a junto of miniſters maliciouſly bent againſt me, which broke out in leſs than two months, and had like to have ended in my utter deſtruction. O ſo little weight are the greateſt ſervices to princes, when put into the balance with a refuſal to gratify their paſſions.

About three weeks after this exploit, there arrived a ſolemn embaſſy from Blefuſcu, with humble offers of peace; which was ſoon concluded upon conditions very advantageous to our Emperor, wherewith I ſhall not trouble the reader. There were ſix ambaſſadors, with a train of about five hundred perſons; and their entry was very magnificent, ſuitable to the grandeur of their maſter, and the importance of their buſineſs. When their treaty was finiſhed, wherein I did them ſeveral good offices by the credit I now had, or at leaſt appeared to have at court, their excellencies, who were privately told how much I had been their friend, made me a viſit in form. They began with many compliments upon my valour and generoſity, invited me to that kingdom, in the Emperor their maſter's name, and deſired me to ſhew them ſome proofs of my prodigious ſtrength, of which they had heard ſo many wonders; wherein I readily obliged them, but ſhall not trouble the reader with the particulars.

When I had for ſome time entertained their excellencies to their infinite ſatisfaction and ſurprize, I deſired they would do me the honour to preſent my moſt humble reſpects

ts to the Emperor their maſter, the renown of whoſe
s had ſo juſtly filled the whole world with admira-
and whoſe royal perſon I reſolved to attend before
rned to my own country: accordingly, the next
I had the honour to ſee our Emperor, I deſired his
al licence to wait on the Bleſuſcudian monarch,
he was pleaſed to grant me, as I could plainly per-
in a very cold manner; but could not gueſs the rea-
till I had a whiſper from a certain perſon, that Flim-
nd Bolgolam had repreſented my intercourſe with
ambaſſadors as a mark of diſaffection, from which
ſure my heart was wholly free. And this was the
me I began to conceive ſome imperfect idea of courts
iniſters.

is to be obſerved, that theſe ambaſſadors ſpoke to
an interpreter, the languages of both empires dif-
; as much from each other as any two in Europe,
ach nation priding itſelf upon the antiquity, beauty,
nergy of their own tongues, with an avowed con-
for that of their neighbour; yet our Emperor,
ng upon the advantage he had got by the ſeizure of
fleet, obliged them to deliver their credentials, and
their ſpeech in the Lilliputian tongue. And it muſt
nfeſſed, that from the great intercourſe of trade
ommerce between both realms, from the continual
ion of exiles, which is mutual among them, and
the cuſtom in each empire, to ſend their young no-
and richer gentry to the other, in order to poliſh
elves by ſeeing the world, and underſtanding men
anners; there are few perſons of diſtinction, or mer-
s, or ſeamen, who dwell in the maritime parts, but
can hold converſation in both tongues; as I found
weeks after, when I went to pay my reſpects to
mperor of Bleſuſcu, which in the midſt of great
rtunes, through the malice of my enemies, proved a
happy adventure to me, as I ſhall relate in its pro-
lace.

e reader may remember, that when I ſigned thoſe
s upon which I recovered my liberty, there were
which I diſliked, upon account of their being too
, neither could any thing but an extreme neceſſity
forced me to ſubmit. But being now a Nardac of the
higheſt

higheſt rank in that empire, ſuch offices were looked on as below my dignity, and the Emperor (to do juſtice) never once mentioned them to me. Howeve was not long before I had an opportunity of doing Majeſty, at leaſt as I then thought, a moſt ſignal ſer I was alarmed at midnight with the cries of many dred people at my door; by which being ſuddenly a ed, I was in ſome kind of terror. I heard the word glum repeated inceſſantly: ſeveral of the Emperor's c making their way through the crowd, intreated r come immediately to the palace, where her Imperial jeſty's apartment was on fire by the careleſneſs of a of honour, who fell aſleep while ſhe was reading mance. I got up in an inſtant; and orders being to clear the way before me, and it being likewiſe a n ſhine night, I made a ſhift to get to the palace wi trampling on any of the people. I found they ha ready applied ladders to the walls of the apartment were well provided with buckets, but the water v ſome diſtance. Theſe buckets were about the ſize large thimble, and the poor people ſupplied me them as faſt as they could: but the flame was ſo vi that they did little good. I might eaſily have ſtif with my coat, which I unfortunately left behind n haſte, and came away only in my leathern jerkin. caſe ſeemed wholly deſperate and deplorable, anc magnificent palace would have infallibly been burnt to the ground, if by a preſence of mind, unuſual to had not ſuddenly thought of an expedient. I ha evening before drank plentifully of a moſt delicious called Glimigrim (the Bleſuſcudians call it Flonec ours is eſteemed the better ſort) which is very diu By the luckieſt chance in the world I had not diſch myſelf of any part of it. The heat I had contract coming very near the flames, and by my labouri quench them, made the wine begin to operate by t which I voided in ſuch a quantity, and applied ſo w the proper places, that in three minutes the fir wholly extinguiſhed, and the reſt of that noble which had coſt ſo many ages in erecting, preſervec deſtruction.

It was now day-light, and I returned to my

ithout waiting to congratulate with the Emperor: beauſe, although I had done a very eminent piece of ſerice, yet I could not tell how his Majeſty might reſent ie manner, by which I had performed it: for, by the ndamental laws of the realm, it is capital in any perſon, f what quality ſoever, to make water within the prencts of the palace. But I was a little comforted by a eſſage from his Majeſty, that he would give orders to ie grand juſticiary for paſſing my pardon in form; which owever I could not obtain. And I was privately aſſured, iat the Empreſs, conceiving the greateſt abhorrence of hat I had done, removed to the moſt diſtant ſide of the ourt, firmly reſolved that thoſe buildings ſhould never e repaired for her uſe; and, in the preſence of her chief onfidents, could not forbear vowing revenge.

CHAP. VI.

Of the inhabitants of Lilliput; their learning, laws, and cuſtoms; the manner of educating their children. The author's way of living in that country. His vindication of a great lady.

ALTHOUGH I intend to leave the deſcription of this empire to a particular treatiſe, yet in the mean time I am content to gratify the curious reader with ſome general ideas. As the common ſize of the natives is ſomewhat under ſix inches high, ſo there is an exact proportion in all other animals, as well as plants and trees: for inſtance, the talleſt horſes and oxen are between four and five inches in height, the ſheep an inch and half, more or leſs; their geeſe about the bigneſs of a ſparrow, and ſo the ſeveral gradations downwards, till you come to the ſmalleſt, which to my ſight were almoſt inviſible; but nature hath adapted the eyes of the Lilliputians to all objects proper for their view: they ſee with great exactneſs, but at no great diſtance. And, to ſhew the ſharpneſs of their ſight towards objects that are near, I have been much pleaſed with obſerving a cook pulling a lark, which was not ſo large as a common fly; and a young girl

girl threading an inviſible needle with inviſible ſilk talleſt trees are about ſeven feet high: I mean thoſe in the great royal park, the tops whereof I c juſt reach with my fiſt clinched. The other vegets in the ſame proportion; but this I leave to the imagination.

I ſhall ſay but little at preſent of their learning for many ages hath flouriſhed in all its branche them: but their manner of writing is very pecul ing neither from the left to the right, like the Eur nor from the right to the left, like the Arabia from up to down, like the Chineſe; but aſſant fi corner of the paper to the other, like ladies in Er

They bury their dead with their heads directl wards, becauſe they hold an opinion, that in thouſand moons they are all to riſe again, in whic the earth (which they conceive to be flat) will t ſide down, and by this means they ſhall at thei rection be found ready ſtanding on their feet *. Tl ed among them confeſs the abſurdity of this c but the practice ſtill continues in compliance to gar †.

* Here the author dares even to exert his vein of h liberally, as to place the reſurrection, one of the mo raging principles of the Chriſtian religion, in a ridicu contemptible light. Why ſhould that appointment l to man, or appear ſo very extraordinary in the hum which the Author of nature has illuſtrated in the v ſpecies, where the ſeed dies and corrupts, before it c gain to new beauty and glory? *Orrery.*

† This paragraph, if it were examined with judgn candour, would incline us to believe, that an opinion to come is connected ſo immediately with all our reaſ culties, that, ſuppoſing we had never been bleſſed with velation from God, we ſhould believe the reſurrectio eternal. The Lilliputians believe, that, after eleven t moons, the earth will be turned upſide down; and u account they are buried with their heads directly dow in order to be found ſtanding upon their feet at the reſurrection: An opinion, which I confeſs, with the le among themſelves, to be whimſical and ridiculous enou

There are ſome laws and cuſtoms in this empire very peculiar; and, if they were not ſo directly contrary to thoſe of my own dear country, I ſhould be tempted to ay a little in their juſtification. It is only to be wiſhed hey were as well executed. The firſt I ſhall mention, reates to informers. All crimes againſt the ſtate are puniſhd here with the utmoſt ſeverity; but, if the perſon accuſed aketh his innocence plainly to appear upon his trial, the cuſer is immediately put to an ignominious death; and at of his goods or lands, the innocent perſon is quadruy recompenſed for the loſs of his time, for the danger e underwent, for the hardſhip of his impriſonment, and r all the charges he hath been at in making his defence. r, if that fund be deficient, it is largely ſupplied by the own. The Emperor alſo confers on him ſome public ark of his favour, and proclamation is made of his inocence through the whole city.

They look upon fraud as a greater crime than the't, nd therefore ſeldom fail to puniſh it with death; for hey alledge, that care and vigilance, with a very common underſtanding, may preſerve a man's goods from hieves but honeſty has no fence againſt ſuperior cunning; and ſince it is neceſſary that there ſhould be a perpetual intercourſe of buying and ſelling, and dealing upon credit; where fraud is permitted and connived at, or hath no law to puniſh it, the honeſt dealer is always undone, and the knave gets the advantage. I remember, when I was once interceding with the king for a criminal, who had wronged his maſter of a great ſum of money, which he had received by order and ran away with; and happening to tell his Majeſty, by way of extenuation,

follies and abſurdities are always mixed with idolatry and ſuperſtition. The Lilliputians were rank idolaters; otherwiſe how could they imagine Gulliver's watch to be the god that he worſhipped? And therefore I cannot but infer, that, inſtead of placing the reſurrection in a ridiculous contemptible light, Gulliver hath fairly manifeſted the opinion of a ſtate hereafter (although connected with ſome vanities and abſurdities, which are the effects of ſuperſtition) to be the ground-work of all religion, founded upon the clear and ſtrong dictates, both of nature and reaſon. *Swift.*

that it was only a breach of truſt; the Emperor
it monſtrous in me to offer as a defence, the gre
gravation of the crime: and truly I had little
return, farther than the common anſwer, that diffe
tions had different cuſtoms; for, I confeſs, I wa
ly aſhamed *.

Although we uſually call reward and puniſhm
two hinges, upon which all government turns, ye
never obſerve this maxim to be put in practice
nation, except that of Lilliput. Whoever can the
ſufficient proof, that he hath ſtrictly obſerved the
his country for ſeventy-three moons, hath a
certain privileges, according to his quality and c
of life, with a proportionable ſum of money out c
appropriated for that uſe: he likewiſe acquires
of *ſnilpall*, or *legal*, which is added to his na
doth not deſcend to his poſterity. And theſe
thought it a prodigious defect of policy among t
I told them, that our laws were enforced only b
ties, without any mention of reward. It is upon
count, that the image of juſtice in their courts
cature is formed with ſix eyes, two before, as n
hind, and on each ſide one, to ſignify circumſ
with a bag of gold open in her right hand, and
ſheathed in her left, to ſhew ſhe is more diſpoſ
ward than to puniſh.

In chooſing perſons for all employments, they h
regard to good morals than to great abilities; f
government is neceſſary to mankind, they believ
common ſize of human underſtandings is fitted
ſtation or other, and that providence never int
make the management of public affairs a myſte
comprehended only by a few perſons of ſublim
of which there ſeldom are three born in an age:
ſuppoſe truth, juſtice, temperance, and the like,
every man's power, the practice of which virtu
ed by experience and a good intention, woul
any man for the ſervice of his country, except
courſe of ſtudy is required. But they thought

* An act of parliament hath been ſince paſſed,
ſome breaches of truſt have been made capital. *Hawi*

virtues was ſo far from being ſupplied by ſupe-
owments of the mind, that employments could
put into ſuch dangerous hands as thoſe of per-
ualified; and at leaſt, that the miſtakes commit-
orance in a virtuous diſpoſition, would never be
tal conſequence to the public weal, as the prac-
man whoſe inclinations led him to be corrupt,
had great abilities to manage, to multiply, and
corruptions.

manner, the diſbelief of a divine providence
man uncapable of holding any public ſtation;
kings avow themſelves to be the deputies of
e, the Lilliputians think nothing can be more
an for a prince to employ ſuch men as diſown
ity, under which he acteth.

ing theſe and the following laws, I would only
ood to mean the original inſtitutions, and not
ſcandalous corruptions, into which theſe peo-
len, by the degenerate nature of man. For as
famous practice of acquiring great employ-
dancing on the ropes, or badges of favour and
by leaping over ſticks, and creeping under
reader is to obſerve, that they were firſt in-
y the grandfather of the Emperor, now reign-
grew to the preſent height by the gradual in-
party and faction.

ude is among them a capital crime, as we read
been in ſome other countries; for they reaſon
whoever makes ill returns to his benefactor,
be a common enemy to the reſt of mankind,
n he hath received no obligation, and therefore
n is not fit to live.

notions relating to the duties of parents and
liffer extremely from ours. For, ſince the con-
f male and female is founded upon the great
ure, in order to propagate and continue the
e Lilliputians will needs have it, that men and
joined together like other animals, by the mo-
ncupiſcence; and that their tenderneſs towards
g, proceeds from the like natural principle: for
on they will never allow, that a child is under
ation to *his father* for begetting him, or to his

mother for bringing him into the world, which, consi
the miseries of human life, was neither a benefit in
nor intended so by his parents, whose thoughts ir
love encounters were otherwise employed. Upon
and the like reasonings, their opinion is, that pare
the last of all others to be trusted with the educat
their own children: and therefore they have in every
public nurseries, where all parents, except cottage
labourers, are obliged to send their infants of both
to be reared and educated when they come to the
twenty moons, at which time they are supposed t
some rudiments of docility. These schools are of
kinds, suited to different qualities, and to both
They have certain professors well skilled in pre
children for such a condition of life as befits th
of their parents, and their own capacities as well
clinations. I shall first say something of the male nu
and then of the female.

The nurseries for males of noble or eminent bir
provided with grave and learned professors, and tl
veral deputies. The clothes and food of the child
plain and simple. They are bred up in the princ
honour, justice, courage, modesty, clemency, re
and love of their country; they are always emple
some business, except in the times of eating and sl
which are very short, and two hours for diversion
sisting of bodily exercises. They are dressed by r
four years of age, and then are obliged to dress then
although their quality be ever so great; and the
attendants, who are aged proportionably to ours
perform only the most menial offices. They ar
suffered to converse with servants, but go toge
smaller or greater numbers to take their diversio
always in the presence of a professor, or one of
puties; whereby they avoid those early bad impres
folly and vice, to which our children are subject.
parents are suffered to see them only twice a-year; t
is to last but an hour; they are allowed to kiss the
meeting and parting; but a professor, who always
by on those occasions, will not suffer them to w
or use any fondling expressions, or bring any pre
toys, sweet-meats, and the like.

The penſion from each family for the education and entertainment of a child, upon failure of due payment, is levied by the Emperor's officers.

The nurſeries for children of ordinary gentlemen, merchants, traders, and handicrafts, are managed proportionably after the ſame manner; only thoſe deſigned for trades are put out apprentices at eleven years old, whereas thoſe of perſons of quality continue in their exerciſes till fifteen, which anſwers to twenty one with us: but the confinement is gradually leſſened for the laſt three years.

In the female nurſeries, the young girls of quality are educated much like the males, only they are dreſſed by orderly ſervants of their own ſex; but always in the preſence of a profeſſor or deputy, till they come to dreſs themſelves, which is at five years old. And if it be found, that theſe nurſes ever preſume to entertain the girls with frightful or fooliſh ſtories, or the common follies practiſed by chamber-maids among us, they are publicly whipped thrice about the city, impriſoned for a year, and baniſhed for life to the moſt deſolate part of the country. Thus the young ladies there are as much aſhamed of being cowards and fools, as the men, and deſpiſe all perſonal ornaments beyond decency and cleanlineſs: neither did I perceive any difference in their education, made by their difference of ſex, only that the exerciſes of the females were not altogether ſo robuſt; and that ſome rules were given them relating to domeſtic life, and a ſmaller compaſs of learning was enjoined them: for their maxim is, that, among people of quality, a wife ſhould be always a reaſonable and agreeable companion, becauſe ſhe cannot always be young. When the girls are twelve years old, which among them is the marriageable age, their parents or guardians take them home with great expreſſions of gratitude to the profeſſors, and ſeldom without tears of the young lady and her companions.

In the nurſeries of females of the meaner ſort, the children are inſtructed in all kinds of works proper for their ſex, and their ſeveral degrees: thoſe intended for apprentices are diſmiſſed at ſeven years old, the reſt are kept to eleven.

The meaner families, who have children at theſe nurſeries,

ſeries, are obliged, beſides their annual penſion, w
as low as poſſible, to return to the ſteward of th
ſery, a ſmall monthly ſhare of their gettings, to be
tion for the child; and therefore, all parents are
in their expences by the law. For the Lilliputian
nothing can be more unjuſt, than for people, in
vience to their own appetites, to bring children ir
world, and leave the burden of ſupporting them
public. As to perſons of quality, they give ſecu
appropriate a certain ſum for each child, ſuitable t
condition; and theſe funds are always managed wit
husbandry, and the moſt exact juſtice.

The cottagers and labourers keep their chil
home, their buſineſs being only to till and c
the earth, and therefore their education is of little
quence to the public: but the old and diſeaſed
them are ſupported by hoſpitals: for begging is
unknown in this empire.

And here it may perhaps divert the curious
to give ſome account of my domeſtics, and my
of living in this country, during a reſidence of nine
and thirteen days. Having a head mechanically
and being likewiſe forced by neceſſity, I had m
myſelf a table and chair, convenient enough, out
largeſt trees in the royal park. Two hundred ſemp
were employed to make me ſhirts, and linen for
and table all of the ſtrongeſt and coarſeſt kinds the
get; which however they were forced to quilt to
in ſeveral folds, for the thickeſt was ſome degree
than lawn. Their linen is uſually three inches wid
three feet make a piece. The ſempſtreſſes took m
ſure as I lay on the ground, one ſtanding at my nec
another at my mid-leg, with a ſtrong cord extende
each held by the end, while a third meaſured the
of the cord with a rule of an inch long. Then the
ſured my right thumb, and deſired no more; fo
mathematical computation, that twice round the
is once round the wriſt, and ſo on to the neck a
waiſt, and by the help of my old ſhirt, which I di
on the ground before them for a pattern, they fit
exactly. Three hundred taylors were employed
ſame manner to make me clothes; but they had a
com

ivance for taking my meaſure. I kneeled down, and raiſed a ladder from the ground to my neck; upon adder one of them mounted, and let fall a plum-line my collar to the floor, which juſt anſwered the n of my coat; but my waiſt and arms I meaſured f. When my clothes were finiſhed, which was done r houſe (for the largeſt of theirs would not have been o hold them) they looked like the patch-work made ne ladies in England, only that mine were all of a r.

ad three hundred cooks to dreſs my victuals in lit- nvenient huts built about my houſe, where they heir families lived, and prepared me two diſhes a- . I took up twenty waiters in my hand, and placed on the table; an hundred more attended below on round, ſome with diſhes of meat, and ſome with ls of wine, and other liquors, ſlung on their ſhoul- all which the waiters above drew up, as I wanted, very ingenious manner by certain cords, as we draw ucket up a well, in Europe. A diſh of their meat good mouthful, and a barrel of their liquor a rea- le draught. Their mutton yields to ours, but their is excellent. I have had a ſirloin ſo large, that I been forced to make three bits of it; but this is My ſervants were aſtoniſhed to ſee me eat it, bones ll, as in our country we do the leg of a lark. Their and turkies I uſually eat at a mouthful, and I muſt ſs, they far exceed ours. Of their ſmaller fowl I take up twenty or thirty at the end of my knife. e day his Imperial Majeſty, being informed of my of living, deſired that himſelf and his royal conſort, the young princes of the blood of both ſexes, might the happineſs (as he was pleaſed to call it) of din- ith me. They came accordingly, and I placed them irs of ſtate upon my table, juſt over-againſt me, with guards about them. Flimnap, the lord high trea- attended there likewiſe with his white ſtaff; and I ved he often looked on me with a ſour countenance, I would not ſeem to regard, but eat more than in honour to my dear country, as well as to fill the with admiration. I have ſome private reaſons to e, that this viſit from his Majeſty gave Flimnap an

opportunity

opportunity of doing me ill offices to his maſter. That miniſter had always been my ſecret enemy, though he outwardly careſſed me more than was uſual to the moroſeneſs of his nature. He repreſented to the Emperor the low condition of his treaſury; that he was forced to take up money at great diſcount; that exchequer bills would not circulate under nine *per cent.* below par; that I had coſt his Majeſty above a million and a half of *ſprugs* (their greateſt gold coin, about the bigneſs of a ſpangle) and upon the whole, that it would be adviſeable in the Emperor to take the firſt fair occaſion of diſmiſſing me.

I am here obliged to vindicate the reputation of an excellent lady, who was an innocent ſufferer upon my account. The treaſurer took a fancy to be jealous of his wife, from the malice of ſome evil tongues, who informed him that her grace had taken a violent affection for my perſon; and the court-ſcandal ran for ſome time, that ſhe once came privately to my lodging. This I ſolemnly declare to be a moſt infamous falſhood, without any grounds, farther than that her grace was pleaſed to treat me with all innocent marks of freedom and friendſhip. I own ſhe came often to my houſe, but always publicly, nor ever without three more in the coach, who were uſually her ſiſter and young daughter, and ſome particular acquaintance; but this was common to many other ladies of the court. And I ſtill appeal to my ſervants round, whether they at any time ſaw a coach at my door, without knowing what perſons were in it. On theſe occaſions, when a ſervant had given me notice, my cuſtom was to go immediately to the door; and, after paying my reſpects, to take up the coach and two horſes very carefully in my hands (for, if there were ſix horſes, the poſtillion always unharneſſed four) and placed them on a table, where I had fixed a moveable rim, quite round, of five inches high, to prevent accidents. And I have often had four coaches and horſes at once on my table, full of company, while I ſat in my chair, leaning my face towards them; and, when I was engaged with one ſet, the coachmen would gently drive the others round my table. I have paſſed many an afternoon very agreeably in theſe converſations. But I defy the treaſurer, or his two informers (I will name them, and let them make their beſt of it) Cluſtril and

Drunlo,

Drunlo, to prove that any perſon ever came to me *incognito*, except the ſecretary Reldreſal, who was ſent by expreſs command of his Imperial Majeſty, as I have before related. I ſhould not have dwelt ſo long upon this particular, if it had not been a point wherein the reputation of a great lady is ſo nearly concerned, to ſay nothing of my own, though I then had the honour to be a *Nardac*, which the treaſurer himſelf is not; for all the world knows, that he is only a *Glamglum*, a title inferior by one degree, as that of a Marquis is to a Duke in England; yet I allow he preceded me in right of his poſt. Theſe falſe informations, which I afterwards came to the knowledge of by an accident not proper to mention, made the treaſurer ſhew his lady for ſome time an ill countenance, and me a worſe; and although he was at laſt undeceived and reconciled to her, yet I loſt all credit with him, and found my intereſt decline very faſt with the Emperor himſelf, who was indeed too much governed by that favourite.

CHAP. VII.

The author, being informed of a deſign to accuſe him of high-treaſon, maketh his eſcape to Bleſuſcu. His reception there.

BEFORE I proceed to give an account of my leaving this kingdom, it may be proper to inform the reader of a private intrigue, which had been for two months forming againſt me.

I had been hitherto all my life a ſtranger to courts, for which I was unqualified by the meanneſs of my condition. I had indeed heard and read enough of the diſpoſitions of great princes and miniſters; but never expected to have found ſuch terrible effects of them in ſo remote a country, governed, as I thought, by very different maxims from thoſe in Europe.

When I was juſt preparing to pay my attendance on the Emperor of Bleſuſcu, a conſiderable perſon at court (to whom I had been very ſerviceable at a time, when he lay under the higheſt diſpleaſure of his Imperial Majeſty) came to my houſe very privately at night in a cloſe chair, and,

and, without ſending his name, deſired admittance: t
chairmen were diſmiſſed; I put the chair, with his lor
ſhip in it, into my coat pocket; and, giving orders to
truſty ſervant to ſay I was indiſpoſed and gone to ſlee
I faſtened the door of my houſe, placed the chair on t
table, according to my uſual cuſtom, and ſat down by
After the common ſalutations were over, obſerving l
lordſhip's countenance full of concern, and enquiring i
to the reaſon, he deſired I would hear him with patier
in a matter, that highly concerned my honour and i
life. His ſpeech was to the following effect, for I to
notes of it as ſoon as he left me.

You are to know, ſaid he, that ſeveral committees
council have been lately called in the moſt private m
ner on your account; and it is but two days ſince
Majeſty came to a full reſolution.

You are very ſenſible that Skyriſh Bolgolam (*galbet*,
high-admiral) hath been your mortal enemy almoſt e
ſince your arrival: his original reaſons I know not; l
his hatred is increaſed ſince your great ſucceſs agai
Blefuſcu, by which his glory, as admiral, is much obſc
ed. This lord, in conjunction with Flimnap the hig
treaſurer, whoſe enmity againſt you is notorious on
count of his lady, Limtoc the general, Lalcon the cha
berlain, and Balmuff the grand juſticiary, have prepa
articles of impeachment againſt you for treaſon, and
ther capital crimes.

This preface made me ſo impatient, being conſ
ous of my own merits and innocence, that I was goi
to interrupt: when he entreated me to be ſilent, and th
proceeded.

Out of gratitude for the favours you have done me,
procured information of the whole proceedings, an
copy of the articles; wherein I venture my head for yc
ſervice.

Articles of impeachment againſt Quinbus Fleſtrin, t
man-mountain.

ARTICLE I.

Whereas, by a ſtatute made in the reign of his I
perial Majeſty Calin Deffar Plune, it is enacted, that wh
e

ever ſhall make water within the precincts of the royal palace, ſhall be liable to the pains and penalties of high treaſon: notwithſtanding the ſaid Quinbus Fleſtrin, in open breach of the ſaid law, under colour of extinguiſhing the fire kindled in the apartment of his majeſty's moſt dear imperial conſort, did maliciouſly, traiterouſly, and deviliſhly, by diſcharge of his urine, put out the ſaid fire kindled in the ſaid apartment, lying and being within the precincts of the ſaid royal palace, againſt the ſtatute in that caſe provided, *&c.* againſt the duty, *&c.*

ARTICLE II.

That the ſaid Quinbus Fleſtrin having brought the imperial fleet of Bleſuſcu into the royal port, and being afterwards commanded by his Imperial Majeſty to ſeize all the other ſhips of the ſaid empire of Bleſuſcu, and reduce that empire to a province to be governed by a vice-roy from hence, and to deſtroy and put to death, not only all the *Big-endian exiles*, but likewiſe all the people of that empire, who would not immediately forſake the *Big-endian* hereſy: he, the ſaid Fleſtrin, like a falſe traitor againſt his moſt auſpicious, ſerene, Imperial Majeſty, did petition to be excuſed from the ſaid ſervice, upon pretence of unwillingneſs to force the conſciences, or deſtroy the liberties and lives of an innocent people *.

ARTICLE III.

That, whereas certain ambaſſadors arrived from the court of Bleſuſcu to ſue for peace in his Majeſty's court; he, the ſaid Fleſtrin, did, like a falſe traitor, aid, abet, comfort, and divert the ſaid ambaſſadors, although he knew them to be ſervants to a prince, who was lately an open enemy to his Imperial Majeſty, and in open war againſt his ſaid Majeſty.

* A lawyer thinks himſelf honeſt if he does the beſt he can for his client; and a ſtateſman, if he promotes the intereſt of his country: but the Dean here inculcates an higher notion of right and wrong, and obligations to a larger community. *Hawkeſ.*

ARTICLE

ARTICLE IV.

That the ſaid Quinbus Fleſtrin, contrary to the of a faithful ſubject, is now preparing to make a vo to the court and empire of Blefuſcu, for which he received only verbal licence from his Imperial Maj and under colour of the ſaid licence, doth falſly and terouſly intend to take the ſaid voyage, and therel aid, comfort, and abet, the Emperor of Blefuſcu, f an enemy and in open war with his Imperial Majeſ foreſaid.

There are ſome other articles, but theſe are the important, of which I have read you an abſtract.

In the ſeveral debates upon this impeachment it be confeſſed, that his Majeſty gave many marks o great lenity, often urging the ſervices you had done and endeavouring to extenuate your crimes. The ſurer and admiral inſiſted, that you ſhould be put t moſt painful and ignominious death, by ſetting fire on houſe at night, and the general was to attend with tw thouſand men armed with poiſoned arrows, to ſhoot yo the face and hands. Some of your ſervants were to private orders to ſtrew a poiſonous juice on your ſ and ſheets, which would ſoon make you tear your fleſh, and die in the utmoſt torture. The general into the ſame opinion; ſo that for a long time there a majority againſt you: but his Majeſty reſolving, if ſible, to ſpare your life, at laſt brought off the cham lain.

Upon this incident, Reldreſal, principal ſecretary private affairs, who always approved himſelf your friend, was commanded by the Emperor to deliver opinion, which he accordingly did: and therein juſt the good thoughts you have of him. He allowed crimes to be great, but that ſtill there was room for me the moſt commendable virtue in a prince, and for w his Majeſty was ſo juſtly celebrated. He ſaid, the fri ſhip between you and him was ſo well known to world, that perhaps the moſt honourable board m *think him* partial; however, in obedience to the c

and he had received, he would freely offer his ſentients. That if his Majeſty, in conſideration of your ſerces, and purſuant to his own merciful diſpoſition, would leaſe to ſpare your life, and only give order to put out oth your eyes, he humbly conceived, that by this expeent juſtice might in ſome meaſure be ſatisfied, and all ie world would applaud the lenity of the Emperor, as ell as the fair and generous proceedings of thoſe who ave the honour to be his counſellors. That the loſs of our eyes would be no impediment to your bodily ſtrength, y which you might ſtill be uſeful to his Majeſty: that lindneſs is an addition to courage, by concealing daners from us; that the fear you had for your eyes, was ie greateſt difficulty in bringing over the enemies fleet; nd it would be ſufficient for you to ſee by the eyes of ie miniſters, ſince the greateſt princes do no more.

This propoſal was received with the utmoſt diſapproation by the whole board. Bolgolam the admiral could ot preſerve his temper; but riſing up in fury ſaid, he ondered how the ſecretary durſt preſume to give his pinion for preſerving the life of a traitor: that the ſerices you had performed were, by all true reaſons of ſtate, he great aggravation of your crimes; that you, who was ble to extinguiſh the fire by diſcharge of urine in her Majeſty's apartment, (which he mentioned with horror) ight at another time raiſe an inundation by the ſame eans to drown the whole palace; and the ſame ſtrength, which enabled you to bring over the enemies fleet, might ſerve, upon the firſt diſcontent, to carry it back: that he had good reaſons to think you were a *Big-endian* in your heart; and as treaſon begins in the heart, before it appears in overt-acts, ſo he accuſed you as a traitor on that account, and therefore inſiſted you ſhould be put to death.

The treaſurer was of the ſame opinion: he ſhewed to what ſtraits his Majeſty's revenue was reduced, by the charge of maintaining you, which would ſoon grow inſupportable: that the ſecretary's expedient of putting out your eyes, was ſo far from being a remedy againſt this evil, that it would probably increaſe it, as is manifeſt from the common practice of blinding ſome kind of fowl, after which they fed the faſter, and grew ſooner fat: that his ſacred Majeſty and the council, who are your judges,

were in their own conſciences fully convinced of you
guilt, which was a ſufficient argument to condemn yo
to death, without the formal proofs required by the ſtri
letter of the law *.

But his Imperial Majeſty, fully determined again
capital puniſhment, was graciouſly pleaſed to ſay, th
ſince the council thought the loſs of your eyes too ea
a cenſure, ſome other may be inflicted hereafter. Ar
your friend, the ſecretary, humbly deſiring to be heard
gain, in anſwer to what the treaſurer had objected co
cerning the great charge his Majeſty was at in maintai
ing you, ſaid, that his Excellency, who had the ſole di
poſal of the Emperor's revenue, might eaſily provide
gainſt that evil by gradually leſſening your eſtabliſhmen
by which, for want of ſufficient food, you would gro
weak and faint, and loſe your appetite, and conſume i
a few months; neither would the ſtench of your carca
be then ſo dangerous, when it ſhould become more tha
half diminiſhed; and immediately upon your death, fi
or ſix thouſand of his Majeſty's ſubjects might in two o
three days cut your fleſh from your bones, take it awa
by cart-loads, and bury it in diſtant parts to prevent in
fection, leaving the skeleton as a monument of admir
tion to poſterity.

Thus by the great friendſhip of the ſecretary the who
affair was compromiſed. It was ſtrictly enjoined, that th
project of ſtarving you by degrees ſhould be kept a ſecre
but the ſentence of putting out your eyes was entered o
the books; none diſſenting except Bolgolam the admira
who, being a creature of the Empreſs, was perpetually
inſtigated by her Majeſty to inſiſt upon your death, ſt

* There is ſomething ſo odious in whatever is wrong, th
even thoſe whom it does not ſubject to puniſhment, endeavo
to colour it with an appearance of right; but the attempt
always unſucceſsful, and only betrays a conſciouſneſs of defo
mity, by ſhewing a deſire to hide it. Thus the Lilliputian cou
pretended a right to diſpenſe with the ſtrict letter of the la
to put Gulliver to death, though, by the ſtrict letter of the la
only he could be convicted of a crime; the intention of th
ſtatute not being to ſuffer the palace rather to be burnt, tha
piſſed upon. *Hawkeſ.*

havir

having borne perpetual malice againſt you on account of that infamous and illegal method you took to extinguiſh the fire in her apartment.

In three days, your friend the ſecretary will be directed to come to your houſe, and read before you the articles of impeachment; and then to ſignify the great lenity and favour of his Majeſty and council, whereby you are only condemned to the loſs of your eyes, which his Majeſty doth not queſtion you will gratefully and humbly ſubmit to; and twenty of his Majeſty's ſurgeons will attend in order to ſee the operation well performed, by diſcharging very ſharp-pointed arrows into the balls of your eyes, as you lie on the ground.

I leave to your prudence what meaſures you will take; and, to avoid ſuſpicion, I muſt immediately return, in as private a manner as I came.

His lordſhip did ſo, and I remained alone under many doubts and perplexities of mind.

It was a cuſtom, introduced by this prince and his miniſtry (very different, as I have been aſſured, from the practices of former times) that after the court had decreed any cruel execution, either to gratify the monarch's reſentment, or the malice of a favourite, the Emperor always made a ſpeech to his whole council, expreſſing his great lenity and tenderneſs, as qualities known and conſeſſed by all the world. This ſpeech was immediately publiſhed through the kingdom; nor did any thing terrify the people ſo much as thoſe encomiums on his Majeſty's mercy; becauſe it was obſerved, that, the more theſe praiſes were enlarged and inſiſted on, the more inhuman was the puniſhment, and the ſufferer more innocent. Yet, as to myſelf, I muſt confeſs, having never been deſigned for a courtier, either by my birth or education, I was ſo ill a judge of things, that I could not diſcover the clemency and favour of this ſentence, but conceived it, (perhaps erroneouſly) rather to be rigorous than gentle. I ſometimes thought of ſtanding my trial; for although I could not deny the facts alledged in the ſeveral articles, yet I hoped they would admit of ſome extenuation. But having in my life peruſed many ſtate-trials, which I ever obſerved to terminate as the judges thought fit to direct, I durſt not rely on ſo dangerous a deciſion, in ſo critical

a juncture, and againſt ſuch powerful enemies. (
was ſtrongly bent upon reſiſtance, for, while I
berty, the whole ſtrength of that empire could
ſubdue me, and I might eaſily with ſtones pelt t
tropolis to pieces; but I ſoon rejected that proje
horror, by remembering the oath I had made to t
peror, the favours I received from him, and th
title of *Nardac* he conferred upon me. Neither h
ſoon learned the gratitude of courtiers, to perſua
ſelf, that his Majeſty's preſent ſeverities acquitte
all paſt obligations.

At laſt I fixed upon a reſolution, for which it is p
I may incur ſome cenſure, and not unjuſtly; for I c
I owe the preſerving mine eyes, and conſequently
berty, to my own great raſhneſs, and want of expe
becauſe, if I had then known the nature of prin
miniſters, which I have ſince obſerved in many
courts, and their methods of treating criminals, I
noxious than myſelf, I ſhould with great alacrity a
dineſs have ſubmitted to ſo eaſy a puniſhment. Bu
ried on by the precipitancy of youth, and having h
perial Majeſty's licence to pay my attendance up
Emperor of Bleſuſcu, I took this opportunity, bef
three days were elapſed, to ſend a letter to my
the ſecretary, ſignifying my reſolution of ſetting o
morning for Bleſuſcu, purſuant to the leave I ha
and, without waiting for an anſwer, I went to that
the iſland where our fleet lay. I ſeized a large
war, tied a cable to the prow, and, lifting up t
chors, I ſtript myſelf, put my clothes (together w
coverlet, which I carried under my arm) into the
and drawing it after me, between wading and ſwi
arrived at the royal port of Bleſuſcu, where the peo
long expected me; they lent me two guides to di
to the capital city, which is of the ſame name.
them in my hands, till I came within two hundre
of the gate, and deſired them to ſignify my arrival
of the ſecretaries, and let him know, I there wai
Majeſty's command. I had an anſwer in about an
that his Majeſty, attended by the royal family and
officers of the court, was coming out to receive me
vanced a hundred yards. The Emperor and his t

lighted from their horſes, the Empreſs and ladies from their coaches, and I did not perceive they were in any fright or concern. I lay on the ground to kiſs his Majeſty's and the Empreſs's hand. I told his Majeſty that I was come, according to my promiſe, and with the licence of the Emperor my maſter, to have the honour of ſeeing ſo mighty a monarch, and to offer him any ſervice in my power, conſiſtent with my duty to my own prince; not mentioning a word of my diſgrace, becauſe I had hitherto no regular information of it, and might ſuppoſe myſelf wholly ignorant of any ſuch deſign; neither could I reaſonably conceive that the Emperor would diſcover the ſecret, while I was out of his power; wherein however it ſoon appeared I was deceived.

I ſhall not trouble the reader with the particular account of my reception at this court, which was ſuitable to the generoſity of ſo great a prince; nor of the difficulties I was in for want of a houſe and bed, being forced to lie on the ground, wrapt up in my coverlet.

CHAP. VIII.

The author, by a lucky accident, finds means to leave Blefuſcu; and, after ſome difficulties, returns ſafe to his native country.

THREE days after my arrival, walking out of curioſity to the north-eaſt coaſt of the iſland, I obſerved about half a league off, in the ſea, ſomewhat that looked like a boat overturned. I pulled off my ſhoes and ſtockings, and, wading two or three hundred yards, I found the object to approach nearer by force of the tide; and then plainly ſaw it to be a real boat, which I ſuppoſed might by ſome tempeſt have been driven from a ſhip: whereupon I returned immediately towards the city, and deſired his Imperial Majeſty to lend me twenty of the talleſt veſſels he had left after the loſs of his fleet, and three thouſand ſeamen, under the command of his vice-admiral. This fleet ſailed round, while I went back the ſhorteſt way to the coaſt, where I firſt diſcovered the boat; I found the tide had driven it ſtill nearer. The ſeamen were all provided with cordage, which I had before-

hand twiſted to a ſufficient ſtrength. When came up, I ſtript myſelf, and waded till I came v hundred yards of the boat, after which I was ſwim till I got up to it. The ſeamen threw me of the cord, which I faſtened to a hole in the for the boat, and the other end to a man of war: bu all my labour to little purpoſe; for, being o depth, I was not able to work. In this neceſſit forced to ſwim behind, and puſh the boat forv often as I could, with one of my hands; and, the vouring me, I advanced ſo far, that I could juſt my chin and feel the ground. I reſted two minutes, and then gave the boat another ſhove, a till the ſea was no higher than my arm-pits; a the moſt laborious part being over, I took out cables, which were ſtowed in one of the ſhips, ened them firſt to the boat, and then to nine of t which attended me; the wind being favourable, men towed, and I ſhoved till we arrived within fo of the ſhore, and, waiting till the tide was out, I to the boat, and by the aſſiſtance of two thouſa with ropes and engines, I made a ſhift to turn bottom, and found it was but little damaged.

I ſhall not trouble the reader with the difficulti under by the help of certain paddles, which coſt days making, to get my boat to the royal port of where a mighty concourſe of people appeared u arrival, full of wonder at the ſight of ſo prodigio ſel. I told the Emperor, that my good fortune hac this boat in my way to carry me to ſome pla whence I might return into my native country, ged his Majeſty's orders for getting materials to together with his licence to depart, which, aft kind expoſtulations, he was pleaſed to grant.

I did very much wonder, in all this time, not heard of any expreſs relating to me from our Em the court of Bleſuſcu. But I was afterwards given by to underſtand, that his Imperial Majeſty, ne gining I had the leaſt notice of his deſigns, b was only gone to Bleſuſcu in performance of my according to the licence he had given me, wh well known at our court, and would return in a f

when the ceremony was ended. But he was at laſt in pain at my long abſence; and, after conſulting with the treaſurer and the reſt of that cabal, a perſon of quality was diſpatched with a copy of the articles againſt me. This envoy had inſtructions to repreſent to the monarch of Blefuſcu, the great lenity of his maſter, who was content to puniſh me no farther than with the loſs of mine eyes; that I had fled from juſtice, and, if I did not return in two hours, I ſhould be deprived of my title of *Nardac*, and declared a traitor. The envoy further added, that, in order to maintain the peace and amity between both empires, his maſter expected, that his brother of Blefuſcu would give orders to have me ſent back to Lilliput, bound hand and foot, to be puniſhed as a traitor.

The Emperor of Blefuſcu, having taken three days to conſult, returned an anſwer, conſiſting of many civilities and excuſes. He ſaid, that, as for ſending me bound, his brother knew it was impoſſible; that although I had deprived him of his fleet, yet he owed great obligations to me for many good offices I had done him in making the peace. That however both their Majeſties would ſoon be made eaſy: for I had found a prodigious veſſel on the ſhore, able to carry me on the ſea, which he had given orders to fit up with my own aſſiſtance and direction; and he hoped in a few weeks both empires would be freed from ſo inſupportable an incumbrance.

With this anſwer the envoy returned to Lilliput, and the monarch of Blefuſcu related to me all that had paſſed: offering me at the ſame time (but under the ſtricteſt confidence) his gracious protection, if I would continue in his ſervice; wherein, although I believed him ſincere, yet I reſolved never more to put any confidence in princes or miniſters, where I could poſſibly avoid it; and therefore, with all due acknowledgments for his favourable intentions, I humbly begged to be excuſed. I told him, that ſince fortune, whether good or evil, had thrown a veſſel in my way, I was reſolved to venture myſelf in the ocean, rather than be an occaſion of difference between two ſuch mighty monarchs. Neither did I find the Emperor at all diſpleaſed; and I diſcovered by a certain accident, that he was very glad of my reſolution, and ſo were moſt of his miniſters.

Theſe conſiderations moved me to haſten my depa
ture ſomewhat ſooner than I intended; to which the cou
impatient to have me gone, very readily contribute
Five hundred workmen were employed to make two ſa
to my boat, according to my directions, by quilting thi
teen fold of their ſtrongeſt linen together. I was at t
pains of making ropes and cables by twiſting ten, twen
or thirty of the thickeſt and ſtrongeſt of theirs. A gr
ſtone that I happened to find, after a long ſearch by t
ſea-ſhore, ſerved me for an anchor. I had the tallow
three hundred cows for greaſing my boat, and other uſ
I was at incredible pains in cutting down ſome of t
largeſt timber-trees for oars and maſts, wherein I w
however much aſſiſted by his Majeſty's ſhip-carpente
who helped me in ſmoothing them after I had done t
rough work.

In about a month, when all was prepared, I ſent
receive his Majeſty's commands, and to take my lea
The Emperor and royal family came out of the palac
I lay down on my face to kiſs his hand, which he v
graciouſly gave me; ſo did the Empreſs, and you
princes of the blood. His Majeſty preſented me w
fifty purſes of two hundred *ſprugs* a-piece, together w
his picture at full length, which I put immediately in
one of my gloves to keep it from being hurt. The ce
monies at my departure were too many to trouble t
reader with at this time.

I ſtored the boat with the carcaſes of an hundr
oxen, and three hundred ſheep, with bread and dri
proportionable, and as much meat ready dreſſed, as fo
hundred cooks could provide. I took with me ſix co
and two bulls alive, with as many ews and rams, inten
ing to carry them into my own country, and propag
the breed. And to feed them on board, I had a good bu
dle of hay, and a bag of corn. I would gladly have tak
a dozen of the natives, but this was a thing the Em
peror would by no means permit; and, beſides a dilige
ſearch into my pockets, his Majeſty engaged my hono
not to carry away any of his ſubjects, although with th
own conſent and deſire.

Having thus prepared all things as well as I was abl
I ſet ſail on the 24th day of September 1701, at ſix

morning; and when I had gone about four leagues to northward, the wind being at ſouth-eaſt, at ſix in the ning I deſcried a ſmall iſland about half a league to north-weſt. I advanced forward, and caſt anchor on lee-ſide of the iſland, which ſeemed to be uninhabit- I then took ſome refreſhment, and went to my reſt. lept well, and as I conjecture, at leaſt ſix hours, for I nd the day broke in two hours after I awaked. It was ear night. I eat my breakfaſt before the ſun was up; heaving anchor, the wind being favourable, I ſteered ſame courſe that I had done the day before, where- was directed by my pocket-compaſs. My intention to reach, if poſſible, one of thoſe iſlands which I reaſon to believe lay to the north-eaſt of Van Die- n's land. I diſcovered nothing all that day; but upon next, about three in the afternoon, when I had, by computation, made twenty-four leagues from Bleſu- I deſcried a ſail ſteering to the ſouth-eaſt; my rſe was due eaſt. I hailed her, but could get no an- r; yet I found I gained upon her, for the wind ſlack- d. I made all the ſail I could, and in half an hour ſhe d me, then hung out her antient, and diſcharged a . It is not eaſy to expreſs the joy I was in upon the xpected hope of once more ſeeing my beloved country, the dear pledges I left in it. The ſhip ſlackened her , and I came up with her between five and ſix in the ning, September 26; but my heart leapt within me to her Engliſh colours. I put my cows and ſheep into coat-pockets, and got on board with all my little car- of proviſions. The veſſel was an Engliſh merchant- n returning from Japan, by the North and South-ſeas; captain Mr. John Biddel of Deptford, a very civil n, and an excellent ſailor. We were now in the lati- e of 30 degrees ſouth, there were about fifty men in ſhip; and here I met an old comrade of mine, one er Williams, who gave me a good character to the tain. This gentleman treated me with kindneſs, and ired I would let him know what place I came from ; and whither I was bound; which I did in few words, he thought I was raving, and that the dangers I had derwent had diſturbed my head; whereupon I took my ck cattle and ſheep out of my pocket, which, after great

great aſtoniſhment, clearly convinced him of my veracity. I then ſhewed him the gold given me by the Emperor of Blefuſcu, together with his Majeſty's picture at full length, and ſome other rarities of that country. I gave him two purſes of two hundred *ſprugs* each, and promiſed, when we arrived in England, to make him a preſent of a cow and a ſheep big with young.

I ſhall not trouble the reader with a particular account of this voyage, which was very proſperous for the moſt part. We arrived in the Downs on the 13th of April 1702. I had only one misfortune, that the rats on board carried away one of my ſheep; I found her bones in a hole, picked clean from the fleſh. The reſt of my cattle I got ſafe a-ſhore, and ſet them a grazing in a bowling-green at Greenwich, where the fineneſs of the graſs made them feed very heartily, though I had always feared the contrary: neither could I poſſibly have preſerved them in ſo long a voyage, if the captain had not allowed me ſome of his beſt biſcuit, which, rubbed to powder, and mingled with water, was their conſtant food. The ſhort time I continued in England, I made a conſiderable profit by ſhewing my cattle to many perſons of quality, and others: and before I began my ſecond voyage, I ſold them for ſix hundred pounds. Since my laſt return I find the breed is conſiderably increaſed, eſpecially the ſheep, which I hope will prove much to the advantage of the woollen manufacture, by the fineneſs of the fleeces.

I ſtayed but two months with my wife and family: for my inſatiable deſire of ſeeing foreign countries would ſuffer me to continue no longer. I left fifteen hundred pounds with my wife, and fixed her in a good houſe at Redriff. My remaining ſtock I carried with me, part in money and part in goods, in hopes to improve my fortune. My eldeſt uncle John had left me an eſtate in land, near Epping, of about thirty pounds a-year; and I had a long leaſe of the Black-Bull in Fetter-Lane, which yielded me as much more: ſo that I was not in any danger of leaving my family upon the pariſh. My ſon Johnny, named ſo after his uncle, was at the grammar-ſchool, and a towardly child. My daughter Betty, (who is now well

ırried, and has children) was then at her needle-
I took leave of my wife, and boy and girl, with
. both ſides, and went on board the Adventure, a
ıt-ſhip of 300 tons, bound for Surat, Capt. John
s of Liverpool commander. But my account of
ıage muſt be referred to the ſecond part of my

TRAVELS into ſeveral REMOTE TIONS of the world.

PART II.

A VOYAGE to BROBDINGNAG.

CHAP. I.

A great ſtorm deſcribed, the long-boat ſent to fetc ter, the author goes with it to diſcover the co He is left on ſhore, is ſeized by one of the na and carried to a farmer's houſe. His reception, ſeveral accidents that happened there. A deſcri of the inhabitants.

HAVING been condemned by nature and fo to an active and reſtleſs life, in two months my return, I again left my native country, took ſhipping in the Downs on the 20th day of 1702, in the Adventure, Capt. John Nicholas, a Co man, commander, bound for Surat. We had a very pro ous gale till we arrived at the Cape of Good Hope, w we landed for freſh water, but diſcovering a leak, w ſhipped our goods, and wintered there; for, the ca falling ſick of an ague, we could not leave the Cap the end of March. We then ſet ſail, and had a voyage till we paſſed the Streights of Madagaſcar; having got northward of that iſland, and to about fiv grees ſouth latitude, the winds, which in thoſe ſeas ar ſerved to blow a conſtant equal gale between the e and weſt, from the beginning of December to the b ning of May, on the 19th of April began to blow much greater violence, and more weſterly than u continuing ſo for twenty days together, during w time, we were driven a little to the eaſt of the Mo iſlands, and about three degrees northward of the as our captain found by an obſervation he took th

of May, at which time the wind ceaſed, and it was a perfect calm, whereat I was not a little rejoiced. But he, being a man well experienced in the navigation of thoſe ſeas, bid us all prepare againſt a ſtorm, which accordingly happened the day following: for a ſouthern wind, called the ſouthern *monſoon*, began to ſet in.

Finding it was like to overblow, we took in our ſprit-ſail, and ſtood by to hand the fore-ſail; but, making foul weather, we looked the guns were all faſt, and handed the mizen. The ſhip lay very broad off, ſo we thought it better ſpooning before the ſea, than trying or hulling. We reeft the fore-ſail and ſet him, and hawled aft the fore-ſheet; the helm was hard-a-weather. The ſhip wore bravely. We belayed the fore-down-hall; but the ſail was ſplit, and we hawled down the yard, and got the ſail into the ſhip, and unbound all the things clear of it. It was a very fierce ſtorm; the ſea broke ſtrange and dangerous. We hawled off upon the lanniard of the whip-ſtaff, and helped the man at the helm. We would not get down our top-maſt, but let all ſtand, becauſe ſhe ſcudded before the ſea very well, and we knew that, the top-maſt being aloft, the ſhip was the wholſomer, and made better way through the ſea, ſeeing we had ſea-room. When the ſtorm was over, we ſet fore-ſail and main-ſail, and brought the ſhip to. Then we ſet the miſſen, main-top-ſail, and the fore-top-ſail. Our courſe was *eaſt-north-eaſt*, the wind was at *ſouth-weſt*. We got the ſtar-board tacks aboard, we caſt off our weather-braces and liſts; we ſet in the lee-braces, and hawled forward by the weather-bowlings, and hawled them tight, and belayed them, and hawled over the mizen-tack to windward, and kept her full and by as near as ſhe would lie.

During this ſtorm, which was followed by a ſtrong wind *weſt-ſouth-weſt*, we were carried by my computation about five hundred leagues to the *eaſt*, ſo that the oldeſt ſailor on board could not tell in what part of the world we were. Our proviſions held out well, our ſhip was ſtaunch, and our crew all in good health; but we lay in the utmoſt diſtreſs for water. We thought it beſt to hold on the ſame courſe, rather than turn more northerly, which might have brought us to the *north-weſt* parts of great Tartary, and into the frozen ſea.

On the 16th day of June, 1703, a boy on the top-m diſcovered land. On the 17th, we came in full view o great iſland or continent (for we knew not whether) the ſouth-ſide whereof was a ſmall neck of land jetti out into the ſea, and a creek too ſhallow to hold a ſ of above one hundred tons. We caſt anchor withi league of this creek, and our captain ſent a dozen of men well armed in the long-boat, with veſſels for wat if any could be found. I deſired his leave to go w them, that I might ſee the country, and make what d coveries I could. When we came to land, we ſaw river or ſpring, nor any ſign of inhabitants. Our m therefore wandered on the ſhore to find out ſome fr water near the ſea, and I walked alone about a mile the other ſide, where I obſerved the country all bar and rocky. I now began to be weary, and ſeeing nothi to entertain my curioſity, I returned gently down wards the creek; and the ſea being full in my view ſaw our men already got into the boat, and rowing life to the ſhip. I was going to hollow after them, though it had been to little purpoſe, when I obſerve huge creature walking after them in the ſea, as faſt he could; he waded not much deeper than his knees, a took prodigious ſtrides; but our men had the ſtart of h half a league, and, the ſea thereabouts being full ſharp-pointed rocks, the monſter was not able to overt the boat. This I was afterwards told, for I durſt ſtay to ſee the iſſue of the adventure; but ran as faſt I could the way I firſt went, and then climbed up a ſt hill, which gave me ſome proſpect of the country. found it fully cultivated; but that which firſt ſurpri me was the length of the graſs, which, in thoſe grou that ſeemed to be kept for hay, was about twenty f high.

I fell into a high-road, for ſo I took it to be, thou it ſerved to the inhabitants only as a foot-path throu a field of barley. Here I walked on for ſome time, I could ſee little on either ſide, it being now near harv and the corn riſing at leaſt forty feet, I was an h walking to the end of this field, which was fenced with a hedge of at leaſt one hundred and twenty f high, and the trees ſo loſty that I could make no co

putati

ıtion of their altitude. There was a ſtile to paſs from field into the next. It had four ſteps, and a ſtone to ſs over when you came to the uppermoſt. It was imſible for me to climb this ſtile, becauſe every ſtep was feet high, and the upper ſtone above twenty. I was leavouring to find ſome gap in the hedge, when I diſrered one of the inhabitants in the next field advanc-, towards the ſtile, of the ſame ſize with him whom I in the ſea purſuing our boat. He appeared as tall as ordinary ſpire-ſteeple, and took about ten yards at ry ſtride, as near as I could gueſs. I was ſtruck with : utmoſt fear and aſtoniſhment, and ran to hide myſelf the corn, from whence I ſaw him at the top of the le looking back into the next field on the right hand, d heard him call in a voice many degrees louder than peaking-trumpet; but the noiſe was ſo high in the air, at at firſt I certainly thought it was thunder. Whereon ſeven monſters, like himſelf, came towards him th reaping-hooks in their hands, each hook about the geneſs of ſix ſcythes. Theſe people were not ſo well id as the firſt, whoſe ſervants or labourers they ſeemed be: for, upon ſome words he ſpoke, they went to reap e corn in the field where I lay. I kept from them at as eat a diſtance as I could, but was forced to move with reme difficulty, for the ſtalks of the corn were ſometes not above a foot diſtant, ſo that I could hardly ueeze my body betwixt them. However, I made a ſhift go forward, till I came to a part of the field where e corn had been laid by the rain and wind. Here it as impoſſible for me to advance a ſtep; for the ſtalks ere ſo interwoven, that I could not creep through, and e beards of the fallen ears ſo ſtrong and pointed, that ey pierced through my cloaths into my fleſh. At the me time I heard the reapers not above an hundred yards hind me. Being quite diſpirited with toil, and wholly rercome by grief and deſpair, I lay down between o ridges, and heartily wiſhed I might there end my ys. I bemoaned my deſolate widow, and fatherleſs ildren. I lamented my own folly and wilfulneſs in atmpting a ſecond voyage againſt the advice of all my iends and relations. In this terrible agitation of mind, I uld not forbear thinking of Lilliput, whoſe inhabitants

looked upon me as the greateſt prodigy that ever app
ed in the world: where I was able to draw an imp
fleet in my hand, and perform thoſe other actions w
will be recorded for ever in the chronicles of that
pire, while poſterity ſhall hardly believe them, alth
atteſted by millions. I reflected what a mortificatic
muſt prove to me, to appear as inconſiderable in thi
tion, as one ſingle Lilliputian would be among us.
this I conceived was to be the leaſt of my misfortu
for, as human creatures are obſerved to be more fi
and cruel, in proportion to their bulk, what could
pect, but to be a morſel in the mouth of the firſt a
theſe enormous barbarians, that ſhould happen to feize
Undoubtedly philoſophers are in the right when the
us, that nothing is great or little otherwiſe than by
pariſon. It might have pleaſed fortune to have let th
liputians find ſome nation, where the people were
minutive, with reſpect to them, as they were to me.
who knows but that even this prodigious race of m
might be equally overmatched in ſome diſtant part
world, whereof we have yet no diſcovery.

Scared and confounded as I was, I could not fo
going on with theſe reflections, when one of the re
approaching within ten yards of the ridge where
made me apprehend, that with the next ſtep I ſhou
ſquaſhed to death under his foot, or cut in two wit
reaping-hook. And therefore, when he was again
to move, I ſcreamed as loud as fear could make
Whereupon the huge creature trod ſhort, and, lo
round about under him, for ſome time, at laſt eſpi
as I lay on the ground. He conſidered a while wi
caution of one who endeavours to lay hold on a
dangerous animal, in ſuch a manner that it ſhall n
able either to ſcratch or to bite him, as I myſelf
ſometimes done with a weaſel in England. At len
ventured to take me up behind by the middle, be
his fore-finger and thumb, and brought me within
yards of his eyes, that he might behold my ſhape
perfectly. I gueſſed his meaning, and my good fo
gave me ſo much preſence of mind, that I reſolved
ſtruggle in the leaſt as he held me in the air, above
feet from the ground, although he grievouſly pinch

for fear I ſhould ſlip through his fingers. All I ven-
was, to raiſe mine eyes towards the ſun, and place
ads together in a ſupplicating poſture, and to ſpeak
words in an humble melancholy tone, ſuitable to
ndition I then was in. For I apprehended every mo-
hat he would daſh me againſt the ground, as we uſu-
any little hateful animal, which we have a mind
roy *. But my good ſtar would have it, that he ap-
pleaſed with my voice and geſtures, and began to
pon me as a curioſity, much wondering to hear me
nce articulate words, although he could not under-
hem. In the mean time I was not able to forbear
ng and ſhedding tears, and turning my head to-
my ſides; letting him know, as well as I could, how
I was hurt by the preſſure of his thumb and finger.
med to apprehend my meaning; for, lifting up the
of his coat, he put me gently into it, and immedi-
an along with me to his maſter, who was a ſub-
l farmer, and the ſame perſon I had firſt ſeen in the

farmer having (as I ſuppoſe by their talk) receiv-
a an account of me as his ſervant could give him,
piece of a ſmall ſtraw, about the ſize of a walking-
nd therewith lifted up the lappets of my coat;
it ſeems he thought to be ſome kind of covering
ature had given me. He blew my hairs aſide to
better view of my face. He called his hinds about
nd asked them (as I afterwards learned) whether
ld ever ſeen in the fields, any little creature that
led me: he then placed me ſoftly on the ground
ll four, but I got immediately up, and walked ſlow-
wards and forwards, to let thoſe people ſee I had
nt to run away. They all ſat down in a circle
ne, the better to obſerve my motions. I pulled off

* inattention to the felicity of ſenſitive beings merely
they are ſmall, is here forcibly reproved: many have
ly cruſhed an inſect, who would ſhudder at cutting the
of a dog; but it ſhould always be remembered, that the
theſe
mortal ſufferance feels a pang as great
when a giant dies. Hawkeſ.

my hat, and made a low bow towards the farmer. on my knees, and lifted up my hands and eyes, and ſeveral words as loud as I could: I took a purſe out of my pocket, and humbly preſented it to him received it on the palm of his hand, then applied i to his eye to ſee what it was, and afterwards tur ſeveral times with the point of a pin (which he to of his ſleeve) but could make nothing of it. Whe I made a ſign that he ſhould place his hand on the g I then took the purſe, and opening it, poured all t into his palm. There were ſix Spaniſh pieces, piſtoles each, beſides twenty or thirty ſmaller coi ſaw him wet the tip of his little finger upon his and take up one of my largeſt pieces, and then a but he ſeemed to be wholly ignorant what they wer made me a ſign to put them again into my purſe, purſe again into my pocket, which, after offerin him ſeveral times, I thought it beſt to do.

The farmer by this time was convinced I muſt tional creature. He ſpoke often to me, but the of his voice pierced my ears like that of a water m his words were articulate enough. I anſwered as I could in ſeveral languages, and he often laid within two yards of me; but all in vain, for we wer ly unintelligible to each other. He then ſent his f to their work, and, taking his handkerchief out pocket, he doubled and ſpread it on his left hand, he placed flat on the ground, with the palm upward ing me a ſign to ſtep into it, as I could eaſily do, was not above a foot in thickneſs. I thought it n to obey, and, for fear of falling, laid myſelf at full upon the handkerchief, with the remainder of wl lapped me up to the head for farther ſecurity, this manner carried me home to his houſe. There led his wife, and ſhewed me to her: but ſhe ſc and ran back, as women in England do at the ſig toad or a ſpider. However, when ſhe had a while ſe behaviour, and how well I obſerved the ſigns her h made, ſhe was ſoon reconciled, and by degrees gr tremely tender of me.

It was about twelve at noon, and a ſervant b in dinner. It was only one ſubſtantial diſh of me

: plain condition of an husbandman) in a diſh of a-
our and twenty feet diameter. The company
ıe farmer and his wife, three children and an old
nother: when they were ſat down, the farmer pla-
: at ſome diſtance from him on the table, which was
feet high from the floor. I was in a terrible fright,
pt as far as I could from the edge for fear of fall-
The wife minced a bit of meat, then crumbled
bread on a trencher, and placed it before me. I
ıer a low bow, took out my knife and fork, and
eat, which gave them exceeding delight. The
s ſent her maid for a ſmall dram-cup, which held
two gallons, and filled it with drink; I took up the
with much difficulty in both hands, and in a moſt
ful manner drank to her ladyſhip's health, expreſ-
ıe words as loud as I could in Engliſh, which made
mpany laugh ſo heartily, that I was almoſt deaf-
with the noiſe. This liquor taſted like a ſmall cyder,
as not unpleaſant. Then the maſter made me a ſign
ne to his trencher-ſide; but as I walked on the
being in great ſurprize all the time, as the indul-
reader will eaſily conceive and excuſe, I happened
nble againſt a cruſt, and fell flat on my face, but re-
no hurt. I got up immediately, and obſerving the
people to be in much concern, I took my hat (which
under my arm out of good manners) and, waving
r my head, made three huzzas, to ſhew I had got
chief by my fall. But advancing forwards toward
aſter (as I ſhall henceforth call him) his youngeſt
ho ſat next him, an arch boy of about ten years old,
ne up by the legs, and held me ſo high in the air,
trembled every limb; but his father ſnatched me
im, and at the ſame time gave him ſuch a box on the
r, as would have felled an European troop of horſe
earth, ordering him to be taken from the table.
ing afraid the boy might owe me a ſpight, and
emembering how miſchievous all children among
urally are to ſparrows, rabbits, young kittens, and
dogs, I fell on my knees, and pointing to the boy
my maſter to underſtand, as well as I could, that I
d his ſon might be pardoned. The father complied,
ıe lad took his ſeat again; whereupon I went to

him

him and kiſſed his hand, which my maſter took, and made him ſtroak me gently with it.

In the midſt of dinner, my miſtreſs's favourite cat leapt into her lap. I heard a noiſe behind me like that of a dozen ſtocking-weavers at work; and, turning my head, I found it proceeded from the purring of that animal, who ſeemed to be three times larger then an ox, as I computed by the view of her head, and one of her paws, while her miſtreſs was feeding and ſtroaking her. The fierceneſs of this creature's countenance altogether diſcompoſed me; though I ſtood at the further end of the table, above fifty feet off; and although my miſtreſs held her faſt, for fear ſhe might give a ſpring, and ſeize me in her talons. But it happened there was no danger; for the cat took not the leaſt notice of me, when my maſter placed me within three yards of her. And as I have been always told, and found true by experience in my travels, that flying or diſcovering fear before a fierce animal is a certain way to make it purſue or attack you, ſo I reſolved in this dangerous juncture to ſhew no manner of concern. I walked with intrepidity five or ſix times before the very head of the cat, and came within half a yard of her; whereupon ſhe drew herſelf back, as if ſhe were more afraid of me: I had leſs apprehenſion concerning the dogs, whereof three or four came into the room, as it is uſual in farmers houſes; one of which was a maſtiff equal in bulk to four elephants, and a greyhound ſomewhat taller than the maſtiff, but not ſo large.

When dinner was almoſt done, the nurſe came in with a child of a year old in her arms, who immediately ſpied me, and began a ſquall, that you might have heard from London-bridge to Chelſea, after the uſual oratory of infants to get me for a play-thing. The mother out of pure indulgence took me up, and put me towards the child, who preſently ſeized me by the middle, and got my head into his mouth, where I roared ſo loud that the urchin was frighted, and let me drop, and I ſhould infallibly have broke my neck, if the mother had not held her apron under me. The nurſe to quiet her babe made uſe of a rattle, which was a kind of hollow veſſel filled with great ſtones, and faſtened by a cable to the child's waiſt: but all in vain, ſo that ſhe was forced to apply

the laſt remedy by giving it ſuck. I muſt confeſs no object ever diſguſted me ſo much as the ſight of her monſtrous breaſt, which I cannot tell what to compare with, ſo as to give the curious reader an idea of its bulk, ſhape, and colour. It ſtood prominent ſix feet, and could not be leſs than ſixteen in circumference. The nipple was about half the bigneſs of my head, and the hue both of that and the dug ſo varified with ſpots, pimples, and freckles, that nothing could appear more nauſeous: for I had a near ſight of her, ſhe ſitting down, the more conveniently to give ſuck, and I ſtanding on the table. This made me reflect upon the fair ſkins of our Engliſh ladies, who appear ſo beautiful to us, only becauſe they are of our own ſize, and their defects not to be ſeen but through a magnifying-glaſs, where we find by experiment, that the ſmootheſt and whiteſt ſkins look rough and coarſe, and ill-coloured.

I remember, when I was at Lilliput, the complexions of thoſe diminutive people appeared to me the faireſt in the world; and talking upon this ſubject with a perſon of learning there, who was an intimate friend of mine, he ſaid that my face appeared much fairer and ſmoother when he looked on me from the ground, than it did upon a nearer view when I took him up in my hand and brought him cloſe, which he confeſſed was at firſt a very ſhocking ſight. He ſaid he could diſcover great holes in my ſkin; that the ſtumps of my beard were ten times ſtronger than the briſtles of a boar, and my complexion made up of ſeveral colours altogether diſagreeable: although I muſt beg leave to ſay for myſelf, that I am as fair as moſt of my ſex and country, and very little ſunburnt by all my travels. On the other ſide, diſcourſing of the ladies in that Emperor's court, he uſed to tell me, one had freckles, another too wide a mouth, a third too large a noſe, nothing of which I was able to diſtinguiſh. I confeſs, this reflexion was obvious enough; which however I could not forbear, leſt the reader might think thoſe vaſt creatures were actually deformed: for I muſt do them juſtice to ſay, they are a comely race of people; and particularly the features of my maſter's countenance; although he were but a farmer, when I beheld him from

the

the height of ſixty feet, appeared very well pro
tioned.

When dinner was done, my maſter went out to
labourers, and, as I could diſcover by his voice anc
ſture, gave his wife a ſtrict charge to take care of me
was very much tired, and diſpoſed to ſleep, which
miſtreſs perceiving, ſhe put me on her own bed, anc
vered me with a clean white handkerchief, but large
coarſer than the main-ſail of a man of war.

I ſlept about two hours, and dreamed I was at l
with my wife and children, which aggravated my
rows when I awaked, and found myſelf alone in a
room, between two and three hundred feet wide, a
bove two hundred high, lying in a bed twenty
wide. My miſtreſs was gone about her houſhold af
and had locked me in. The bed was eight yards
the floor. Some natural neceſſities required me t
down; I durſt not preſume to call, and, if I ha
would have been in vain with ſuch a voice as mine,
great a diſtance as from the room where I lay to
kitchen where the family kept. While I was under
circumſtances, two rats crept up the curtains, anc
ſmelling backwards and forwards on the bed. O
them came up almoſt to my face, whereupon I roſe
fright, and drew out my hanger to defend myſelf.
horrible animals had the boldneſs to attack me on
ſides, and one of them held his fore-feet at my co
but I had the good fortune to rip up his belly, befor
could do me any miſchief. He fell down at my feet
the other ſeeing the fate of his comrade made his el
but not without one good wound on the back, wh
gave him as he fled, and made the blood run tric
from him. After this exploit I walked gently to an
on the bed to recover my breath, and loſs of ſp
Theſe creatures were of the ſize of a large maſtiff
infinitely more nimble and fierce, ſo that, if I had
off my belt before I went to ſleep, I muſt have infa
been torn to pieces and devoured. I meaſured th
of the dead rat, and found it to be two yards long,
ing an inch; but it went againſt my ſtomach to dra
carcaſs off the bed, where it lay ſtill bleeding; I ol

ed it had yet ſome life, but, with a ſtrong ſlaſh croſs the neck, I thoroughly diſpatched it.

Soon after my miſtreſs came into the room, who ſeeing me all bloody, ran and took me up in her hand. I pointed to the dead rat, ſmiling and making other ſigns to ſhew I was not hurt, whereat ſhe was extremely rejoiced, calling the maid to take up the dead rat with a pair of tongs, and throw it out of the window. Then ſhe ſet me on a table, where I ſhewed her my hanger all bloody, and, wiping it on the lappet of my coat, returned it to the ſcabbard. I was preſſed to do more than one thing, which another could not do for me, and therefore endeavoured to make my miſtreſs underſtand that I deſired to be ſet down on the floor; which, after ſhe had done, my baſhfulneſs would not ſuffer me to expreſs myſelf farther, than by pointing to the door, and bowing ſeveral times. The good woman, with much difficulty, at laſt perceived what I would be at, and taking me up again in her hand, walked into the garden, where ſhe ſet me down. I went on one ſide about two hundred yards, and beckoning to her not to look or to follow me, I hid myſelf between two leaves of ſorrel, and there diſcharged the neceſſities of nature.

I hope the gentle reader will excuſe me for dwelling on theſe and the like particulars, which, however inſignificant they may appear to groveling vulgar minds, yet will certainly help a philoſopher to enlarge his thoughts and imagination, and apply them to the benefit of public as well as private life, which was my ſole deſign in preſenting this and other accounts of my travels to the world; wherein I have been chiefly ſtudious of truth, without affecting any ornaments of learning or of ſtyle. But the whole ſcene of this voyage made ſo ſtrong an impreſſion on my mind, and is ſo deeply fixed in my memory, that in committing it to paper I did not omit one material circumſtance: however, upon a ſtrict review, I blotted out ſeveral paſſages of leſs moment which were in my firſt copy, for fear of being cenſured as tedious and trifling, whereof travellers are often, perhaps not without juſtice, accuſed.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

A deſcription of the farmer's daughter. The author carried to a market-town, and then to the metropolis. The particulars of his journey.

MY miſtreſs had a daughter of nine years old, a child of towardly parts for her age, very dexterous at her needle, and skilful in dreſſing her baby. Her mother and ſhe contrived to fit up the baby's cradle for me againſt night: the cradle was put into a ſmall drawer of a cabinet, and the drawer placed upon a hanging ſhelf for fear of the rats. This was my bed all the time I ſtayed with thoſe people, though made more convenient by degrees, as I began to learn their language, and make my wants known. This young girl was ſo hardy, that, after I had once or twice pulled off my cloaths before her, ſhe was able to dreſs and undreſs me, though I never gave her that trouble, when ſhe would let me do either myſelf. She made me ſeven ſhirts, and ſome other linen, of as fine cloth as could be got, which indeed was coarſer than ſackcloth; and theſe ſhe conſtantly waſhed for me with her own hands. She was likewiſe my ſchool-miſtreſs to teach me the language: when I pointed to any thing, ſhe told me the name of it in her own tongue, ſo that in a few days I was able to call for whatever I had a mind to. She was very good-natured, and not above forty feet high, being little for her age. She gave me the name of Grildrig, which the family took up, and afterwards the whole kingdom. The word imports what the Latins call *nanunculus*, the Italians *homunceletino*, and the Engliſh *mannikin*. To her I chiefly owe my preſervation in that country: we never parted while I was there; I called her my Glumdalclitch, or little nurſe; and ſhould be guilty of great ingratitude, if I omitted this honourable mention of her care and affection towards me, which I heartily wiſh it lay in my power to requite as ſhe deſerves, inſtead of being the innocent, but unhappy inſtrument of her diſgrace, as I have too much reaſon to fear.

It now began to be known and talked of in the neighbourhood, that my maſter had found a ſtrange animal in the field, about the bigneſs of a *ſplacnuck*, but exactly ſhaped in every part like a human creature; which it likewiſe imitated in all its actions; ſeemed to ſpeak in a little language of its own, had already learned ſeveral words of theirs, went erect upon two legs, was tame and gentle, would come when it was called, do whatever it was bid, had the fineſt limbs in the world, and a complexion fairer than a nobleman's daughter of three years old. Another farmer, who lived hard by, and was a particular friend of my maſter, came on a viſit on purpoſe to enquire into the truth of this ſtory. I was immediately produced, and placed upon a table, where I walked as I was commanded, drew my hanger, put it up again, made my reverence to my maſter's gueſt, asked him in his own language how he did, and told him he was welcome, juſt as my little nurſe had inſtructed me. This man, who was old and dim-ſighted, put on his ſpectacles to behold me better, at which I could not forbear laughing very heartily, for his eyes appeared like the full moon ſhining into a chamber at two windows. Our people, who diſcovered the cauſe of my mirth, bore me company in laughing, at which the old fellow was fool enough to be angry and out of countenance. He had the character of a great miſer, and, to my misfortune, he well deſerved it, by the curſed advice he gave my maſter, to ſhew me as a ſight upon a market-day in the next town, which was half an hour's riding, about two and twenty miles from our houſe. I gueſſed there was ſome miſchief contriving, when I obſerved my maſter and his friend whiſpering long together, ſometimes pointing at me; and my fears made me fancy, that I overheard and underſtood ſome of their words. But the next morning Glumdalclitch, my little nurſe, told me the whole matter, which ſhe had cunningly picked out from her mother. The poor girl laid me on her boſom, and fell a weeping with ſhame and grief. She apprehended ſome miſchief would happen to me from rude vulgar folks, who might ſqueeze me to death, or break one of my limbs by taking me in their hands. She had alſo obſerved how modeſt I was in my nature, how nicely I regarded my honour, and what an

indignity I ſhould conceive it to be expoſed as a public ſpectacle to the meaneſt of the pe ſaid, her *papa* and *mama* had promiſed th ſhould be hers, but now ſhe found they mea her as they did laſt year, when they pretenc her a lamb, and yet, as ſoon as it was fat, ſold cher. For my own part, I may truly affirm, leſs concerned than my nurſe. I had a ſtrong h never left me, that I ſhould one day recover i and as to the ignominy of being carried a monſter, I conſidered myſelf to be a perfect the country, and that ſuch a misfortune coul charged upon me as a reproach, if ever I ſhoul England; ſince the King of Great Britain him condition, muſt have undergone the ſame diſtr

My maſter, purſuant to the advice of his f ried me in a box the next market-day, to the ing town, and took along with him his littl my nurſe, upon a pillion behind him. The bo on every ſide, with a little door for me to go and a few gimlet-holes to let in air. The gir ſo careful as to put the quilt of her baby's l for me to lie down on. However, I was terr and diſcompoſed in this journey, though it v half an hour. For the horſe went about ſo every ſtep, and trotted ſo high, that the ag equal to the riſing and falling of a ſhip in a g but much more frequent: our journey was for ther than from London to St. Alban's. My m ed at an inn which he uſed to frequent; and ſulting a while with the inn-keeper, and makin ceſſary preparations, he hired the *grultrud*, c give notice through the town, of a ſtrange cre ſeen at the ſign of the Green Eagle, not ſo big *nuck* (an animal in that country very finely ſha ſix feet long) and in every part of the body ref human creature, could ſpeak ſeveral words, a an hundred diverting tricks.

I was placed upon a table in the largeſt ro inn, which might be near three hundred feet ſq little nurſe ſtood on a low ſtool cloſe to the tab care of me, and direct what I ſhould do. My

avoid a croud, would ſuffer only thirty people at a time to ſee me. I walked about on the table as the girl commanded: ſhe asked me queſtions, as far as ſhe knew my underſtanding of the language reached, and I anſwered them as loud as I could. I turned about ſeveral times to the company, paid my humble reſpects, ſaid they were welcome, and uſed ſome other ſpeeches I had been taught. I took up a thimble filled with liquor, which Glumdalclitch had given me for a cup, and drank their health. I drew out my hanger, and flouriſhed with it after the manner of fencers in England. My nurſe gave me part of a ſtraw, which I exerciſed as a pike, having learned the art in my youth. I was that day ſhewn to twelve ſets of company, and as often forced to act over again the ſame ſopperies, till I was half dead with wearineſs and vexation. For thoſe who had ſeen me made ſuch wonderful reports, that the people were ready to break down the doors to come in. My maſter, for his own intereſt, would not ſuffer any one to touch me, except my nurſe; and to prevent danger, benches were ſet round the table at ſuch a diſtance, as to put me out of every body's reach. However, an unlucky ſchool-boy aimed a hazel-nut directly at my head, which very narrowly miſſed me; otherwiſe, it came with ſo much violence, that it would have infallibly knocked out my brains, for it was almoſt as large as a ſmall pompion: but I had the ſatisfaction to ſee the young rogue well beaten, and turned out of the room.

My maſter gave public notice, that he would ſhew me again the next market-day, and in the mean time he prepared a more convenient vehicle for me, which he had reaſon enough to do; for I was ſo tired with my firſt journey, and with entertaining company for eight hours together, that I could hardly ſtand upon my legs, or ſpeak a word. It was at leaſt three days before I recovered my ſtrength; and that I might have no reſt at home, all the neighbouring gentlemen, from an hundred miles round, hearing of my fame, came to ſee me at my maſter's own houſe. There could not be fewer than thirty perſons with their wives and children (for the country is very populous;) and my maſter demanded the rate of a full room, whenever he ſhewed me at home, although

held out her little finger towards me (after I w
table) which I embraced in both my arms, a
tip of it with the utmoſt reſpect to my lip. Sh
ſome general queſtions about my country, and
which I anſwered as diſtinctly, and in as few
could. She asked, whether I would be conten
court. I bowed down to the board of the
humbly anſwered, that I was my maſter's ſlav
were at my own diſpoſal, I ſhould be proud to
liſe to her Majeſty's ſervice. She then asked
whether he were willing to ſell me at a good p
who apprehended I could not live a month,
enough to part with me, and demanded a thou
of gold, which were ordered him on the ſpot,
being about the bigneſs of eight hundred moyd
allowing for the proportion of all things be
country and Europe, and the high price of g
them, was hardly ſo great a ſum as a thouſa
would be in England. I then ſaid to the Que
was now her Majeſty's moſt humble creature
I muſt beg the favour, that Glumdalclitch, w
ways tended me with ſo much care and kindne
derſtood to do it ſo well, might be admitted in
vice, and continue to be my nurſe and inſtru
Majeſty agreed to my petition, and eaſily got t
conſent, who was glad enough to have his da
ferred at court, and the poor girl herſelf was
hide her joy: my late maſter withdrew, biddi
well, and ſaying he had left me in a good
which I replied not a word, only making h
bow.

The Queen obſerved my coldneſs, and,
farmer was gone out of the apartment, ask
reaſon. I made bold to tell her Majeſty, that
other obligation to my late maſter, than his
out the brains of a poor harmleſs creature
chance in his field; which obligation was amp
penſed by the gain he had made in ſhewing m
half the kingdom, and the price he had now ſe
That the life I had ſince led, was laborious
kill an animal of ten times my ſtrength. That
was much impaired by the continual drudgery

rabble every hour of the day, and that, if my not thought my life in danger, her Majeſty ave got ſo cheap a bargain. But as I was out f being ill treated under the protection of ſo ood an Empreſs, the ornament of nature, the the world, the delight of her ſubjects, the the creation; ſo, I hoped my late maſter's ns would appear to be groundleſs, for I al- l my ſpirits to revive by the influence of her preſence.

s the ſum of my ſpeech, delivered with great es and heſitation; the latter part was altoge- l in the ſtyle peculiar to that people, whereof ſome phraſes from Glumdalclitch, while ſhe g me to court.

een, giving great allowance for my defective- king, was however ſurpriſed at ſo much wit enſe in ſo diminutive an animal. She took me hand, and carried me to the King, who was l to his cabinet. His Majeſty, a prince of much l auſtere countenance, not well obſerving my ſt view, asked the Queen after a cold manner, t was ſince ſhe grew fond of a *ſplacnuck*; for ns he took me to be, as I lay upon my breaſt eſty's right hand. But this princeſs, who hath deal of wit and humour, ſet me gently on my he ſcrutore, and commanded me to give his account of myſelf, which I did in a very few id Glumdalclitch, who attended at the cabinet could not endure I ſhould be out of her ſight, itted, confirmed all that had paſſed from my ier father's houſe.

ig, although he be as learned a perſon as any inions, had been educated in the ſtudy of phi- nd particularly mathematics; yet when he ob- ſhape exactly, and ſaw me walk erect, before ſpeak, conceived I might be a piece of clock- ich is in that country arrived to a very great contrived by ſome ingenious artiſt. But when ıy voice, and found what I delivered to be re- tational, he could not conceal his aſtoniſhment. no means ſatisfied with the relation I gave

him

him of the manner I came into his kingdom, but the it a ſtory concerted between Glumdalclitch and he ther, who had taught me a ſett of words to make m at a better price. Upon this imagination he put ſe other queſtions to me, and ſtill received rational anſ no otherwiſe defective than by a foreign accent, an imperfect knowledge in the language, with ſome i phraſes, which I had learned at the farmer's houſe, did not ſuit the polite ſtyle of a court.

His Majeſty ſent for three great ſcholars, who were in their weekly waiting according to the cuſtom in country. Theſe gentlemen, after they had a while amined my ſhape with much nicety, were of differe opinions concerning me. They all agreed, that I coul be produced according to the regular laws of nature, cauſe I was not framed with a capacity of preſerving life either by ſwiftneſs, or climbing of trees, or dig holes in the earth. They obſerved by my teeth, w they viewed with great exactneſs, that I was a carni ous animal; yet moſt quadrupeds being an overmatc me, and field-mice with ſome others too nimble, could not imagine how I ſhould be able to ſupport ſelf, unleſs I fed upon ſnails and other inſects, w they offered, by many learned arguments, to evince I could not poſſibly do*. one of theſe virtuoſi ſeeme think that I might be an embryo, or abortive birth. this opinion was rejected by the other two, who obſe my limbs to be perfect and finiſhed, and that I had ſeveral years, as it was manifeſt from my beard, ſtumps whereof they plainly diſcovered through a m nifying-glaſs. They would not allow me to be a d becauſe my littleneſs was beyond all degrees of co riſon; for the Queen's favourite dwarf, the ſmalleſt known in that kingdom, was near thirty feet high. much debate they concluded unanimouſly, that I was

* By this reaſoning the author probably intended to ri the pride of thoſe philoſophers, who have thought fit to ar the wiſdom of Providence in the creation and governme the world; whoſe cavils are ſpecious, like thoſe of the J dignagian ſages, only in proportion to the ignorance of to whom they are propoſed. *Hawkeſ.*

ſtalcath, which is interpreted literally *luſus* i determination exactly agreeable to the mo- ſophy of Europe, whoſe profeſſors, diſdaining aſion of *occult cauſes*, whereby the followers : endeavoured in vain to diſguiſe their igno- e invented this wonderful ſolution of all diffi- the unſpeakable advancement of human know-

is deciſive concluſion I entreated to be heard wo. I applied myſelf to the King, and aſſured / that I came from a country, which abounded il millions of both ſexes and of my own ſtature; animals, trees, and houſes were all in propor- where by conſequence I might be as able to de- ; and to find ſuſtenance, as any of his Majeſty's uld do here; which I took for a full anſwer to emens arguments. To this they only replied : of contempt, ſaying, that the farmer had in- : very well in my leſſon*. The King, who had ter underſtanding, diſmiſſing his learned men, : farmer, who by good fortune was not yet f town; having therefore firſt examined him ınd then confronted him with me and the young ajeſty began to think that what we told him bly be true. He deſired the Queen to order cular care ſhould be taken of me, and was of ıat Glumdalclitch ſhould ſtill continue in her nding me, becauſe he obſerved we had a great or each other. A convenient apartment was ır her at court; ſhe had a ſort of governeſs o take care of her education, a maid to dreſs vo other ſervants for menial offices; but the : was wholly appropriated to herſelf. The manded her own cabinet-maker to contrive a might ſerve me for a bed-chamber, after the Glumdalclitch and I ſhould agree upon. This moſt ingenious artiſt, and according to my di-

tire is levelled againſt all, who reject thoſe facts hey cannot perfectly account, notwithſtanding the f rejecting the teſtimony by which they are ſup- *wake*.

rections

rections in three weeks finiſhed for me a wooden chamber of ſixteen feet ſquare, and twelve high, with ſaſh-windows, a door, and two cloſets, like a London bed-chamber. The board, that made the cieling, was to be lifted up and down by two hinges to put in a bed ready furniſhed by her Majeſty's upholſterer, which Glumdalclitch took out every day to air, made it with her own hands, and letting it down at night, locked up the roof over me. A nice workman, who was famous for little curioſities, undertook to make me two chairs, with backs and frames, of a ſubſtance not unlike ivory, and two tables, with a cabinet to put my things in. The room was quilted on all ſides, as well as the floor and the cieling, to prevent any accident from the careleſneſs of thoſe who carried me, and to break the force of a jolt when I went in a coach. I deſired a lock for my door to prevent rats and mice from coming in: the ſmith, after ſeveral attempts, made the ſmalleſt that ever was ſeen among them, for I have known a larger at the gate of a gentleman's houſe in England. I made a ſhift to keep the key in a pocket of my own, fearing Glumdalclitch might loſe it. The Queen likewiſe ordered the thinneſt ſilks that could be gotten to make me cloaths, not much thicker than an Engliſh blanket, very cumberſome, till I was accuſtomed to them. They were after the faſhion of the kingdom, partly reſembling the Perſian, and partly the Chineſe, and are a very graceful and decent habit.

The Queen became ſo fond of my company, that she could not dine without me. I had a table placed upon the ſame at which her Majeſty eat, juſt at her left elbow, and a chair to ſit on. Glumdalclitch ſtood on a ſtool on the floor near my table to aſſiſt and take care of me. I had an entire ſet of ſilver diſhes and plates and other neceſſaries, which in proportion to thoſe of the Queen, were not much bigger than what I have ſeen in a London toy-ſhop, for the furniture of a baby-houſe: theſe my little nurſe kept in her pocket in a ſilver box, and gave me at meals as I wanted them, always cleaning them herſelf. No perſon dined with the Queen but the two Princeſſes royal, the elder ſixteen years old, and the younger at that time thirteen and a month. Her Majeſty uſed to put a bit of meat upon one of my diſhes, out of which I carved for myſelf;

d her diverſion was to ſee me eat in miniature.
ieen (who had indeed but a weak ſtomach)
: one mouthful, as much as a dozen Engliſh
ild eat at a meal, which to me was for ſome
nauſeous ſight *. She would craunch the wing
ones and all, between her teeth, although it
times as large as that of a full grown turkey;
it of bread in her mouth, as big as two twelve-
es. She drank out of a golden cup, above a
t a draught. Her knives were twice as long as
et ſtrait upon the handle. The ſpoons, forks,
nſtruments, were all in the ſame proportion.
r, when Glumdalclitch carried me out of cu-
ee ſome of the tables at court, where ten or a
ieſe enormous knives and forks were lifted up
thought I had never till then beheld ſo ter-
t.

cuſtom, that every Wedneſday (which, as I
e obſerved, is their Sabbath) the King and
th the royal iſſue of both ſexes, dine together
tment of his Majeſty, to whom I was now be-
at favourite; and at theſe times my little chair
were placed at his left hand before one of the
. This Prince took a pleaſure in converſing
nquiring into the manners, religion, laws, go-
and learning of Europe; wherein I gave him
count I was able. His apprehenſion was ſo clear,
gment ſo exact, that he made very wiſe reflec-

* other dreadful and diſguſting images which cuſtom had rendered familiar, are thoſe which ariſe from eating animal food. He who has ever turned with abhorrence from a piece of a beaſt which has been picked whole by birds, muſt confeſs, that habit only could have enabled him to endure the ſight of the mangled bones and fleſh of a carcaſe which every day cover his table: and he who reflects on the number of lives that have been ſacrificed to ſuſtain his own, would enquire by what the account has been balanced, and whether his life is become proportionably of more value, than the life of virtue and piety, by the ſuperior happineſs which has communicated to reaſonable beings, and by the aſſiſtance which his intellect has aſcribed to God. *Hawkeſ.*

Thou

ctions and observations upon all I ſaid. But I con
after I had been a little too copious in talking of
beloved country, of our trade, and wars by ſea a
of our ſchiſms in religion, and parties in the ſt
prejudices of his education prevailed ſo far, that
not forbear taking me up in his right hand, and ſ
me gently with the other, after an hearty fit of l
asked me, whether I was a Whig or Tory? The
ing to his firſt miniſter, who waited behind hin
white ſtaff, near as tall as the main-maſt of th
ſovereign, he obſerved how contemptible a th
human grandeur, which could be mimicked by
minutive inſects as I: and yet, ſays he, I dare
theſe creatures have their titles and diſtinctions of
they contrive little neſts and burrows, that t
houſes and cities; they make a figure in dreſs a
page; they love, they fight, they diſpute, the
they betray. And thus he continued on, while
lour came and went ſeveral times with indignatio
our noble country, the miſtreſs of arts and a
ſcourge of France, the arbitreſs of Europe, the
virtue, piety, honour and truth, the pride and
the world, ſo contemptuouſly treated.

But as I was not in a condition to reſent inj
upon mature thoughts I began to doubt wheth
injured or no. For, after having been accuſtome
months to the ſight and converſe of this people,
ſerved every object upon which I caſt mine eyes t
proportionable magnitude, the horror I had at f
ceived from their bulk and aſpect, was ſo far v
that if I had then beheld a company of Engliſh l
ladies in their finery, and birth-day cloaths, acti
ſeveral parts in the moſt courtly manner of ſtrutti
bowing, and prating; to ſay the truth, I ſhould h
ſtrongly tempted to laugh as much at them, as t
and his grandees did at me. Neither indeed cou
bear ſmiling at myſelf, when the Queen uſed to
upon her hand towards a looking-glaſs, by whi
our perſons appeared before me in full view tc
and there could nothing be more ridiculous than
pariſon: ſo that I really began to imagine myſel
dled many degrees below my uſual ſize.

Nothing angered and mortified me ſo much, as the Queen's dwarf, who being of the loweſt ſtature that was ever in that country (for I verily think he was not full thirty feet high) became ſo inſolent at ſeeing a creature ſo much beneath him, that he would always affect to ſwagger, and look big as he paſſed by me in the Queen's anti-chamber, while I was ſtanding on ſome table talking with the lords or ladies of the court, and he ſeldom failed of a ſmart word or two upon my littleneſs; againſt which I could only revenge myſelf by calling him brother, challenging him to wreſtle, and ſuch repartees as are uſual in the mouths of *court pages*. One day, at dinner, this malicious little cubb was ſo nettled with ſomething I had ſaid to him, that, raiſing himſelf upon the frame of her Majeſty's chair, he took me up by the middle, as I was ſitting down, not thinking any harm, and let me drop into a large ſilver bowl of cream, and then ran away as faſt as he could. I fell over head and ears, and, if I had not been a good ſwimmer, it might have gone very hard with me; for Glumdalclitch, in that inſtant, happened to be at the other end of the room, and the Queen was in ſuch a fright, that ſhe wanted preſence of mind to aſſiſt me. But my little nurſe ran to my relief, and took me out, after I had ſwallowed above a quart of cream. I was put to bed; however, I received no other damage than the loſs of a ſuit of clothes, which was utterly ſpoiled. The dwarf was ſoundly whipped, and as a farther puniſhment, forced to drink up the bowl of cream, into which he had thrown me; neither was he ever reſtored to favour: for ſoon after the Queen beſtowed him on a lady of high quality, ſo that I ſaw him no more, to my very great ſatisfaction; for I could not tell to what extremity ſuch a malicious urchin might have carried his reſentment.

He had before ſerved me a ſcurvy trick, which ſet the Queen a-laughing, although at the ſame time ſhe was heartily vexed, and would have immediately caſhiered him, if I had not been ſo generous as to intercede. Her Majeſty had taken a marrow-bone upon her plate, and, after knocking out the marrow, placed the bone again in the diſh erect, as it ſtood before; the dwarf watching his opportunity, while Glumdalclitch was gone to the

ſide-board, mounted the ſtool that ſhe ſtood on to take care of me at meals, took me up in both hands, and ſqueeſing my legs together, wedged them into the marrow-bone above my waiſt, where I ſtuck for ſome time, and made a very ridiculous figure. I believe it was near a minute before any one knew what was become of me; for I thought it below me to cry out. But, as princes ſeldom get their meat hot, my legs were not ſcalded, only my ſtockings and breeches in a ſad condition. The dwarf, at my entreaty, had no other puniſhment than a ſound whipping.

I was frequently rallied by the Queen upon account of my fearfulneſs; and ſhe uſed to ask me, whether the people of my country were as great cowards as myſelf? The occaſion was this: the kingdom is much peſtered with flies in ſummer, and theſe odious inſects, each of them as big as a Dunſtable lark, hardly gave me any reſt while I ſat at dinner with their continual humming and buzzing about mine ears. They would ſometimes alight upon my victuals, and leave their loathſome excrement or ſpawn behind, which to me was very viſible, though not to the natives of that country, whoſe large optics were not ſo acute as mine, in viewing ſmaller objects. Sometimes they would fix upon my noſe or fore-head, where they ſtung me to the quick, ſmelling very offenſively; and I could eaſily trace that viſcous matter, which, our naturaliſts tell us, enables thoſe creatures to walk with their feet upwards upon a cieling. I had much ado to defend myſelf againſt theſe deteſtable animals, and could not forbear ſtarting when they came on my face. It was the common practice of the dwarf to catch a number of theſe inſects in his hand, as ſchool-boys do among us, and let them out ſuddenly under my noſe, on purpoſe to frighten me, and divert the Queen. My remedy was to cut them in pieces with my knife, as they flew in the air, wherein my dexterity was much admired.

I remember, one morning, when Glumdalclitch had ſet me in my box upon a window, as ſhe uſually did in fair days, to give me air (for I durſt not venture to let the box be hung on a nail out of the window, as we do with cages in England) after I had lifted up one of my ſaſhes, and ſat down at my table to eat a piece of ſweet cake for

for my breakfaſt, above twenty waſps, allured by the ſmell, came flying into the room, humming louder than the drones of as many bag-pipes. Some of them ſeized my cake, and carried it piece-meal away; others flew about my head and face, confounding me with the noiſe, and putting me in the utmoſt terror of their ſtings. However, I had the courage to riſe and draw my hanger, and attack them in the air. I diſpatched four of them, but the reſt got away, and I preſently ſhut my window. Theſe inſects were as large as partridges; I took out their ſtings, found them an inch and a half long, and as ſharp as needles. I carefully preſerved them all, and having ſince ſhewn them with ſome other curioſities in ſeveral parts of Europe, upon my return to England, I gave three of them to Greſham College, and kept the fourth for myſelf.

CHAP. IV.

The country deſcribed. A propoſal for correcting modern maps. The King's palace, and ſome account of the metropolis. The author's way of travelling. The chief temple deſcribed.

I Now intend to give the reader a ſhort deſcription of this country, as far as I travelled in it, which was not above two thouſand miles round Lorbrulgrud, the metropolis. For the Queen, whom I always attended, never went farther when ſhe accompanied the King in his progreſſes, and there ſtaid till his Majeſty returned from viewing his frontiers. The whole extent of this Prince's dominions reacheth about ſix thouſand miles in length, and from three to five in breadth. From whence I cannot but conclude, that our geographers of Europe are in a great error, by ſuppoſing nothing but ſea between Japan and California; for it was ever my opinion, that there muſt be a balance of earth to counterpoiſe the great continent of Tartary; and therefore they ought to correct their maps and charts, by joining this vaſt tract of land to the north-weſt parts of America, wherein I ſhall be ready to lend them my aſſiſtance.

The kingdom is a peninſula, terminated to th eaſt by a ridge of mountains, thirty miles hig are altogether impaſſable, by reaſon of the volc on the tops: neither do the moſt learned know of mortals inhabit beyond thoſe mountains, or they be inhabited at all. On the three other f bounded by the ocean. There is not one ſea-p whole kingdom, and thoſe parts of the coaſts in the rivers iſſue, are ſo full of pointed rocks, ar generally ſo rough, that there is no venturing ſmalleſt of their boats; ſo that theſe people ar excluded from any commerce with the reſt of t But the large rivers are full of veſſels, and abo excellent fiſh, for they ſeldom get any from th cauſe the ſea-fiſh are of the ſame ſize with thoſe i and conſequently not worth catching; whereby i feſt, that nature, in the production of plants an of ſo extraordinary a bulk, is wholly confined to tinent, of which I leave the reaſons to be d by philoſophers. However, now and then th whale, that happens to be daſhed againſt the roc the common people feed on heartily. Theſe have known ſo large, that a man could hardly upon his ſhoulders; and ſometimes for curioſit brought in hampers to Lorbrulgrud: I ſaw on in a diſh at the King's table, which paſſed ſo but I did not obſerve he was fond of it; for I th the bigneſs diſguſted him, although I have ſeen what larger in Greenland.

The country is well inhabited, for it contain cities, near an hundred walled towns, and a gre of villages. To ſatisfy my curious reader, it n ficient to deſcribe Lorbrulgrud. This city ſt almoſt two equal parts on each ſide the river t through. It contains above eighty thouſand h about ſix hundred thouſand inhabitants. It is three *glomglungs*, (which make about fifty-fou miles) and two and a half in breadth, as I n myſelf in the royal map made by the King's ord was laid on the ground on purpoſe for me, anc an hundred feet; I paced the diameter and circ

ſeveral times bare foot, and, computing by the ſcale, meaſured it pretty exactly.

The King's palace is no regular edifice, but an heap of building about ſeven miles round: the chief rooms are generally two hundred and forty feet high, and broad and long in proportion. A coach was allowed to Glumdalclitch and me, wherein her governeſs frequently took her out to ſee the town, or go among the ſhops; and I was always of the party, carried in my box; although the girl, at my own deſire, would often take me out, and hold me in her hand, that I might more conveniently view the houſes and the people, as we paſſed along the ſtreets. I reckoned our coach to be about the ſquare of Weſtminſter-hall, but not altogether ſo high: however, I cannot be very exact. One day the governeſs ordered our coachman to ſtop at ſeveral ſhops, where the beggars, watching their opportunity, crowded to the ſides of the coach, and gave me the moſt horrible ſpectacles that ever an European eye beheld. There was a woman with a cancer in her breaſt, ſwelled to a monſtrous ſize, full of holes, in two or three of which I could have eaſily crept, and covered my whole body. There was a fellow with a wen in his neck larger than five wooll-packs, and another with a couple of wooden legs, each about twenty feet high. But the moſt hateful ſight of all was the lice crawling on their cloaths. I could ſee diſtinctly the limbs of theſe vermin with my naked eye, much better than thoſe of an European louſe through a microſcope, and their ſnouts with which they rooted like ſwine. They were the firſt I had ever beheld, and I ſhould have been curious enough to diſſect one of them, if I had had proper inſtruments (which I unluckily left behind me in the ſhip) although indeed the ſight was ſo nauſeous, that it perfectly turned my ſtomach.

Beſide the large box in which I was uſually carried, the Queen ordered a ſmaller one to be made for me of about twelve feet ſquare, and ten high, for the convenience of travelling, becauſe the other was ſomewhat too large for Glumdalclitch's lap, and cumberſome in the coach: it was made by the ſame artiſt, whom I directed in the whole contrivance. This travelling-cloſet was an exact ſquare with a window in the middle of three of the ſquares,

and each window was latticed with iron wire
ſide, to prevent accidents in long journeys. O
ſide, which had no window, two ſtrong ſtapl
ed, through which the perſon that carried
had a mind to be on horſeback, put a leathe
buckled it about his waiſt. This was always
ſome grave truſty ſervant in whom I could co
ther I attended the King and Queen in their pr
were diſpoſed to ſee the gardens, or pay a v
great lady or miniſter of ſtate in the court, v
dalclitch happened to be out of order: for I
to be known and eſteemed among the greateſt
ſuppoſe more upon account of their Majeſties
any merit of my own. In journeys, when I w
the coach, a ſervant on horſeback would bu
box, and place it upon a cuſhion before him;
had a full proſpect of the country on three ſid
three windows. I had in this cloſet a field-
hammock hung from the cieling, two chairs
neatly ſcrewed to the floor, to prevent being
by the agitation of the horſe or the coach.
been long uſed to ſea voyages, thoſe motion
ſometimes very violent, did not much diſcom

Whenever I had a mind to ſee the town,
ways in my travelling-cloſet, which Glumda
in her lap in a kind of open ſedan, after the
the country, borne by four men, and attende
thers in the Queen's livery. The people, wh
heard of me were very curious to crowd abou
and the girl was complaiſant enough to make
ſtop, and to take me in her hand, that I mig
conveniently ſeen.

I was very deſirous to ſee the chief templ
ticularly the tower belonging to it, which is re
higheſt in the kingdom. Accordingly one da
carried me thither, but I may truly ſay I cam
appointed; for the height is not above thre
feet, reckoning from the ground to the high
top; which, allowing for the difference b
ſize of thoſe people and us in Europe, is no g
for admiration, nor at all equal in proportion
ly remember) to Salisbury ſteeple. But, not

from a nation to which during my life I ſhall acknowledge myſelf extremely obliged, it muſt be allowed that whatever this famous tower wants in height is amply made up in beauty and ſtrength. For the walls are near an hundred feet thick, built of hewn ſtone, whereof each is about forty feet ſquare, and adorned on all ſides with ſtatues of Gods and Emperors, cut in marble larger than the life, placed in their ſeveral niches. I meaſured a little finger which had fallen down from one of theſe ſtatues, and lay unperceived among ſome rubbiſh, and found it exactly four feet and an inch in length. Glumdalclitch wrapped it up in her handkerchief; and carried it home in her pocket to keep among other trinkets, of which the girl was very fond, as children at her age uſually are.

The King's kitchen is indeed a noble building, vaulted at top, and about ſix hundred feet high. The great oven is not ſo wide by ten paces as the cupola at St. Paul's: for I meaſured the latter on purpoſe after my return. But if I ſhould deſcribe the kitchen-grate, the prodigious pots and kettles, the joints of meat turning on the ſpits, with many other particulars, perhaps I ſhould be hardly believed; at leaſt a ſevere critic would be apt to think I enlarged a little, as travellers are often ſuſpected to do. To avoid which cenſure, I fear I have run too much into the other extream; and that if this treatiſe ſhould happen to be tranſlated into the language of Brobdingnag, (which is the general name of that kingdom) and tranſmitted thither, the King and his people would have reaſon to complain, that I had done them an injury by a falſe and diminutive repreſentation.

His Majeſty ſeldom keeps above ſix hundred horſes in his ſtables: they are generally from fifty-four to ſixty feet high. But, when he goes abroad on ſolemn days, he is attended for ſtate by a militia guard of five hundred horſe, which indeed I thought was the moſt ſplendid ſight that could be ever beheld, till I ſaw part of his army in battalia, whereof I ſhall find another occaſion to ſpeak.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

Several adventures that happened to the author. The ecution of a criminal. The author ſhews his ski navigation.

I Should have lived happy enough in that country my littleneſs had not expoſed me to ſeveral ridicul and troubleſome accidents: ſome of which I ſhall ture to relate. Glumdalclitch often carried me into gardens of the court in my ſmaller box, and would ſo times take me out of it, and hold me in her hand, o me down to walk. I remember, before the dwarf the Queen, he followed us one day into thoſe gard and my nurſe having ſet me down, he and I being together, near ſome dwarf apple-trees, I muſt need my wit by a ſilly alluſion between him and the trees, happens to hold in their language, as it doth in Whereupon, the malicious rogue watching his opp pity, when I was walking under one of them, ſho directly over my head, by which a dozen apples, ea them near as large as a Briſtol barrel came tumbli bout my ears; one of them hit me on the back as I ced to ſtoop, and knocked me down flat on my face I received no other hurt, and the dwarf was pardon my deſire, becauſe I had given the provocation.

Another day Glumdalclitch left me on a ſmooth plot to divert myſelf, while ſhe walked at ſome di with her governeſs. In the mean time there ſudden ſuch a violent ſhower of hail, that I was immediate the force of it ſtruck to the ground: and when down, the hail-ſtones gave me ſuch cruel bangs all the body, as if I had been pelted with tennis-balls; ever, I made a ſhift to creep on all four, and ſhelte ſelf by lying flat on my face on the lee-ſide of a l of lemon-thyme, but ſo bruiſed from head to foot I could not go abroad in ten days. Neither is this to be wondered at, becauſe nature in that couna ſerving the ſame proportion through all her operi a hail-ſtone is near eighteen hundred times as la

:r acquaintance. While ſhe was abſent, and
:ing, a ſmall white ſpaniel belonging to one of
ardeners, having got by accident into the gar-
:ned to range near the place where I lay: the
wing the ſcent, came directly up, and taking me
th ran ſtrait to his maſter, wagging his tail, and
:ly on the ground. By good fortune he had
ll taught, that I was carried between his teeth
: leaſt hurt, or even tearing my cloaths. But
ardener who knew me well, and had a great
r me, was in a terrible fright: he gently took
oth his hands, and aſked me how I did; but I
:zed and out of breath, that I could not ſpeak
a few minutes I came to myſelf, and he car-
e to my little nurſe, who by this time had re-
he place where ſhe left me, and was in cruel
ien I did not appear, nor anſwer when ſhe
: ſeverely reprimanded the gardener on account
. But the thing was huſhed up, and never
:ourt; for the girl was afraid of the Queen's
truly, as to myſelf, I thought it would not
reputation that ſuch a ſtory ſhould go about.
:ident abſolutely determined Glumdalclitch ne-
t me abroad for the future out of her ſight. I
ong afraid of this reſolution, and therefore con-

cloaths. I likewiſe broke my right ſhin againſt the ſhell of a ſnail, which I happened to ſtumble over, as I was walking alone, and thinking on poor England.

I cannot tell, whether I were more pleaſed or mortified to obſerve in thoſe ſolitary walks, that the ſmaller birds did not appear to be at all afraid of me, but would hop about within a yard's diſtance, looking for worms and other food, with as much indifference and ſecurity, as if no creature at all were near them. I remember, a thruſh had the confidence to ſnatch out of my hand, with his bill, a piece of cake that Glumdalclith had juſt given me for my breakfaſt. When I attempted to catch any of theſe birds, they would boldly turn againſt me, endeavouring to pick my fingers, which I durſt not venture within their reach; and then they would hop back unconcerned to hunt for worms or ſnails, as they did before. But one day I took a thick cudgel, and threw it with all my ſtrength ſo luckily at a linnet, that I knocked him down, and ſeizing him by the neck with both my hands, ran with him in triumph to my nurſe. However the bird, who had only been ſtunned, recovering himſelf, gave me ſo many boxes with his wings on both ſides of my head and body, though I held him at arms length, and was out of the reach of his claws, that I was twenty times thinking to let him go. But I was ſoon relieved by one of our ſervants, who wrung off the bird's neck, and I had him next day for dinner by the Queen's command. This linnet, as near as I can remember, ſeemed to be ſomewhat larger than an England ſwan.

The maids of honour often invited Glumdalclitch to their apartments, and deſired ſhe would bring me along with her, on purpoſe to have the pleaſure of ſeeing and touching me. They would often ſtrip me naked from top to toe, and lay me at full length in their boſoms, wherewith I was much diſguſted; becauſe, to ſay the truth, a very offenſive ſmell came from their skins; which I do not mention, or intend, to the diſadvantage of thoſe excellent ladies, for whom I have all manner of reſpect; but I conceive that my ſenſe was more acute, in proportion to my littleneſs, and that thoſe illuſtrious perſons were no more diſagreeable to their lovers, or to each other, than people of the ſame quality are with us in England. And,

I found their natural ſmell was much more
ıan when they uſed perfumes, under which
/ ſwooned away. I cannot forget that an
d of mine in Lilliput took the freedom in
when I had uſed a good deal of exerciſe, to
a ſtrong ſmell about me, although I am as
ıat way, as moſt of my ſex: but I ſuppoſe
ſmelling was as nice with regard to me, as
hat of this people. Upon this point I cannot
g juſtice to the Queen my miſtreſs, and
ı my nurſe, whoſe perſons were as ſweet as
lady in England.

:h gave me moſt uneaſineſs among theſe
)ur (when my nurſe carried me to viſit them)
:m uſe me without any manner of ceremony,
e who had no ſort of conſequence: for they
emſelves to the ſkin, and put on their ſmocks
ıce, while I was placed on their toylet, di-
their naked bodies, which I am ſure to me
from being a tempting ſight, or from giving
emotions than thoſe of horror and diſguſt.
ppeared ſo coarſe and uneven, ſo variouſly
en I ſaw them near, with a mole here and
d as a trencher, and hairs hanging from it
ıack-threads, to ſay nothing farther concern-
their perſons. Neither did they at all ſcruple,
)y, to diſcharge what they had drank, to the
t leaſt two hogſheads in a veſſel that held
uns. The handſomeſt among thoſe maids of
aſant frolicſome girl of ſixteen, would ſome-
aſtride upon one of her nipples, with many
wherein the reader will excuſe me for not
rticular. But I was ſo much diſpleaſed, that
lumdalclitch to contrive ſome excuſe for not
)ung lady any more.

young gentleman, who was nephew to my
:neſs, came and preſſed them both to ſee an
It was of a man who had murdered one of
n's intimate acquaintance. Glumdalclitch
on to be of the company, very much againſt
n, for ſhe was naturally tender-hearted: and
although I abhorred ſuch kind of ſpectacles,

yet

yet my curioſity tempted me to ſee ſomething, tha thought muſt be extraordinary. The malefactor was ſ ed in a chair upon a ſcaffold erected for that purpo and his head cut off at one blow with a ſword of ab forty feet long. The veins and arteries ſpouted up ſi a prodigious quantity of blood, and ſo high in the that the great Jett d'eau at Verſailles was not equal the time it laſted; and the head, when it fell on the ſc fold floor, gave ſuch a bounce as made me ſtart, althou I were at leaſt half an Engliſh mile diſtant.

The Queen, who often uſed to hear me talk of ſea-voyages, and took all occaſions to divert me wh I was melancholy, asked me whether I underſtood h to handle a ſail or an oar, and whether a little exer of rowing might not be convenient for my health: I ſwered, that I underſtood both very well: for althou my proper employment had been to be ſurgeon or doc to the ſhip, yet often upon a pinch I was forced to w like a common mariner. But I could not ſee how could be done in their country, where the ſmalleſt wh ry was equal to a firſt-rate man of war among us, ſuch a boat as I could manage would never live in of their rivers. Her Majeſty ſaid, if I would contri boat, her own joiner ſhould make it, and ſhe would vide a place for me to ſail in. The fellow was an ing ous workman, and by my inſtructions in ten days fini a pleaſure-boat, with all its tackling, able convenie to hold eight Europeans. When it was finiſhed, the Q was ſo delighted, that ſhe ran with it in her lap to King, who ordered it to be put in a ciſtern full of w with me in it by way of trial; where I could not ma my two ſculls, or little oars, for want of room. Bu Queen had before contrived another project. She orc the joiner to make a wooden trough of three hundred long, fifty broad, and eight deep; which being well p ed, to prevent leaking, was placed on the floor alon wall in an outer room of the palace. It had a cock the bottom to let out the water, when it began to ſtale; and two ſervants could eaſily fill it in half an h Here I often uſed to row for my own diverſion, as as that of the Queen and her ladies, who thought t ſelves well entertained with my skill and agility. S

I would put up my ſail, and then my buſineſs was
o ſteer, while the ladies gave me a gale with their
and when they were weary, ſome of the pages
blow my ſail forward with their breath, while I
l my art by ſteering ſtarboard or larboard, as I pleaſ-
hen I had done, Glumdalclitch always carried back
at into her cloſet, and hung it on a nail to dry.
his exerciſe I once met an accident, which had like
e coſt me my life: for one of the pages having put
at into the trough, the governeſs, who attended
alclitch, very officiouſly lifted me up to place me
boat, but I happened to ſlip through her fingers,
ould infallibly have fallen down forty feet upon the
if, by the luckieſt chance in the world, I had not
opped by a corking-pin that ſtuck in the good
oman's ſtomacher; the head of the pin paſſed
n my ſhirt and the waiſtband of my breeches,
is I was held by the middle in the air, till Glum-
h ran to my relief.
ther time, one of the ſervants, whoſe office it was
ıy trough every third day with freſh water, was ſo
to let a huge frog (not perceiving it) ſlip out of
. The frog lay concealed till I was put into my
ut then ſeeing a reſting-place climbed up, and
lean ſo much on one ſide, that I was forced to
it with all my weight on the other to prevent
ning. When the frog was got in, it hopped at
lf the length of the boat, and then over my head,
rds and forwards, daubing my face and clothes
odious ſlime. The largeneſs of its features made
ır the moſt deformed animal that can be conceived.
er, I deſired Glumdalclitch to let me deal with it
I banged it a good while with one of my ſculls,
aſt forced it to leap out of the boat.
the greateſt danger I ever underwent in that
m, was from a monkey, who belonged to one of the
ıf the kitchen. Glumdalclitch had locked me up
cloſet, while ſhe went ſomewhere upon buſineſs,
ſit. The weather being very warm, the cloſet-
v was left open, as well as the windows and the
f my bigger box, in which I uſually lived, becauſe
argeneſs and convenience. As I ſat quietly medi-

tating at my table, I heard ſomething bounce in at
cloſet-window, and ſkip about from one ſide to the oth
whereat although I were much alarmed, yet I ventu
to look out, but not ſtirring from my ſeat; and then I
this frolicſome animal friſking and leaping up and do
till at laſt he came to my box, which he ſeemed to v
with great pleaſure and curioſity, peeping in at the c
and every window. I retreated to the farther corne
my room, or box, but the monkey looking in at e
ſide put me into ſuch a fright, that I wanted preſenc
mind to conceal myſelf under the bed, as I might
ly have done. After ſome time ſpent in peeping, grinn
and chattering, he at laſt eſpied me, and reaching ou
his paws in at the door, as a cat does when ſhe plays
a mouſe, although I often ſhifted place to avoid him, h
length ſeized the lappet of my coat (which, being mad
that country ſilk, was very thick and ſtrong) and dra
me out. He took me up in his right fore-foot, and
me as a nurſe does a child ſhe is going to ſuckle, ju
I have ſeen the ſame ſort of creature do with a kitte
Europe; and when I offered to ſtruggle, he ſqueeſe
ſo hard, that I thought it more prudent to ſubmit. I
good reaſon to believe, that he took me for a young
of his own ſpecies, by his often ſtroaking my face
gently with his other paw. In theſe diverſions he wa
terrupted by a noiſe at the cloſet-door, as if ſome
were opening it; whereupon he ſuddenly leaped u
the window, at which he had come in, and thence
the leads and gutters, walking upon three legs, and
ing me in the fourth, till he clambered up to a roof
was next to ours. I heard Glumdalclitch give a ſh
at the moment he was carrying me out. The poor
was almoſt diſtracted: that quarter of the palace wa
in an uproar; the ſervants ran for ladders; the mo
was ſeen by hundreds in the court, ſitting upon the
of a building, holding me like a baby in one of his
paws, and feeding me with the other, by cramming
my mouth ſome victuals he had ſqueeſed out of th
on one ſide of his chaps, and patting me when I w
not eat; whereat many of the rabble below could no
bear laughing; neither do I think they juſtly ought
blamed, for without queſtion the ſight was ridic

enough to every body but myſelf. Some of the people threw up ſtones, hoping to drive the monkey down; but this was ſtrictly forbidden, or elſe very probably my brains had been daſhed out.

The ladders were now applied, and mounted by ſeveral men, which the monkey obſerving, and finding himſelf almoſt encompaſſed; not being able to make ſpeed enough with his three legs, let me drop on a ridge tyle, and made his eſcape. Here I ſat for ſome time, five hundred yards from the ground, expecting every moment to be blown down by the wind, or to fall by my own giddineſs, and come tumbling over and over from the ridge to the eves: but an honeſt lad, one of my nurſe's footmen, climbed up, and putting me into his breeches-pocket brought me down ſafe.

I was almoſt choaked with the filthy ſtuff the monkey had crammed down my throat; but my dear little nurſe picked it out of my mouth with a ſmall needle, and then I fell a vomiting, which gave me great relief. Yet I was ſo weak, and bruiſed in the ſides with the ſqueeſes given me by this odious animal, that I was forced to keep my bed a fortnight. The King, Queen, and all the court, ſent every day to enquire after my health, and her Majeſty made me ſeveral viſits during my ſickneſs. The monkey was killed, and an order made that no ſuch animal ſhould be kept about the palace.

When I attended the King after my recovery to return him thanks for his favours, he was pleaſed to rally me a good deal upon this adventure. He aſked me, what my thoughts and ſpeculations were while I lay in the monkey's paw; how I liked the victuals he gave me; his manner of feeding; and whether the freſh air on the roof had ſharpened my ſtomach. He deſired to know, what I would have done upon ſuch an occaſion in my own country. I told his Majeſty, that in Europe we had no monkies, except ſuch as were brought for curioſities from other places, and ſo ſmall, that I could deal with a dozen of them together, if they preſumed to attack me. And as for that monſtrous animal with whom I was ſo lately engaged (it was indeed as large as an elephant) if my fears had ſuffered me to think ſo far as to make uſe of my hanger (looking fiercely, and clapping my hand upon the hilt, as I ſpoke)

I ſpoke) when he poked his paw into my chamber, pe
haps I ſhould have given him ſuch a wound, as wou
have made him glad to withdraw it with more haſte tha
he put it in. This I delivered in a firm tone, like a perſo
who was jealous leſt his courage ſhould be called in qu
ſtion. However, my ſpeech produced nothing elſe beſid
a loud laughter, which all the reſpect due to his Majeſ
from thoſe about him could not make them contain. Th
made me reflect, how vain an attempt it is for a man t
endeavour to do himſelf honour among thoſe, who a
out of all degree of equality or compariſon with hi
And yet I have ſeen the moral of my own behaviour ver
frequent in England ſince my return, where a little con
temptible varlet, without the leaſt title to birth, perſo
wit, or common ſenſe, ſhall preſume to look with in
portance, and put himſelf upon a foot with the greate
perſons of the kingdom.

I was every day furniſhing the court with ſome ridi
culous ſtory; and Glumdalclitch, although ſhe loved m
to exceſs, yet was arch enough to inform the Queen
whenever I committed any folly that ſhe thought woul
be diverting to her Majeſty. The girl, who had been o
of order, was carried by her governeſs to take the air
bout an hour's diſtance, or thirty miles from town. The
alighted out of the coach near a ſmall foot-path in a
field, and Glumdalclitch ſetting down my travelling-box
I went out of it to walk. There was a cow-dung in th
path, and I muſt need try my activity by attempting t
leap over it. I took a run, but unfortunately jumpe
ſhort, and found myſelf juſt in the middle up to my knee
I waded through with ſome difficulty, and one of th
footmen wiped me as clean as he could with his handke
chief; for I was filthily bemired, and my nurſe confin
me to my box, till we returned home; where the Que
was ſoon informed of what had paſſed, and the footm
ſpread it about the court; ſo that all the mirth for ſo
days was at my expence.

CHA

CHAP. VI*.

l contrivances of the author to pleaſe the King and en. He ſhews his ſkill in muſic. The King enquires the ſtate of Engl[illegible] which the author relates to . The King's obſervations thereon.

d to attend the King's levee once or twice a week, I had often ſeen him under the barber's hand, which was at firſt very terrible to behold: for the razor moſt twice as long as an ordinary ſcythe. His Ma- according to the cuſtom of the country, was only twice a week. I once prevailed on the barber to ie ſome of the ſuds or lather, out of which I pick- y or fifty of the ſtrongeſt ſtumps of hair. I then piece of fine wood, and cut it like the back of a

this chapter the author gives an account of the politi- : of Europe. His obſervati[illegible]are delivered with his irit of humour and ſeverity. He appears moſt particu- ffected with the proceedings of the courts of judi- and complains of being almoſt ruined by a chancery- which was *determined in his favour with coſts*. It muſt be :d, that inſtances of this kind are too frequent in our of juſtice; and they leave us no room to boaſt of the on of our preſent laws, however excellent the laws, in vn original foundation, may have been. *Judgment*, when *nto wormwood, is bitter*; but delays, as Lord Bacon ob- turn it into vinegar. It becomes ſharp and corroding : rtainly it is more eligible to die immediately by the of an enemy, than to decay lingering by poiſon, ad- rſe from a ſeeming friend. *Orrery*.

Noble commentator is miſtaken as to his firſt obſerva- ſor Gulliver has here given a political account of no y but England. It is however a miſtake to which any ntator would have been liable, who had read little more e titles or contents of the chapters, into which this s divided; for the word *Engl[illegible]*, in ſome Engliſh, and Iriſh editions, been printed in the title of this chapter, of *England*. *Hawkeſ.*

comb, making ſeveral holes in it at equal diſtance
as ſmall a needle as I could get from Glumdalclitch.
fixed in the ſtumps ſo artificially, ſcraping and flo
them with my knife towards the points, that I ma
very tolerable comb; which was a ſeaſonable ſupply,
own being ſo much broken in the teeth, that it wa
moſt uſeleſs: neither did I know any artiſt in that co
try ſo nice and exact, as would undertake to make
another.

And this puts me in mind of an amuſement, where
ſpent many of my leiſure hours. I deſired the Queen's
man to ſave for me the combings of her Majeſty's h
whereof in time I got a good quantity, and conſul
with my friend the cabinet-maker, who had received
neral orders to do little jobs for me, I directed him
make two chair-frames, no larger than thoſe I had in
box, and then to bore little holes with a fine awl ro
thoſe parts where I deſigned the backs and ſeats; thro
theſe holes I wove the ſtrongeſt hairs I could pick
juſt after the manner of cane-chairs in England. W
they were finiſhed, I made a preſent of them to her
jeſty, who kept them in her cabinet, and uſed to ſ
them for curioſities, as indeed they were the wonde
every one that beheld them. The Queen would have
me ſit upon one of thoſe chairs, but I abſolutely refu
to obey her, proteſting I would rather die a thouſ
deaths than place a diſhonourable part of my body
thoſe precious hairs that once adorned her Maje
head. Of theſe hairs (as I had always a mechan
genius) I likewiſe made a neat little purſe about five
long, with her Majeſty's name decyphered in gold lett
which I gave to Glumdalclitch by the Queen's conſ
To ſay the truth, it was more for ſhew than uſe, be
not of ſtrength to bear the weight of the larger co
and therefore ſhe kept nothing in it but ſome little t
that girls are fond of.

The King, who delighted in muſic, had frequent co
at court, to which I was ſometimes carried, and ſet in
box on a table to hear them: but the noiſe was ſo gr
that I could hardly diſtinguiſh the tunes. I am confid
that all the drums and trumpets of a royal army, beat
and ſounding together juſt at your ears, could not equa

practice was to have my box removed from the place ere the performers ſat, as far as I could, then to ſhut doors and windows of it, and draw the window-curıs; after which I found their muſic not diſagreeable. I had learned in my youth to play a little upon the ıet. Glumdalclitch kept one in her chamber, and a ſter attended twice a week to teach her: I called it a ıet, becauſe it ſomewhat reſembled that inſtrument, l was played upon in the ſame manner. A fancy came o my head, that I would entertain the King and Queen h an Engliſh tune upon this inſtrument. But this apıred extremely difficult: for the ſpinet was near ſixty t long, each key being almoſt a foot wide, ſo that with r arms extended I could not reach to above five keys, l to preſs them down required a good ſmart ſtroke with fiſt, which would be too great a labour, and to no purſe. The method I contrived was this: I prepared two ınd ſticks about the bigneſs of common cudgels; they re thicker at one end than the other, and I covered thicker ends with a piece of a mouſe's ſkin, that by ping on them, I might neither damage the tops of the ys, nor interrupt the ſound. Before the ſpinet a bench s placed about four feet below the keys, and I was put on the bench. I ran ſideling upon it that way and this, faſt as I could, banging the proper keys with my two ks, and made a ſhift to play a jigg to the great ſatisıtion of both their Majeſties: but it was the moſt vioıt exerciſe I ever underwent, and yet I could not ſtrike ove ſixteen keys, nor conſequently play the baſs and ble together, as other artiſts do; which was a great advantage to my performance.

The King, who, as I before obſerved, was a prince of cellent underſtanding, would frequently order that I ıuld be brought in my box, and ſet upon the table in cloſet: he would then command me to bring one of chairs out of the box, and ſit down within three yards tance upon the top of the cabinet, which brought me noſt to a level with his face. In this manner I had ſeral converſations with him. I one day took the freedom tell his Majeſty, that the contempt he diſcovered toırds Europe, and the reſt of the world, did not ſeem ſwerable to thoſe excellent qualities of mind that he

was

was maſter of: that reaſon did not extend itſelf with the bulk of the body; on the contrary, we obſerved in our country, that the talleſt perſons were uſually leaſt provided with it: that among other animals, bees and ants had the reputation of more induſtry, art and ſagacity, than many of the larger kinds; and that, as inconſiderable as he took me to be, I hoped I might live to do his Majeſty ſome ſignal ſervice. The king heard me with attention, and began to conceive a much better opinion of me than he had ever before. He deſired I would give him as exact an account of the government of England, as I poſſibly could; becauſe, as fond as princes commonly are of their own cuſtoms, (for ſo he conjectured of other monarchs by my former diſcourſes) he ſhould be glad to hear of any thing that might deſerve imitation.

Imagine with thyſelf, courteous reader, how often I then wiſhed for the tongue of Demoſthenes or Cicero that might have enabled me to celebrate the praiſe of my own dear native country in a ſtyle equal to its merits and felicity.

I began my diſcourſe by informing his Majeſty, that our dominions conſiſted of two iſlands, which compoſe three mighty kingdoms under one ſovereign, beſides our plantations in America. I dwelt long upon the fertility of our ſoil, and the temperature of our climate. I then ſpoke at large upon the conſtitution of an Engliſh parliament, partly made up of an illuſtrious body called the houſe of peers, perſons of the nobleſt blood, and of the moſt antient and ample patrimonies. I deſcribed that extraordinary care always taken of their education in arts and arms to qualify them for being counſellors both to the king and kingdom; to have a ſhare in the legiſlature; to be members of the higheſt court of judicature, from whence there could be no appeal; and to be champions always ready for the defence of their prince and country, by their valour, conduct, and fidelity. That theſe were the ornament and bulwark of the kingdom, worthy followers of their moſt renowned anceſtors, whoſe honour had been the reward of their virtue, from which their poſterity were never once known to degenerate. To theſe were joined ſeveral holy perſons as part of that aſſembly, under the *title of* biſhops, whoſe peculiar buſineſs it is to take care

f religion, and of thoſe who inſtruct the people therein. Theſe were ſearched and ſought out through the whole ation, by the prince and his wiſeſt counſellors among ich of the prieſthood, as were moſt deſervedly diſtinuiſhed by the ſanctity of their lives, and the depth of eir erudition, who were indeed the ſpiritual fathers of e clergy and the people.

That the other part of the parliament conſiſted of an ſembly called the houſe of commons, who were all prinpal gentlemen, *freely* picked and culled out by the people emſelves, for their great abilities and love of their untry, to repreſent the wiſdom of the whole nation. d that theſe two bodies made up the moſt auguſt aſnbly in Europe, to whom in conjunction with the nce the whole legiſlature is committed.

I then deſcended to the courts of juſtice, over which judges, thoſe venerable ſages and interpreters of the , preſided for determining the diſputed rights and proies of men, as well as for the puniſhment of vice, and tection of innocence. I mentioned the prudent maement of our treaſury, the valour and atchievements ur forces by ſea and land. I computed the number of people, by reckoning how many millions there might f each religious ſect, or political party among us. I not omit even our ſports and paſtimes, or any other icular, which I thought might redound to the honour y country. And I finiſhed all with a brief hiſtorical unt of affairs and events in England for about an dred years paſt.

his converſation was not ended under five audiences, of ſeveral hours; and the king heard the whole with t attention, frequently taking notes of what I ſpoke, ell as memorandums of what queſtions he intended sk me.

When I had put an end to theſe long diſcourſes, his eſty in a ſixth audience conſulting his notes propoſed y doubts, queries and objections upon every article. aſked what methods were uſed to cultivate the minds bodies of our young nobility, and in what kind of neſs they commonly ſpent the firſt and teachable part heir lives. What courſe was taken to ſupply that aſbly when any noble family became extinct. What

qualifications

qualifications were neceſſary in thoſe who are
ed new lords: whether the humour of the pr
of money to a court lady or a prime miniſter,
of ſtrengthening a party oppoſite to the pul
ever happened to be motives in thoſe advancem
ſhare of knowledge theſe lords had in the l
country, and how they came by it, ſo as to
to decide the properties of their fellow-ſub
laſt reſort. Whether they were always ſo fre
rice, partialities, or want, that a bribe or
ſiniſter view could have no place among them
thoſe holy lords I ſpoke of were always pron
rank upon account of their knowledge in re
ters, and the ſanctity of their lives; had
compliers with the times while they were con
or ſlaviſh proſtitute chaplains to ſome noble
opinions they continued ſervilely to follo
were admitted into that aſſembly.

He then deſired to know, what arts were
electing thoſe whom I called commoners:
ſtranger with a ſtrong purſe might not influ
gar voters to chuſe him before their own lan
moſt conſiderable gentleman in the neighbou
it came to paſs, that people were ſo violentl
getting into this aſſembly, which I allowed
trouble and expence, often to the ruin of t
without any ſalary or penſion: becauſe t
ſuch an exalted ſtrain of virtue and publi
his Majeſty ſeemed to doubt it might poſſibl
ways ſincere: and he deſired to know, w
zealous gentlemen could have any views
themſelves for the charges and trouble they
ſacrificing the public good to the deſigns o
vicious prince, in conjunction with a corrup
He multiplied his queſtions, and ſifted m
upon every part of this head, propoſing nu
quiries and objections, which I think it no
convenient to repeat.

Upon what I ſaid in relation to our cour
his Majeſty deſired to be ſatisfied in ſeveral
this I was the better able to do, having b
almoſt ruined by a long ſuit in chancery, w

r me with coſts. He asked what time was uſu-
it in determining between right and wrong, and
gree of expence. Whether advocates and orators
rty to plead in cauſes manifeſtly known to be un-
katious, or oppreſſive. Whether party in religion
ics were obſerved to be of any weight in the ſcale
e. Whether thoſe pleading orators were perſons
l in the general knowledge of equity, or only in
ıal, national, and other local cuſtoms. Whether
their judges had any part in penning thoſe laws,
ıey aſſumed the liberty of interpreting and gloſ-
ın at their pleaſure. Whether they had ever at
: times, pleaded for and againſt the ſame cauſe,
d precedents to prove contrary opinions. Whe-
ey were a rich or a poor corporation. Whether
ceived any pecuniary reward for pleading or de-
their opinions. And particularly, whether they
er admitted as members in the lower ſenate.
'll next upon the management of our treaſury;
, he thought my memory had failed me, becauſe
ıted our taxes at about five or ſix millions a-year,
hen I came to mention the iſſues, he found they
ies amounted to more than double: for the notes
taken were very particular in this point, becauſe
d, as he told me, that the knowledge of our con-
ght be uſeful to him, and he could not be deceiv-
s calculations. But, if what I told him were true,
ſtill at a loſs how a kingdom could run out of its
ke a private perſon. He asked me, who were our
's; and where we found money to pay them. He
ed to hear me talk of ſuch chargeable and expenſive
that certainly we muſt be a quarrelſome people, or
ıong very bad neighbours, and that our generals
eeds be richer than our kings. He asked what bu-
ſe had out of our own iſlands, unleſs upon the ſcore
e or treaty, or to defend the coaſts with our fleet.
all, he was amazed to hear me talk of a merce-
anding army in the midſt of peace, and among a free

He ſaid, if we were governed by our own con-
ı the perſons of our repreſentatives, he could not
e of whom we were afraid, or againſt whom we
o fight; and would hear my opinion, whether a

private

private man's houſe might not better be defended by
ſelf, his children, and family, than by half a dozen ra
picked up at a venture in the ſtreets for ſmall w
who might get an hundred times more by cutting
throats.

He laughed at my odd kind of arithmetic (as he
pleaſed to call it) in reckoning the numbers of our p
by a computation drawn from the ſeveral ſects amon
in religion and politics. He ſaid, he knew no reaſon
thoſe, who entertain opinions prejudicial to the pu
ſhould be obliged to change, or ſhould not be oblig
conceal them. And as it was tyranny in any govern
to require the firſt, ſo it was weakneſs not to enforc
ſecond: for a man may be allowed to keep poiſons i
cloſet, but not to vend them about for cordials.

He obſerved, that among the diverſions of our no
and gentry, I had mentioned gaming; he deſired to
at what age this entertainment was uſually taken up,
when it was laid down; how much of their time i
ployed: whether it ever went ſo high as to affect
fortunes: whether mean vicious people by their dex
in that art, might not arrive at great riches, and ſome
keep our very nobles in dependance, as well as habi
them to vile companions, wholly take them from th
provement of their minds, and force them by the
they received, to learn and practiſe that infamous dex
upon others.

He was perfectly aſtoniſhed with the hiſtorical ac
I gave him of our affairs during the laſt century, pr
ing it was only a heap of conſpiracies, rebellions, mu
maſſacres, revolutions, baniſhments, the very worſt e
that avarice faction, hypocriſy, perfidiouſneſs, cr
rage, madneſs, hatred, envy, luſt, malice, and aml
could produce.

His Majeſty, in another audience, was at the pa
recapitulate the ſum of all I had ſpoken; compare
queſtions he made, with the anſwers I had given;
taking me into his hands, and ſtroaking me gently,
vered himſelf in theſe words, which I ſhall never f
nor the manner he ſpoke them in: My little friend
drig, you have made a moſt admirable panegyric
your country: you have clearly proved, that ignor

idleneſs, and vice are the proper ingredients for qualifying a legiſlator; that laws are beſt explained, interpreted, and applied by thoſe whoſe intereſt and abilities lie in perverting, confounding, and eluding them. I obſerve among you ſome lines of an inſtitution, which in its original might have been tolerable, but theſe half eraſed, and the reſt wholly blurred and blotted by corruptions. It doth not appear from all you have ſaid, how any one perfection is required toward the procurement of any one ſtation among you; much leſs that men are ennobled on account of their virtue, that prieſts are advanced for their piety or learning, ſoldiers for their conduct or valour, judges for their integrity, ſenators for the love of their country, or counſellors for their wiſdom. As for yourſelf, continued the King, who have ſpent the greateſt part of your life in travelling, I am well diſpoſed to hope you may hitherto have eſcaped many vices of your country. But by what I have gathered from your own relation, and the anſwers I have with much pains wringed and extorted from you, I cannot but conclude the bulk of your natives to be the moſt pernicious race of little odious vermin, that nature ever ſuffered to crawl upon the ſurface of the earth.

CHAP. VII*.

The author's love of his country. He makes a propoſal of much advantage to the King, which is rejected. The King's great ignorance in politics. The learning of that country very imperfect and confined. The laws, and military affairs, and parties in the ſtate.

NOTHING but an extreme love of truth could have hindered me from concealing this part of my ſtory. It was in vain to diſcover my reſentments, which were

* This chapter contains ſuch ſarcaſms on the ſtructure of the human body, as too plainly ſhew, that the author was unwilling to loſe any opportunity of debaſing and ridiculing his own ſpecies.——Here a reflection naturally occurs, which, without any ſuperſtition, leads tacitly to admire and confeſs the ways of Providence. For this great genius, this mighty wit, who

were always turned into ridicule; and I was forced with patience, while my noble and moſt beloved c was ſo injuriouſly treated. I am as heartily ſorry of my readers can poſſibly be, that ſuch an occaſi given: but this prince happened to be ſo curious a quiſitive upon every particular, that it could not either with gratitude or good manners to refuſe givi what ſatisfaction I was able. Yet thus much I may lowed to ſay in my own vindication, that I artfully many of his queſtions, and gave to every point a favourable turn by many degrees than the ſtricter truth would allow. For I have always borne tha able partiality to my own country, which Dionyſi licarnaſſenſis with ſo much juſtice recommends to ſtorian: I would hide the frailties and deformities political mother, and place her virtues and beauties moſt advantageous light. This was my ſincere end in thoſe many diſcourſes I had with that monar though it unfortunately failed of ſucceſs.

But great allowances ſhould be given to a King lives wholly ſecluded from the reſt of the world, ar therefore be altogether unacquainted with the m and cuſtoms that moſt prevail in other nations: th of which knowledge will ever produce many *pre* and a certain *narrowneſs of thinking*, from which the politer countries of Europe are wholly exe And it would be hard indeed, if ſo remote a princ tions of virtue and vice were to be offered as a ſt for all mankind.

To confirm what I have now ſaid, and further t the miſerable effects of a *confined education*, I ſha inſert a paſſage which will hardly obtain belief. It to ingratiate myſelf farther into his Majeſty's fa told him of an invention diſcovered between th four hundred years ago to make a certain powd to an heap of which the ſmalleſt ſpark of fire would kindle the whole in a moment, although i

ſeemed to ſcoff and ſcorn at all mankind, lived not on an example to puniſh his own pride, and to terrify o underwent ſome of the greateſt miſeries to which huma is liable. *Orrery.*——See the author's life, prefixed to

as big as a mountain, and make it all fly up in the air together, with a noiſe and agitation greater than thunder. That a proper quantity of this powder rammed into an hollow tube of braſs or iron, according to its bigneſs, would drive a ball of iron or lead with ſuch violence and ſpeed, as nothing was able to ſuſtain its force. That the largeſt balls thus diſcharged would not only deſtroy whole ranks of an army at once, but batter the ſtrongeſt walls to the ground, ſink down ſhips, with a thouſand men in each, to the bottom of the ſea; and, when linked together by a chain, would cut through maſts and rigging, divide hundreds of bodies in the middle, and lay all waſte before them. That we often put this powder into large hollow balls of iron, and diſcharged them by an engine into ſome city we were beſieging, which would rip up the pavements, tear the houſes to pieces, burſt and throw ſplinters on every ſide, daſhing out the brains of all who came near. That I knew the ingredients very well, which were cheap and common; I underſtood the manner of compounding them, and could direct his workmen how to make thoſe tubes of a ſize proportionable to all other things in his Majeſty's kingdom, and the largeſt need not be above an hundred feet long; twenty or thirty of which tubes, charged with the proper quantity of powder and balls, would batter down the walls of the ſtrongeſt town in his dominions in a few hours, or deſtroy the whole metropolis, if ever it ſhould pretend to diſpute his abſolute commands. This I humbly offered to his Majeſty, as a ſmall tribute of acknowledgment in return of ſo many marks that I had received of his royal favour and protection.

The king was ſtruck with horror at the deſcription I had given of thoſe terrible engines, and the propoſal I had made. He was amazed, how ſo impotent and groveling an inſect as I (theſe were his expreſſions) could entertain ſuch inhuman ideas, and in ſo familiar a manner, as to appear wholly unmoved at all the ſcenes of blood and deſolation, which I had painted as the common effects of thoſe deſtructive machines, whereof he ſaid ſome evil genius, enemy to mankind, muſt have been the firſt contriver. As for himſelf, he proteſted, that although few things delighted him ſo much as new diſcoveries in art or in nature,

yet he would rather loſe half his kingdom, than be to ſuch a ſecret, which he commanded me, as I my life, never to mention any more.

A ſtrange effect of *narrow principles* and *ſhort* that a prince poſſeſſed of every quality which pr veneration, love, and eſteem; of ſtrong parts, gre dom, and profound learning, endowed with admira lents for government, and almoſt adored by his ſu ſhould from a *nice unneceſſary ſcruple*, whereof in E we can have no conception, let ſlip an opportunity to his hands, that would have made him abſolute of the lives, the liberties, and the fortunes of his Neither do I ſay this with the leaſt intention to from the many virtues of that excellent king, whoſ racter I am ſenſible will on this account be very mu ſened in the opinion of an Engliſh reader: but I tal defect among them to have riſen from their ignoran not having hitherto reduced politics into a ſcience, more acute wits of Europe have done. For I rem very well in a diſcourſe one day with the King, happened to ſay there were ſeveral thouſand bo mong us written upon the *art of government*, it ga (directly contrary to my intention) a very mean o of our underſtandings. He profeſſed both to abo and deſpiſe all *myſtery*, *refinement*, and *intrigue*, in a Prince or a Miniſter. He could not tell what I by *ſecrets of ſtate*, where an enemy, or ſome rival were not in the caſe. He confined the knowledge verning within very *narrow bounds*, to common ſen reaſon, to juſtice and lenity, to the ſpeedy determi of civil and criminal cauſes; with ſome other obvi pics, which are not worth conſidering. And he gav his opinion, that whoever could make two ears of or two blades of graſs, to grow upon a ſpot of where only one grew before, would deſerve better o kind, and do more eſſential ſervice to his country the whole race of politicians put together.

The learning of this people is very defective, co only in morality, hiſtory, poetry, and mathematics, in they muſt be allowed to excel. But the laſt of wholly applied to what may be uſeful in life, to t provement of agriculture, and all mechanical arts;

among us it would be little eſteemed. And as to ideas, entities, abſtractions, and tranſcendantals, I could never drive the leaſt conception into their heads.

No law of that country muſt exceed in words the number of letters in their alphabet, which conſiſts only in two and twenty. But indeed few of them extend even to that length. They are expreſſed in the moſt plain and ſimple terms, wherein thoſe people are not mercurial enough to diſcover above one interpretation: and to write a comment upon any law is a capital crime. As to the deciſion of civil cauſes, or proceedings againſt criminals, their precedents are ſo few, that they have little reaſon to boaſt of any extraordinary skill in either.

They have had the art of printing, as well as the Chineſe, time out of mind: but their libraries are not very large; for that of the King, which is reckoned the largeſt, doth not amount to above a thouſand volumes, placed in a gallery of twelve hundred feet long, from whence I had liberty to borrow what books I pleaſed. The Queen's joiner had contrived in one of Glumdalclitch's rooms a kind of wooden machine five and twenty feet high, formed like a ſtanding ladder, the ſteps were each fifty feet long: it was indeed a moveable pair of ſtairs, the loweſt end placed at ten feet diſtance from the wall of the chamber. The book I had a mind to read was put up leaning againſt the wall: I firſt mounted to the upper ſtep of the ladder, and turning my face towards the book, began at the top of the page, and ſo walking to the right and left about eight or ten paces, according to the length of the lines, till I had gotten a little below the level of mine eyes, and then deſcending gradually till I came to the bottom: after which I mounted again, and began the other page in the ſame manner, and ſo turned over the leaf, which I could eaſily do with both my hands, for it was as thick and ſtiff as a paſte-board, and in the largeſt folios not above eighteen or twenty feet long.

Their ſtyle is clear, maſculine, and ſmooth, but not florid; for they avoid nothing more than multiplying unneceſſary words, or uſing various expreſſions. I have peruſed many of their books, eſpecially thoſe in hiſtory and morality. Among the reſt I was much diverted with a little old treatiſe, which always lay in Glumdalclitch's

bed-chamber, and belonged to her governe
derly gentlewoman, who dealt in writings of
devotion. The book treats of the weakn
kind, and is in little eſteem, except amon
and the vulgar. However I was curious to
author of that country could ſay upon ſt
This writer went through all the uſual topics
moraliſts, ſhewing how diminutive, conte
helpleſs an animal was man in his own natu
able to defend himſelf from inclemencies of
fury of wild beaſts: how much he was ex
creature in ſtrength, by another in ſpeed, b
foreſight, by a fourth in induſtry. He adde
was degenerated in theſe latter declining
world, and could now produce only ſmall ab
in compariſon of thoſe in ancient times. I
very reaſonable to think, not only that the ſ
were originally much larger, but alſo that th
been giants in former ages; which, as it
hiſtory and tradition, ſo it hath been confi
bones and skulls caſually dug up in ſeveral
kingdom, far exceeding the common dwi
man in our days. He argued that the very
ture abſolutely required we ſhould have bee
beginning of a ſize more large and robuſt, n
deſtruction from every little accident of a til
an houſe, or a ſtone caſt from the hand of
ing drowned in a little brook. From this w
ing, the author drew ſeveral moral applicati
the conduct of life, but needleſs here to rep
own part I could not avoid reflecting how u
talent was ſpread, of drawing lectures in m
deed rather matter of diſcontent and repini
quarrels we raiſe with nature. And, I be
ſtrict enquiry thoſe quarrels might be ſhewn
ed among us, as they are among that people

* The author's zeal to juſtify Providence has
marked; and theſe quarrels with Nature, or, in oth
God, could not have been more forcibly repr
ſhewing, that the complaints upon which they
would be equally ſpecious among beings of ſuch
periority of ſtature and ſtrength. *Hawkeſ.*

As to their military affairs, they boaſt that the King's army conſiſts of an hundred and ſeventy-ſix thouſand foot, and thirty-two thouſand horſe: if that may be called an army, which is made up of tradeſmen in the ſeveral cities, and farmers in the country, whoſe commanders are only the nobility and gentry without pay or reward. They are indeed perfect enough in their exerciſes, and under very good diſcipline, wherein I ſaw no great merit; for how ſhould it be otherwiſe, where every farmer is under the command of his own landlord, and every citizen under that of the principal men in his own city, choſen after the manner of Venice by *ballot?*

I have often ſeen the militia of Lorbrulgrud drawn out to exerciſe in a great field, near the city, of twenty miles ſquare. They were in all not above twenty-five thouſand foot, and ſix thouſand horſe: but it was impoſſible for me to compute their number, conſidering the ſpace of ground they took up. A cavalier, mounted on a large ſteed, might be about ninety feet high. I have ſeen this whole body of horſe, upon a word of command, draw their ſwords at once, and brandiſh them in the air. Imagination can figure nothing ſo grand, ſo ſurpriſing and ſo aſtoniſhing! it looked as if ten thouſand flaſhes of lightning were darting at the ſame time from every quarter of the ſky.

I was curious to know how this Prince, to whoſe dominions there is no acceſs from any other country, came to think of armies, or to teach his people the practice of military diſcipline. But I was ſoon informed both by converſation and reading their hiſtories: for in the courſe of many ages they have been troubled with the ſame diſeaſe to which the whole race of mankind is ſubject; the nobility often contending for power, the people for liberty, and the King for abſolute dominion. All which, however, happily tempered by the laws of that kingdom, have been ſometimes violated by each of the three parties, and have more than once occaſioned civil wars, the laſt whereof was happily put an end to by this Prince's grandfather in a general compoſition; and the militia, then ſettled with common conſent, hath been ever ſince kept in the ſtricteſt duty.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

The King and Queen make a Progreſs to the leaves the country very particularly related. The author attends them. The manner in turns to England.

I Had always a ſtrong impulſe, that I ſhould ſ recover my liberty, though it was impoſſibl jecture by what means, or to form any project leaſt hope of ſucceeding. The ſhip in which I ſ the firſt ever known to be driven within ſigh coaſt, and the King had given ſtrict orders, that time another appeared, it ſhould be taken aſh with all its crew and paſſengers brought in t to Lorbrulgrud. He was ſtrongly bent to get r man of my own ſize, by whom I might prop breed: but I think I ſhould rather have died, tha gone the diſgrace of leaving a poſterity to be kept like tame canary birds, and perhaps in time fc the kingdom to perſons of quality for curioſities. indeed treated with much kindeſs: I was the of a great King and Queen, and the delight of tl court; but it was upon ſuch a foot, as ill became nity of human kind. I could never forget thoſe pledges I had left behind me. I wanted to b people with whom I could converſe upon even te walk about the ſtreets and fields, without being being trod to death like a frog, or a young pupp my deliverance came ſooner than I expected, manner not very common: the whole ſtory and ſtances of which I ſhall faithfully relate.

I had now been two years in this country; a the beginning of the third Glumdalclitch and I ed the King and Queen in a progreſs to the *ſouth* the Kingdom. I was carried as uſual in my travell which, as I have already deſcribed, was a very ent cloſet of twelve feet wide. And I had o hammock to be fixed by ſilken ropes from the f ners at the top, to break the jolts, when a ſervan

e him on horſeback, as I ſometimes deſired, and
ten ſleep in my hammock while we were upon
. On the roof of my cloſet, not directly over
le of the hammock, I ordered the joiner to cut
e of a foot ſquare, to give me air in hot weather,
: ; which hole I ſhut at pleaſure with a board,
v backwards and forwards through a groove.
we came to our journey's end, the King thought
› paſs a few days at a palace he hath near Flan-
ı city within eighteen Engliſh miles of the ſea-
lumdalclitch and I were much fatigued: I had
ſmall cold, but the poor girl was ſo ill as to be
to her chamber. I longed to ſee the ocean,
uſt be the only ſcene of my eſcape, if ever it
ıppen. I pretended to be worſe than I really was,
ed leave to take the freſh air of the ſea with a
ıom I was very fond of, and who had ſometimes
ted with me. I ſhall never forget with what
neſs Glumdalclitch conſented, nor the ſtrict
e gave the page to be careful of me, burſting at
time into a flood of tears, as if ſhe had ſome
ıg of what was to happen. The boy took me
y box about half an hour's walk from the palace
the rocks on the ſea-ſhore. I ordered him to ſet
, and lifting up one of my ſaſhes, caſt many a wiſt-
choly look towards the ſea. I found myſelf not
l, and told the page that I had a mind to take a
y hammock, which I hoped would do me good. I
nd the boy ſhut the window cloſe down to keep
old. I ſoon fell aſleep, and all I can conjecture
while I ſlept, the page, thinking no danger could
went among the rocks to look for birds eggs,
efore obſerved him from my window ſearch-
, and picking up one or two in the clefts. Be
t will, I found myſelf ſuddenly awaked with a
ull upon the ring, which was faſtened at the top
x for the conveniency of carriage. I felt my box
y high in the air, and then borne forward with
s ſpeed. The firſt jolt had like to have ſhaken
f my hammock, but afterwards the motion was
gh. I called out ſeveral times, as loud as I could
voice, but all to no purpoſe. I looked towards

my

my windows, and could ſee nothing but the cl
ſky. I heard a noiſe juſt over my head like the cla
wings, and then began to perceive the woeful co
was in, that ſome eagle had got the ring of my
his beak, with an intent to let it fall on a rock li
toiſe in a ſhell, and then pick out my body, and d
for the ſagacity and ſmell of this bird enabled hi
cover his quarry at a great diſtance, though be
cealed than I could be within a two-inch board.

In a little time I obſerved the noiſe and f
wings to encreaſe very faſt, and my box was
and down like a ſign in a windy day. I hear
bangs or buffets, as I thought, given to the e
ſuch I am certain it muſt have been, that held th
my box in his beak) and then all on a ſudden ſe
falling perpendicularly down for above a minute,
ſuch incredible ſwiftneſs that I almoſt loſt my bre
fall was ſtopped by a terrible ſquaſh, that ſound
to my ears than the cataract of Niagara *; after
was quite in the dark for another minute, and
box began to riſe ſo high, that I could ſee light
tops of the windows. I now perceived that I was
to the ſea. My box, by the weight of my b
goods that were in, and the broad plates of iron
ſtrength at the four corners of the top and botto
ed about five feet deep in water. I did then, an
ſuppoſe, that the eagle which flew away with my
purſued by two or three others, and forced to let
while he defended himſelf againſt the reſt, who
ſhare in the prey. The plates of iron faſtened at
tom of the box (for thoſe were the ſtrongeſt)
the balance while it fell, and hindered it from bein
on the ſurface of the water. Every joint of it
grooved: and the door did not move on hinge

y little water came in. I got with much difficulty out my hammock, having firſt ventured to draw back the o-board on the roof already mentioned, contrived on rpoſe to let in air, for want of which I found myſelf al-oſt ſtifled.

How often did I then wiſh myſelf with my dear Glum-lclitch, from whom one ſingle hour had ſo far divided e! And I may ſay with truth, that in the midſt of my vn misfortunes, I could not forbear lamenting my poor arſe, the grief ſhe would ſuffer for my loſs, the diſplea-ure of the Queen, and the ruin of her fortune. Perhaps any travellers have not been under greater difficulties nd diſtreſs than I was at this juncture, expecting every oment to ſee my box daſhed to pieces, or at leaſt overſet y the firſt violent blaſt or riſing wave. A breach in one ngle pane of glaſs would have been immediate death: or could any thing have preſerved the windows but the trong lattice-wires placed on the out-ſide againſt accidents n travelling. I ſaw the water ooze in at ſeveral crannies, lthough the leaks were not conſiderable, and I endeavour-d to ſtop them as well as I could. I was not able to lift up the roof of my cloſet, which otherwiſe I certainly ſhould have done, and ſat on the top of it, where I might at leaſt preſerve myſelf ſome hours longer than by being ſhut up (as I may call it) in the hold. Or if I eſcaped theſe dangers for a day or two, what could I expect but a mi-erable death of cold and hunger? I was four hours un-der theſe circumſtances, expecting, and indeed wiſhing every moment to be my laſt.

I have already told the reader, that there were two ſtrong ſtaples fixed upon that ſide of my box which had no window, and into which the ſervant, who uſed to carry me on horſeback, would put a leathern belt, and buckle it about his waiſt. Being in this diſconſolate ſtate, I heard, or at leaſt thought I heard, ſome kind of grating noiſe on that ſide of my box where the ſtaples were fixed, and ſoon after I began to fancy, that the box was pulled or towed along in the ſea; for I now and then felt a ſort of tugging, which made the waves riſe near the tops of my windows, leaving me almoſt in the dark. This gave me ſome faint hopes of relief; although I was not able to imagine how it could be brought about. I ventured to

unſcrew

unſcrew one of my chairs, which were always faſtened to the floor; and having made a hard ſhift to ſcrew it down again directly under the ſlipping-board that I had lately opened. I mounted on the chair, and putting my mouth as near as I could to the hole, I called for help in a loud voice, and in all the languages I underſtood. I then faſtened my handkerchief to a ſtick I uſually carried, and thruſting it up the hole, waved it ſeveral times in the air that if any boat or ſhip were near, the ſeamen might conjecture ſome unhappy mortal to be ſhut up in the box.

I found no effect from all I could do, but plainly perceived my cloſet to be moved along; and in the ſpace of an hour, or better, that ſide of the box where the ſtaple were, and had no window, ſtruck againſt ſomething that was hard. I apprehended it to be a rock, and found myſelf toſſed more than ever. I plainly heard a noiſe upon the cover of my cloſet like that of a cable, and the grating of it as it paſſed through the ring. I then found myſelf hoiſted up by degrees, at leaſt three feet higher than I was before. Whereupon I again thruſt up my ſtick and handkerchief, calling for help till I was almoſt hoarſe. In return to which, I heard a great ſhout repeated three times, giving me ſuch tranſports of joy as are not to be conceived but by thoſe who feel them. I now heard trampling over my head, and ſomebody calling through the hole with a loud voice in the Engliſh tongue, if there be any body below, let them ſpeak. I anſwered, I was an Engliſhman, drawn by ill fortune into the greateſt calamity that ever any creature underwent, and begged by all that was moving, to be delivered out of the dungeon I was in. The voice replied, I was ſafe, for my box was faſtened to their ſhip; and the carpenter ſhould immediately come and ſaw a hole in the cover, large enough to pull me out. I anſwered, that was needleſs, and would take up too much time, for there was no more to be done, but let one of the crew put his finger into the ring, and take the box out of the ſea into the ſhip, and ſo into the captain's cabin *. Some of them upon hearing me talk wild

* There are ſeveral little incidents which ſhew the author to have had a deep knowledge of human nature; and I think this is one. Although the principal advantages enumerated Gulli

wildly thought I was mad; others laughed; for indeed it never came into my head that I was now got among people of my own ſtature and ſtrength. The carpenter came, and in a few minutes ſawed a paſſage about four feet ſquare, then let down a ſmall ladder, upon which I mounted, and from thence was taken into the ſhip in a very weak condition.

The ſailors were all in amazement, and aſked me a thouſand queſtions, which I had no inclination to anſwer. I was equally confounded at the ſight of ſo many pigmies, for ſuch I took them to be, after having ſo long accuſtomed mine eyes to the monſtrous objects I had left. But the captain, Mr. Thomas Wilcocks, an honeſt worthy Shropſhire man, obſerving I was ready to faint, took me into his cabbin, gave me a cordial to comfort me, and made me *turn in* upon his own bed, adviſing me to take a little reſt, of which I had great need. Before I went to ſleep, I gave him to underſtand that I had ſome valuable furniture in my box, too good to be loſt; a fine hammock, an handſome field-bed, two chairs, a table, and a cabinet. That my cloſet was hung on all ſides, or rather quilted, with ſilk and cotton: that if he would let one of the crew bring my cloſet into his cabbin, I would open it there before him and ſhew him my goods. The captain hearing me utter theſe abſurdities concluded I was raving: however (I ſuppoſe to pacify me) he promiſed to give order as I deſired, and going upon deck ſent ſome of his men down into my cloſet, from whence (as I afterwards found) they drew up all my goods, and ſtripped off the quilting: but the chairs, cabinet, and bed-ſtead, being ſcrewed to the floor, were much damaged by the ignorance of the ſeamen, who tore them up by force. Then they knocked off ſome of the boards for the uſe of the ſhip, and when they had got all they had a mind for, let the hull drop into the ſea, which by reaſon of many breaches made in the bottom and ſides ſunk to rights. And in-

Gulliver in the beginning of this chapter, of mingling again among his countrymen, depended on their being of the ſame ſize with himſelf; yet this is forgotten, in his ardour to be delivered: and he is afterwards betrayed into the ſame abſurdity, by his zeal to preſerve his furniture. *Hawkeſ.*

deed I was glad not to have been a ſpectator of the h
vock they made; becauſe I am confident it would hav
ſenſibly touched me by bringing former paſſages into m
mind, which I had rather forget.

I ſlept ſome hours, but perpetually diſturbed wit
dreams of the place I had left, and the dangers I had
ſcaped. However, upon waking I found myſelf much re
covered. It was now about eight o'clock at night, an
the captain ordered ſupper immediately, thinking I ha
already faſted too long. He entertained me with gre
kindneſs, obſerving me not to look wildly, or talk incon
ſiſtently; and, when we were left alone, deſired I woul
give him a relation of my travels, and by what accident
came to be ſet adrift in that monſtrous wooden cheſt. H
ſaid, that about twelve o'clock at noon, as he was look
ing through his glaſs, he ſpied it at a diſtance, and though
it was a ſail, which he had a mind to make, being no
much out of his courſe, in hopes of buying ſome biſket
his own beginning to fall ſhort. That upon coming near
er, and finding his error, he ſent out his long-boat t
diſcover what I was; that his men came back in a fright
ſwearing they had ſeen a ſwimming-houſe. That h
laughed at their folly, and went himſelf in the boat, or
dering his men to take a ſtrong cable along with them
That the weather being calm he rowed round me ſeveral
times, obſerved my windows, and the wire-lattices that
defended them. That he diſcovered two ſtaples upon
one ſide, which was all of boards without any paſſage for
light. He then commanded his men to row up to that
ſide, and faſtening a cable to one of the ſtaples, ordered
them to tow my cheſt (as they called it) towards the
ſhip. When it was there, he gave directions to faſten
another cable to the ring fixed in the cover, and to raiſe
up my cheſt with pullies, which all the ſailors were not
able to do above two or three feet. He ſaid, they ſaw
my ſtick and handkerchief thruſt out of the hole, and
concluded that ſome unhappy man muſt be ſhut up in the
cavity. I asked, whether he or the crew had ſeen any
prodigious birds in the air about the time he firſt diſco-
vered me? to which he anſwered, that, diſcourſing this
matter with the ſailors while I was aſleep, one of them
ſaid, he had *obſerved* three eagles flying towards the
north,

orth, but remarked nothing of their being larger than he uſual ſize, which I ſuppoſe muſt be imputed to the reat height they were at; and he could not gueſs the eaſon of my queſtion. I then asked the captain, how ar he reckoned we might be from land? he ſaid, by the eſt computation he could make, we were at leaſt an undred leagues. I aſſured him that he muſt be miſtaken y almoſt half, for I had not left the country from whence I came above two hours before I dropt into the ea. Whereupon he began again to think that my brain vas diſturbed, of which he gave me a hint, and adviſed ne to go to bed in a cabbin he had provided. I aſſured im I was well refreſhed with his good entertainment and ompany, and as much in my ſenſes as ever I was in my ife. He then grew ſerious, and deſired to ask me freey, whether I were not troubled in mind by the conſciuſneſs of ſome enormous crime, for which I was puniſhd at the command of ſome prince, by expoſing me in that heſt, as great criminals in other countries have been orced to ſea in a leaky veſſel without proviſions: for alhough he ſhould be ſorry to have taken ſo ill a man into is ſhip, yet he would engage his word to ſet me ſafe ahore in the firſt port where we arrived. He added, that is ſuſpicions were much increaſed by ſome very abſurd peeches I had delivered at firſt to the ſailors, and afterards to himſelf, in relation to my cloſet or cheſt, as vell as by my odd looks and behaviour while I was at upper.

I begged his patience to hear me tell my ſtory, which faithfully did from the laſt time I left England to the noment he firſt diſcovered me. And as truth always orceth its way into rational minds, ſo this honeſt worthy gentleman, who had ſome tincture of learning, and very good ſenſe, was immediately convinced of my candour nd veracity. But, farther to confirm all I had ſaid, I intreated him to give order that my cabinet ſhould be brought, of which I had the key in my pocket, (for he had already informed me how the ſeamen diſpoſed of my cloſet.) I opened it in his preſence, and ſhewed him the ſmall collection of rarities I made in the country from whence I had been ſo ſtrangely delivered. There was the comb I had contrived out of the ſtumps of the

King's beard, and another of the ſame materials, but fixed into a paring of her Majeſty's thumb-nail which ſerved for the back. There was a collection of needles and pins from a foot to half a yard long; four waſp-ſtings, like joiners tacks; ſome combings of the Queen's hair; a gold-ring which one day ſhe made me a preſent of in a moſt obliging manner, taking it from her little finger, and throwing it over my head like a collar. I deſired the captain would pleaſe to accept this ring in return of his civilities; which he abſolutely refuſed. I ſhewed him a corn that I had cut off with my own hand from a maid of honour's toe; it was about the bigneſs of a Kentiſh pippin, and grown ſo hard, that, when I returned to England, I got it hollowed into a cup, and ſet in ſilver. Laſtly, I deſired him to ſee the breeches I had then on, which were made of a mouſe's skin.

I could force nothing on him but a footman's tooth, which I obſerved him to examine with great curioſity, and found he had a fancy for it. He received it with abundance of thanks, more than ſuch a trifle could deſerve. It was drawn by an unskilful ſurgeon in a miſtake from one of Glumdalclitch's men, who was afflicted with the tooth-ach, but it was as ſound as any in his head. I got it cleaned and put it into my cabinet. It was about a foot long, and four inches in diameter.

The captain was very well ſatisfied with this plain relation I had given him, and ſaid, he hoped, when we returned to England, I would oblige the world by putting it on paper, and making it public. My anſwer was, that I thought we were already overſtocked with books of travels: that nothing could now paſs which was not extraordinary; wherein I doubted ſome authors leſs conſulted truth, than their own vanity, or intereſt, or the diverſion of ignorant readers: that my ſtory could contain little beſides common events, without thoſe ornamental deſcriptions of ſtrange plants, trees, birds, and other animals; or of the barbarous cuſtoms and idolatry of ſavage people, with which moſt writers abound. However, I thanked him for his good opinion, and promiſed to take the matter into my thoughts.

He ſaid, he wondered at one thing very much, which was, to hear me ſpeak ſo loud, asking me whether the King

King or Queen of that country were thick of hearing. I told him, it was what I had been uſed to for above two years paſt; and that I admired as much at the voices of him and his men, who ſeemed to me only to whiſper, and yet I could hear them well enough. But when I ſpoke in that country, it was like a man talking in the ſtreet to another looking out from the top of a ſteeple, unleſs when I was placed on a table, or held in any perſon's hand. I told him, I had likewiſe obſerved another thing, that when I firſt got into the ſhip, and the ſailors ſtood all about me, I thought they were the moſt little contemptible creatures I had ever beheld. For indeed, while I was in that prince's country, I could never endure to look in a glaſs, after mine eyes had been accuſtomed to ſuch prodigious objects, becauſe the compariſon gave me ſo deſpicable a conceit of myſelf. The captain ſaid, that while we were at ſupper he obſerved me to look at every thing with a ſort of wonder, and that I often ſeemed hardly able to contain my laughter, which he knew not well how to take, but imputed it to ſome diſorder in my brain. I anſwered, it was very true; and I wondered how I could forbear, when I ſaw his diſhes of the ſize of a ſilver three-pence, a leg of pork hardly a mouthful, a cup not ſo big as a nut-ſhell; and ſo I went on, deſcribing the reſt of his houſhold-ſtuff and proviſions after the ſame manner. For although the Queen had ordered a little equipage of all things neceſſary for me, while I was in her ſervice, yet my ideas were wholly taken up with what I ſaw on every ſide of me, and I winked at my own littleneſs, as people do at their own faults. The captain underſtood my raillery very well, and merrily replied with the old Engliſh proverb, that he doubted mine eyes were bigger than my belly, for he did not obſerve my ſtomach ſo good although I had faſted all day; and, continuing in his mirth, proteſted he would have gladly given an hundred pounds to have ſeen my cloſet in the eagles bill, and afterwards in its fall from ſo great a height into the ſea; which would certainly have been a moſt aſtoniſhing object, worthy to have the deſcription of it tranſmitted to future ages: and the compariſon of Phaeton was ſo obvious, that he could not forbear applying it, although I did not much admire the conceit.

The captain, having been at Tonquin, was in h turn to England driven north-eaſtward to the latit 44 degrees, and of longitude 143. But meeting a wind two days after I came on board him, we ſouthward a long time, and coaſting New-Holland our courſe weſt-ſouth-weſt, and then ſouth-ſoutl till we doubled the Cape of Good-Hope. Our was very proſperous, but I ſhall not trouble the with a journal of it The captain called in at one ports, and ſent in his long-boat for proviſions an water, but I never went out of the ſhip till we can the Downs, which was on the third day of June, about nine months after my eſcape. I offered t my goods in ſecurity for payment of my freight; captain proteſted he would not receive one farthin took a kind leave of each other, and I made hi miſe he would come to ſee me at my houſe in Rec hired a horſe and guide for five ſhillings, which I ed of the captain.

As I was on the road, obſerving the littlenes houſes, the trees, the cattle, and the people, I t think myſelf in Lilliput. I was afraid of tramp every traveller I met, and often called aloud to h ſtand out of the way, ſo that I had like to have one or two broken heads for my impertinence.

When I came to my own houſe, for which I w to enquire, one of the ſervants opening the door down to go in (like a gooſe under a gate) fo ſtriking my head. My wife ran out to embrace I ſtooped lower than her knees, thinking ſhe cou wife never be able to reach my mouth. My kneeled to ask my bleſſing, but I could not ſe ſhe aroſe, having been ſo long uſed to ſtand with and eyes erect to above ſixty feet; and then I take her up with one hand by the waiſt. I look upon the ſervants, and one or two friends who the houſe, as if they had been pigmies, and I a told my wife ſhe had been too thrifty, for I h had ſtarved herſelf and her daughter to noth ſhort I behaved myſelf ſo unaccountably, that t a l of the captain's opinion when he firſt ſaw me,

loſt my wits. This I mention as an inſtance
power of habit and prejudice.
ime, I and my family and friends came to a
nding: but my wife proteſted I ſhould never
more; although my evil deſtiny ſo ordered,
ot power to hinder me, as the reader may
r. In the mean time, I here conclude the
f my unfortunate voyages *.

whole of theſe two voyages to Lilliput and
riſes one general remark, which, however obvi-
overlooked by thoſe who conſider them as little
ſport of a wanton imagination. When human
ibed to pigmies and giants, there are few that do
er contempt, diſguſt, or horror. To aſcribe
to ſuch beings, was perhaps the moſt probable
aging the mind to examine them with attention,
hem with impartiality, by ſuſpending the faſci-
, and exhibiting familiar objects in a new light.
fable then is not leſs apparent, than important
and that this uſe was intended by the author,
d only by thoſe who are diſpoſed to affirm, that
larity are the effects of chance. *Hawkeſ.*
g over the two firſt parts of theſe travels, I think
over a very great reſemblance between certain
lliver's voyage to Lilliput, and the voyage of
gerac to the ſun and moon.——Cyrano de Ber-
ch author of a ſingular character, who had a ve-
n of wit and humour, in many reſpects reſem-
wift. He wanted the advantages of learning, and
ation. His imagination was leſs guarded and
ore agreeably extravagant. He has introduced
ophical romance, the ſyſtem of Deſcartes, (which
admired) intermixed with ſeveral fine ſtrokes of
he wild and immechanical enquiries of the phi-
aſtronomers of that age; and in many parts he
directed the plan which the Dean of St. Patrick's
Orrery.

TRAVELS into ſeveral REMOTE TIONS of the world.

PART III.

A VOYAGE to LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI, LU NAGG, GLUBBDUBDRIB, and JAPAN

CHAP. I.

The author ſets out on his third Voyage, is taken rates. The malice of a Dutchman. *His arri an Iſland. He is received into* Laputa.

I HAD not been at home above ten days, whe tain William Robinſon a Corniſh man, comm of the Hope-well, a ſtout ſhip of three hundred came to my houſe. I had formerly been ſurgeon o ther ſhip, where he was maſter and a fourth part o

* The third part is in general written againſt chymiſt thematicians, mechanicks, and projectors of all kinds.

Swift was little acquainted with mathematical knowled was prejudiced againſt it, by obſerving the ſtrange effects duced in thoſe who applied themſelves entirely to that ſ No part of human literature has given greater ſtrength mind, or has produced greater benefits to mankind, th ſeveral branches of learning that may paſs under the denomination of mathematics. But the abuſes of this the idle, thin, immechanical refinements of it, are juſt ſ of ſatire. The real uſe of knowledge is to invigorate, enervate the faculties of reaſon. Learning degenerates ſpecies of madneſs, when it is not ſuperior to what it poſ

voyage to the Levant; he had always treated me like a brother, than an inferior officer, and hearing y arrival, made me a viſit, as I apprehended, only ſ friendſhip; for nothing paſſed more than what is uſual

cientific powers are moſt evident, when they are capable :rting themſelves in the ſocial duties of life; when they no chains, but can freely diſengage themſelves, and, like id conſtitution of body, riſe chearful, and more vigorous e food they have acquired, being neither oppreſſed, nor red ſtupid by the labours of digeſtion.

rd Bacon has juſtly expoſed the vain purſuits of oſtentati- :dants in the different parts of learning; and their unac- able temerity in deducing general rules from arbitrary ns, or few experiments: he has likewiſe fixed upon a ſure ertain baſis, the procedure and limits of the human un- nding. Swift has purſued the ſame plan in a different .er, and has placed the imaginary ſchemes of all pretenders, nore ludicrous, and therefore in a more proper light.

Ridiculum acri
tius ac melius, magnas plerumque ſecat res.

cannot be ſuppoſed to condemn uſeful experiments, or ght application of them: but he ridicules the vain attempts regular productions of thoſe raſh men, who, like Ixion, acing a cloud inſtead of a goddeſs, plagued the world with nurs; whilſt Jupiter from the embraces of a Juno, and an ena, bleſſed the earth with an Hebe, and an Hercules. y.

e deſign of Gulliver in his voyage to Laputa, is to ridi- the vain pretenſions of chymiſts, mathematicians, pro- rs, and the reſt of that ſpeculative tribe, who ſpend their in aerial ſtudies, by no means calculated to improve the lties of the mind, or to enlarge the number of ideas; ma- naticians (I mean thoſe only who are entirely devoted to r circles, their teleſcopes, and their laboratory) being a of men ſo very abſtracted from all ſublunary affairs, that ce one in twenty of them can give you a rational anſwer. vever, indeed, a certain degree of mathematical knowledge without diſpute, extremely neceſſary in the purſuit of the alapian ſcience, architecture, and other ſpecies of mechanics. When the ſoul rambles after a thouſand chimæras, and the brain

uſual after long abſences. But repeating his viſits often, expreſſing his joy to find me in good health, aſking whether I were now ſettled for life; adding, that he intended a voyage to the Eaſt-Indies in two months; at laſt he plainly invited me, though with ſome apologies, to be ſurgeon of the ſhip; that I ſhould have another ſurgeon under me, beſides our two mates; that my ſalary ſhould be double to the uſual pay; and that having experienced my knowledge in ſea affairs to be at leaſt equal to his, he would enter into any engagement to follow my advice, as much as if I had ſhared in the command.

He ſaid ſo many other obliging things, and I knew him to be ſo honeſt a man, that I could not reject his propoſal; the thirſt I had of ſeeing the world, notwithſtanding my paſt misfortunes, continuing as violent as ever. The only difficulty that remained, was to perſuade my wife, whoſe conſent however I at laſt obtained by the proſpect of advantage ſhe propoſed to her children.

We ſet out the 5th day of Auguſt 1706, and arrived at Fort St. George the 11th of April 1707. We ſtayed there three weeks to refreſh our crew, many of whom were ſick. From thence we went to Tonquin, where the captain reſolved to continue ſome time, becauſe many of the goods he intended to buy were not ready, nor could he expect to be diſpatched in ſeveral months. Therefore, in hopes to defray ſome of the charges he muſt be at, he bought a ſloop, loaded it with ſeveral

brain is wholly abſorbed in the conſideration of the ſeveral powers of attraction, repulſion, and the circulation of the heavenly bodies; or when a projector with ſooty hands and face, is employed in his laboratory in producing a conſiderable degree of cold, in order to refrigerate the air, and qualify the raging of the dog ſtar, which exactly anſwers to the project of extracting ſun-beams out of cucumbers; ſuch follies and extravagancies are certainly the objects of deriſion. And accordingly Dr. Swift has laughed egregiouſly in the voyage to Laputa, and exerted a vein of humour, not againſt the whole tribe of chymiſts, projectors, and mathematicians in general; but againſt thoſe, and thoſe only, who deſpiſe the uſeful branches of ſcience and waſte their lives in the purſuit of aerial vanities and extravagancies. *Swift.*

ſo

goods, wherewith the Tonquineſe uſually trade
neighbouring iſlands, and putting fourteen men on
whereof three were of the country, he appointed
ler of the ſloop, and gave me power to traffic,
ıe tranſacted his affairs at Tonquin.

had not ſailed above three days, when, a great
riſing, we were driven five days to the north-north-
ıd then to the eaſt; after which we had fair wea-
ıut ſtill with a pretty ſtrong gale from the weſt.
the tenth day we were chaced by two pyrates,
on overtook us; for my ſloop was ſo deep laden,
e ſailed very ſlow, neither were we in a condition
nd ourſelves.

were boarded about the ſame time by both the
ı, who entered furiouſly at the head of their men;
ding us all proſtrate upon our faces (for ſo I gave
they pinioned us with ſtrong ropes, and, ſetting a
ıpon us, went to ſearch the ſloop.

ſerved among them a Dutchman, who ſeemed to
ome authority, though he was not commander of
ſhip. He knew us by our countenances to be
ımen, and jabbering to us in his own language,
we ſhould be tied back to back, and thrown into
. I ſpoke Dutch tolerably well; I told him who
:e, and begged him, in conſideration of our being
ıns and proteſtants of neighbouring countries in
lliance, that he would move the captains to take
ity on us. This inflamed his rage, he repeated
eatenings, and turning to his companions, ſpoke
reat vehemence in the Japaneſe language, as I ſup-
ıften uſing the word *chriſtianos*.

: largeſt of the two pyrate ſhips was commanded by
ineſe captain, who ſpoke a little Dutch, but very
ectly. He came up to me, and after ſeveral que-
which I anſwered in great humility, he ſaid we
not die. I made the captain a very low bow, and
urning to the Dutchman ſaid, I was ſorry to find
mercy in an heathen, than in a brother chriſtian.
had ſoon reaſon to repent thoſe fooliſh words: for
nalicious reprobate, having often endeavoured in
ɔ perſuade both the captains that I might be thrown
ıe ſea (which they would not yield to after the pro-
miſe

miſe made me that I ſhould not die) however prevailed ſo far as to have a puniſhment inflicted on me, worſe, in all human appearance, than death itſelf. My men were ſent by an equal diviſion into both the pyrate ſhips, and my ſloop new manned. As to myſelf, it was determined that I ſhould be ſet a-drift in a ſmall canoe, with paddles and a ſail, and four days proviſions, which laſt the Japaneſe captain was ſo kind to double out of his own ſtores, and would permit no man to ſearch me. I go down into the canoe, while the Dutchman ſtanding upon the deck loaded me with all the curſes and injurious terms his language could afford.

About an hour before we ſaw the pyrates I had taken an obſervation, and found we were in the latitude of 46 N. and of longitude 183. When I was at ſome diſtance from the pyrates, I diſcovered by my pocket-glaſs ſeveral iſlands to the ſouth-eaſt. I ſet up my ſail, the wind being fair, with a deſign to reach the neareſt of thoſe iſlands, which I made ſhift to do in about three hours. It was all rocky, however I got many birds eggs, and ſtriking fire I kindled ſome heath and dry ſea-weed, by which I roaſted my eggs. I eat no other ſupper, being reſolved to ſpare my proviſions as much as I could. I paſſed the night under the ſhelter of a rock, ſtrewing ſome heath under me, and ſlept pretty well.

The next day I ſailed to another iſland, and thence to a third and fourth, ſometimes uſing my ſail, and ſometimes my paddles. But, not to trouble the reader with a particular account of my diſtreſſes, let it ſuffice, that on the fifth day I arrived at the laſt iſland in my ſight, which lay ſouth-ſouth-eaſt to the former.

This iſland was at a greater diſtance than I expected, and I did not reach it in leſs than five hours. I encompaſſed it almoſt round, before I could find a convenient place to land in, which was a ſmall creek about three times the wideneſs of my canoe. I found the iſland to be all rocky, only a little intermingled with tufts of graſs, and ſweet ſmelling herbs. I took out my ſmall proviſions, and after having refreſhed myſelf, I ſecured the remainder in a cave, whereof there were great numbers. I gathered plenty of eggs upon the rocks, and got a quantity of dry ſea-weed, and parched graſs, which I deſign-

ed

ndle the next day, and roaſt my eggs as well as (for I had about me my flint, ſteel, match, and -glaſs.) I lay all night in the cave where I had my proviſions. My bed was the ſame dry graſs -weed which I intended for fewel. I ſlept very or the diſquiets of my mind prevailed over my ſs, and kept me awake. I conſidered how im- it was to preſerve my life in ſo deſolate a place, v miſerable my end muſt be. Yet found myſelf s and deſponding, that I had not the heart to id before I could get ſpirits enough to creep out ave, the day was far advanced. I walked a while the rocks, the ſky was perfectly clear, and the ot, that I was forced to turn my face from it; l on a ſudden it became obſcure, as I thought, in r very different from what happens by the inter- of a cloud. I turned back, and perceived a vaſt ody between me and the ſun, moving forwards the iſland: it ſeemed to be about two miles high, the ſun ſix or ſeven minutes, but I did not ob- ie air to be much colder, or the ſky more darken- n if I had ſtood under the ſhade of a mountain. proached nearer over the place where I was, it d to be a firm ſubſtance, the bottom flat, ſmooth, ning very bright from the reflexion of the ſea be- ſtood upon a height about two hundred yards e ſhore, and ſaw this vaſt body deſcending almoſt allel with me, at leſs than an Engliſh mile diſtance. out my pocket-perſpective, and could plainly diſ- umbers of people moving up and down the ſides of h appeared to be ſloping; but, what thoſe peo- e doing, I was not able to diſtinguiſh.

natural love of life gave me ſome inward motions and I was ready to entertain a hope, that this ad- might ſome way or other help to deliver me from olate place and condition I was in. But at the me the reader can hardly conceive my aſtoniſh- to behold an iſland in the air, inhabited by men, ere able (as it ſhould ſeem) to raiſe or ſink, or into a progreſſive motion, as they pleaſed. But ng at that time in a diſpoſition to philoſophiſe upon enomenon, I rather choſe to obſerve what courſe

the iſland would take, becauſe it ſeemed for a wh
ſtill. Yet ſoon after it advanced nearer, and
the ſides of it encompaſſed with ſeveral gradati
leries, and ſtairs at certain intervals to deſcend
to the other. In the loweſt gallery I beheld
ple fiſhing with long angling rods, and others l
I waved my cap (for my hat was long ſince
and my handkerchief towards the iſland; anc
nearer approach I called and ſhouted with
ſtrength of my voice; and then, looking circun
beheld a crowd gathered to that ſide which w
my view. I found by their pointing towards
each other, that they plainly diſcovered me,
they made no return to my ſhouting. But
four or five men running in great haſte up the ſ
top of the iſland, who then diſappeared. I happ
ly to conjecture, that theſe were ſent for orde
perſon in authority upon this occaſion.

The number of people encreaſed, and in leſs
an hour, the iſland was moved and raiſed in ſu
ner, that the loweſt gallery appeared in a paral
than an hundred yards diſtance from the heigh
ſtood. I then put myſelf into the moſt ſuppli
ſtures, and ſpoke in the humbleſt accent, but re
anſwer. Thoſe, who ſtood neareſt over-a
ſeemed to be perſons of diſtinction, as I ſuppoſe
habit. They conferred earneſtly with each oth
ing often upon me. At length one of them cal
a clear, polite, ſmooth dialect, not unlike in
the Italian, and therefore I returned an anſw
language, hoping at leaſt, that the cadence migh
agreeable to his ears. Although neither of us u
the other, yet my meaning was eaſily known
people ſaw the diſtreſs I was in.

They made ſigns for me to come down from
and go towards the ſhore, which I accordingly
the flying iſland being raiſed to a convenient h
verge directly over me, a chain was let down
loweſt gallery, with a ſeat faſtened to the bot
I fixed myſelf, and was drawn up by pullies.

CHAP. II.

The humours and diſpoſitions of the Laputians *deſcribed. An account of their learning. Of the King, and his court. The author's reception there. The inhabitants ſubject to fear and diſquietudes. An account of the women.*

AT my alighting I was ſurrounded with a crowd of people, but thoſe who ſtood neareſt ſeemed to be of better quality. They beheld me with all the marks and circumſtances of wonder; neither indeed was I much in their debt; having never till then ſeen a race of mortals ſo ſingular in their ſhapes, habits, and countenances. Their heads were all reclined either to the right or the left; one of their eyes turned inward, and the other directly up to the zenith *. Their outward garments were adorned with the figures of ſuns, moons, and ſtars, interwoven with thoſe of fiddles, flutes, harps, trumpets, guittars, harpſicords, and many other inſtruments of muſic unknown to us in Europe. I obſerved here and there many in the habit of ſervants, with a blown bladder faſtened like a flayl to the end of a ſhort ſtick, which they carried in their hands. In each bladder was a ſmall quantity of dried peaſe, or little pebbles (as I was afterwards informed.) With theſe bladders they now and then flapped the mouths and ears of thoſe who ſtood near them, of which practice I could not then conceive the meaning. It ſeems the minds of theſe people are ſo taken up with intenſe ſpeculations, that they neither can ſpeak, nor attend to the diſcourſes of others, without being rouſed by ſome external action upon the organs of ſpeech and hearing; for which reaſon, thoſe perſons who are able to afford it, always keep a *flapper* (the original is *climenole*) in their family, as one of their domeſtics, nor ever walk abroad or make viſits without him. And the buſineſs

* By this deſcription the author intended to ridicule thoſe who waſte life in ſpeculative ſcience, the powers of whoſe minds are as abſurdly employed as the eyes of the Laputians. *Hawkeſ.*

of this officer is, when two, three, or more pe
in company, gently to ſtrike with his bladder th
of him who is to ſpeak, and the right ear of him
to whom the ſpeaker addreſſeth himſelf. This
likewiſe employed diligently to attend his maſt
walks, and upon occaſion to give him a ſoft fla
eyes, becauſe he is always ſo wrapped up in c
that he is in manifeſt danger of falling down ev
pice, and bouncing his head againſt every poſt
the ſtreets, of juſtling others, or being juſtled hi
the kennel.

It was neceſſary to give the reader this inſ
without which he would be at the ſame loſs wi
underſtand the proceedings of theſe people, as
ducted me up the ſtairs to the top of the iſland,
thence to the royal palace. While we were
they forgot ſeveral times what they were about
me to myſelf, till their memories were again
their *flappers*; for they appeared altogether unm
the ſight of my foreign habit and countenance, a
ſhouts of the vulgar, whoſe thoughts and m
more diſengaged.

At laſt we entered the palace, and proceede
chamber of preſence, where I ſaw the King ſea
throne, attended on each ſide by perſons of pri
ty. Before the throne was a large table filled w
and ſpheres, and mathematical inſtruments of
His Majeſty took not the leaſt notice of us, alth
entrance was not without ſufficient noiſe by the
of all perſons belonging to the court. But he
deep in a problem, and we attended at leaſt an
fore he could ſolve it. There ſtood by him on
a young page with flaps in their hands, and whe
he was at leiſure, one of them gently ſtruck h
and the other his right ear; at which he ſtarte
awaked on the ſudden, and looking towards n
company I was in, recollected the occaſion of
ing, whereof he had been informed before.
ſome words, whereupon immediately a young
a flap came up to my ſide, and flapt me gently on
ear, but I made ſigns, as well as I could, that
occaſion for ſuch an inſtrument; which, as I

gave his Majeſty and the whole court a very mean
of my underſtanding. The King, as far as I could
ge, asked me ſeveral queſtions, and I addreſſed
o him in all the languages I had. When it was
hat I could neither underſtand, nor be under-
was conducted by his order to an apartment in
ce, (this prince being diſtinguiſhed above all his
ſors for his hoſpitality to ſtrangers) where two
were appointed to attend me. My dinner was
, and four perſons of quality, whom I remember-
ve ſeen very near the King's perſon, did me the
:o dine with me. We had two courſes, of three
ich. In the firſt courſe there was a ſhoulder of
cut into an æquilateral triangle, a piece of beef
nomboides, and a pudding into a cycloid. The
ourſe was two ducks truſſed up into the form of
ſauſages and puddings reſembling flutes and haut-
id a breaſt of veal in the ſhape of a harp. The
cut our bread into cones, cylinders, parallelo-
and ſeveral other mathematical figures.
e we were at dinner, I made bold to ask the names
ll things in their language, and thoſe noble per-
the aſſiſtance of their *flappers* delighted to give
ers, hoping to raiſe my admiration of their great
if I could be brought to converſe with them.
on able to call for bread and drink, or whatever
anted.
dinner my company withdrew, and a perſon was
ie by the King's order, attended by a *flapper*. He
with him pen, ink, and paper, and three or four
giving me to underſtand by ſigns, that he was ſent
me the language. We ſat together four hours,
time I wrote down a great number of words in
with the tranſlations over-againſt them; I like-
de a ſhift to learn ſeveral ſhort ſentences. For
r would order one of my ſervants to fetch ſome,
o turn about, to make a bow, to ſit, or to ſtand,
, and the like. Then I took down the ſentence
ag. He ſhewed me alſo in one of his books the
f the ſun, moon, and ſtars, the zodiac, the tro-
d polar circles, together with the denominations
figures of planes and ſolids. He gave me the

names and deſcriptions of all the muſical inſtruments, the general terms of art in playing on each of t After he had left me, I placed all my words with interpretations in alphabetical order. And thus in days, by the help of a very faithful memory, I got inſight into their language.

The word, which I interpret the *flying* or *i iſland*, is in the original Laputa, whereof I could learn the true etymology. Lap in the old obſolete guage ſignifieth *high*, and *untuh* a *governor*, from they ſay by corruption was derived Laputa, from L tuh. But I do not approve of this derivation, ſeems to be a little ſtrained. I ventured to offer learned among them a conjecture of my own, tha puta was *quaſi lap outed; lap* ſignifying properl dancing of the ſun-beams in the ſea, and *outed* a which however I ſhall not obtrude, but ſubmit to t dicious reader.

Thoſe to whom the King had entruſted me, obſ how ill I was clad, ordered a taylor to come next ing, and take meaſure for a ſuit of cloaths. Thi rator did his office after a different manner from t his trade in Europe. He firſt took my altitude by drant, and then with rule and compaſſes deſcrib dimenſions and out-lines of my whole body, all w entered upon paper; and in ſix days brought my very ill made, and quite out of ſhape, by happe miſtake a figure in the calculation. But my comfo that I obſerved ſuch accidents very frequent, an regarded.

During my confinement for want of cloaths, an indiſpoſition that held me ſome days longer, I m larged my dictionary; and when I went next to co able to underſtand many things the king ſpoke, an turn him ſome kind of anſwers. His Majeſty ha orders, that the iſland ſhould move north-eaſt and to the vertical point over Lagado, the metropoli whole kingdom below upon the firm earth. It bout ninety leagues diſtant, and our voyage laſte days and an half. I was not in the leaſt ſenſible progreſſive motion made in the air by the iſland. ſecond morning about eleven a-clock the King hi

attended by his nobility, courtiers and officers, hav-
pared all their muſical inſtruments, played on them
e hours without intermiſſion, ſo that I was quite
with the noiſe; neither could I poſſibly gueſs the
g, till my tutor informed me. He ſaid, that the
of their iſland had their ears adapted to hear the
f the ſpheres, which always played at certain po-
and the court was now prepared to bear their part,
tever inſtrument they moſt excelled.

ur journey towards Lagado, the capital city, his
r ordered that the iſland ſhould ſtop over certain
and villages, from whence he might receive the
is of his ſubjects. And to this purpoſe ſeveral
eads were let down with ſmall weights at the bot-
On theſe packthreads the people ſtrung their peti-
which mounted up directly, like the ſcraps of pa-
ened by ſchool-boys at the end of the ſtring that
heir kite. Sometimes we received wine and vic-
om below, which were drawn up by pullies.

knowledge I had in mathematics gave me great
e in acquiring their phraſeology, which depended
pon that ſcience and muſic; and in the latter I was
killed. Their ideas are perpetually converſant in
id figures. If they would, for example, praiſe the
of a woman, or any other animal, they deſcribe
ombs, circles, parallelograms, ellipſes, and other
rical terms, or by words of art drawn from muſic,
s here to repeat. I obſerved in the King's kitchen
s of mathematical and muſical inſtruments, after
ires of which they cut up the joints that were
to his Majeſty's table.

ir houſes are very ill built, the walls bevil, with
: right angle in any apartment; and this defect a-
rom the contempt they bear to practical geometry,
hey deſpiſe as vulgar and mechanic, thoſe inſtruc-
ey give being too refined for the intellectuals of
orkmen, which occaſions perpetual miſtakes. And
h they are dextrous enough upon a piece of paper
management of the rule, the pencil, and the di-
yet in the common actions and behaviour of life I
ot ſeen a more clumſy, awkward, and unhandy
, nor ſo ſlow and perplexed in their conceptions

upon

and mind being ſhut up within the two for
ſciences.

Moſt of them, and eſpecially thoſe who
aſtronomical part, have great faith in judici
although they are aſhamed to own it publicly.
I chiefly admired, and thought altogether una
was the ſtrong diſpoſition I obſerved in them to
and politics, perpetually enquiring into public
ing their judgments in matters of ſtate, and
diſputing every inch of a party opinion. I
obſerved the ſame diſpoſition among moſt of
maticians I have known in Europe, although
ver diſcover the leaſt analogy between the tw
unleſs thoſe people ſuppoſe, that becauſe
circle hath as many degrees as the largeſt; th
regulation and management of the world requ
abilities, than the handling and turning of a
I rather take this quality to ſpring from a ve
infirmity of human nature, inclining us to be
ous and conceited in matters where we have
cern, and for which we are leaſt adapted eith
or nature.

Theſe people are under continual diſquiet
enjoying a minute's peace of mind; and their
ces proceed from cauſes, which very little af

. For, if in its perihelion it ſhould approach certain degree of the ſun (as by their calcula- y have reaſon to dread) it will receive a degree en thouſand times more intenſe, than that of red ing iron; and, in its abſence from the ſun, car- ing tail ten hundred thouſand and fourteen miles rough which if the earth ſhould paſs at the di- one hundred thouſand miles from the *nucleus*, body of the comet, it muſt in its paſſage be ſet and reduced to aſhes. That the ſun, daily its rays without any nutriment to ſupply them, ſt be wholly conſumed and annihilated; which ttended with the deſtruction of this earth and planets that receive their light from it.*

are ſo perpetually alarmed with the apprehenſi- eſe, and the like impending dangers, that they er ſleep quietly in their beds, nor have any re- the common pleaſures or amuſements of life. ey meet an acquaintance in the morning, the lion is about the ſun's health, how he looked at g and riſing, and what hopes they have to avoid e of the approaching comet. This converſati- are apt to run into with the ſame temper, that over in delighting to hear terrible ſtories of ſpi- hobgoblins, which they greedily liſten to, and go to bed for fear.

romen of the iſland have abundance of vivacity; temn their huſbands, and are exceedingly fond ers, whereof there is always a conſiderable num- the continent below attending at court, either irs of the ſeveral towns and corporations, or n particular occaſions, but are much deſpiſed, hey want the ſame endowments. Among theſe chuſe their gallants: but the vexation is, that with too much eaſe and ſecurity, for the huſband ſo rapt in ſpeculation, that the miſtreſs and lov- proceed to the greateſt familiarities before his e be but provided with paper and implements, out his *flapper* at his ſide.

*Theſe were ſuppoſitions of perſons eminent in their mathematical knowledge. *Hawkeſ.*

The

The wives and daughters lament their confinement
the iſland, although I think it the moſt delicious ſpot
ground in the world; and although they live here in t
greateſt plenty and magnificence, and are allowed to
whatever they pleaſe, they long to ſee the world, a
take the diverſions of the metropolis, which they are n
allowed to do without a particular licence from the Kin
and this is not eaſy to be obtained, becauſe the people
quality have found by frequent experience, how hard
is to perſuade their women to return from below. I w
told, that a great court lady, who had ſeveral childr
is married to the prime miniſter, the richeſt ſubject in t
kingdom, a very graceful perſon, extremely fond of h
and lives in the fineſt palace of the iſland, went down
Lagado on the pretence of health, there hid herſelf
ſeveral months, till the King ſent a warrant to ſearch
her, and ſhe was found in an obſcure eating-houſe all
rags, having pawned her cloaths to maintain an old
formed foot-man, who beat her every day, and in wh
company ſhe was taken much againſt her will. And
though her huſband received her with all poſſible ki
neſs, and without the leaſt reproach, ſhe ſoon after c
trived to ſteal down again with all her jewels to the ſa
gallant, and hath not been heard of ſince.

This may perhaps paſs with the reader rather for
European or Engliſh ſtory, than for one of a country
remote. But he may pleaſe to conſider, that the
prices of women-kind are not limited by any climate
nation, and that they are much more uniform than
be eaſily imagined.

In about a month's time, I had made a tolerable p
ficiency in their language, and was able to anſwer m
of the King's queſtions, when I had the honour to att
him. His Majeſty diſcovered not the leaſt curioſity
enquire into the laws, government, hiſtory, religion,
manners of the countries where I had been, but confi
his queſtions to the ſtate of mathematics, and receiv
the account I gave him with great contempt and indif
rence, though often rouſed by his *flapper* on each ſide.

CHAP. III.

phænomenon ſolved by modern philoſophy and aſtronomy. The Laputians *great improvements in the latter. The King's method of ſuppreſſing inſurrections.*

Deſired leave of this prince to ſee the curioſities of the iſland, which he was graciouſly pleaſed to grant, d ordered my tutor to attend me. I chiefly wanted to ow, to what cauſe in art or in nature it owed its ſeve- l motions, whereof I will now give a philoſophical ac- unt to the reader.

The flying or floating iſland is exactly circular, its di- meter 7837 yards, or about four miles and an half, and conſequently contains ten thouſand acres. It is three ndred yards thick. The bottom, or under ſurface, hich appears to thoſe who view it from below, is one en regular plate of adamant, ſhooting up to the height about two hundred yards. Above it lie the ſeveral inerals in their uſual order, and over all is a coat of ch mould, ten or twelve feet deep. The declivity of e upper ſurface, from the circumference to the center, the natural cauſe why all the dews and rains, which ll upon the iſland, are conveyed in ſmall rivulets to- ards the middle, where they are emptied into four large ſons, each of about half a mile in circuit, and two ndred yards diſtant from the center. From theſe ba- ns the water is continually exhaled by the ſun in the y-time, which effectually prevents their overflowing. ſides, as it is in the power of the monarch to raiſe the land above the region of clouds and vapours, he can revent the falling of dews and rains whenever he pleaſes. or the higheſt clouds cannot riſe above two miles, as turaliſts agree, at leaſt they were never known to do ſo that country.

At the center of the iſland there is a chaſm about fifty rds in diameter, from whence the aſtronomers deſcend to a large dome, which is therefore called *flandona gnole*, or the *aſtronomer's cave*, ſituated at the depth a hundred yards beneath the upper ſurface of the ada- mant.

mant. In this cave are twenty lamps continually b
ing, which from the reflexion of the adamant, c
ſtrong light into every part. The place is ſtored
great variety of ſextants, quadrants, teleſcopes, a
labes, and other aſtronomical inſtruments. But the g
eſt curioſity, upon which the fate of the iſland depe
is a loadſtone of a prodigious ſize, in ſhape reſembli
weaver's ſhuttle. It is in length ſix yards, and in
thickeſt part at leaſt three yards over. This magn
ſuſtained by a very ſtrong axle of adamant paſſing thr
its middle, upon which it plays, and is poiſed ſo exa
that the weakeſt hand can turn it. It is hooped ro
with an hollow cylinder of adamant, four feet deep
many thick, and twelve yards in diameter, placed h
zontally, and ſupported by eight adamantine feet,
ſix yards high. In the middle of the concave ſide t
is a groove twelve inches deep, in which the extrem
of the axle are lodged, and turned round as there is
caſion.

The ſtone cannot be moved from its place by
force, becauſe the hoop and its feet are one contin
piece with that body of adamant, which conſtitutes
bottom of the iſland.

By means of this load-ſtone the iſland is made to
and fall, and move from one place to another.
with reſpect to that part of the earth over which the
narch preſides, the ſtone is endued at one of its
with an attractive power, and at the other with a re
ſive. Upon placing the magnet erect, with its attrac
end towards the earth, the iſland deſcends; but w
the repelling extremity points down-wards, the iſ
mounts directly upwards. When the poſition of
ſtone is oblique, the motion of the iſland is ſo too:
in this magnet the forces always act in lines parallel t
direction.

By this oblique motion the iſland is conveyed to d
rent parts of the monarch's dominions. To explain
manner of its progreſs, let *A B* repreſent a line dr
croſs the dominions of Balnibarbi, let the line *c d* re
ſent the load-ſtone, of which let *d* be the repelling
and *c* the attracting end, the iſland being over *C*; let
ſtone be placed in the poſition *c d*, with its repelling
do

downwards; then the iſland will be driven upwards obliquely towards *D*. When it is arrived at *D*, let the ſtone be turned upon its axle till its attracting end points towards *E*, and then the iſland will be carried obliquely towards *E*; where, if the ſtone be again turned upon its axle till it ſtands in the poſition *E F*, with its repelling point downward, the iſland will riſe obliquely towards *F*, where, by directing the attracting end towards *G*, the iſland may be carried to *G*, and from *G* to *H*, by turning the ſtone, ſo as to make its repelling extremity point directly downward. And thus, by changing the ſituation of the ſtone as often as there is occaſion, the iſland is made to riſe and fall by turns in an oblique direction, and by thoſe alternate riſings and fallings (the obliquity being not conſiderable) is conveyed from one part of the dominions to the other.

But it muſt be obſerved, that this iſland cannot move beyond the extent of the dominions below, nor can it riſe above the height of four miles. For which the aſtronomers (who have written large ſyſtems concerning the ſtone) aſſign the following reaſon: that the magnetic virtue does not extend beyond the diſtance of four miles, and that the mineral, which acts upon the ſtone in the bowels of the earth, and in the ſea about ſix leagues diſtant from the ſhore, is not diffuſed through the whole globe, but terminated with the limits of the King's dominions; and it was eaſy, from the great advantage of ſuch a ſuperior ſituation, for a prince to bring under his obedience, whatever country lay within the attraction of that magnet.

When the ſtone is put parallel to the plane of the horizon, the iſland ſtandeth ſtill; for in that caſe the extremities of it, being at equal diſtance from the earth, act with equal force, the one in drawing downwards, the other in puſhing upwards, and conſequently no motion can enſue.

This load-ſtone is under the care of certain aſtronomers, who from time to time give it ſuch poſitions as the monarch directs. They ſpend the greateſt part of their lives in obſerving the celeſtial bodies, which they do by the aſſiſtance of glaſſes far excelling ours in goodneſs. For, although their largeſt teleſcopes do not exceed three

ſeet, they magnify much more than thoſe of an h
with us, and ſhew the ſtars with greater clearneſs.
advantage hath enabled them to extend their diſc
much farther than our aſtronomers in Europe; fo
have made a catalogue of ten thouſand fixed ſtars,
as the largeſt of ours do not contain above one thi
of that number. They have likewiſe diſcovered t
ſer ſtars, or *ſatellites*, which revolve about Mars,
of the innermoſt is diſtant from the center of the p
planet, exactly three of his diameters, and the out
five; the former revolves in the ſpace of ten hou
the latter in twenty-one and an half; ſo that the
of their periodical times are very near in the ſame p
tion with the cubes of their diſtance from the ce
Mars, which evidently ſhews them to be governed
ſame law of gravitation, that influences the other h
bodies.

They have obſerved ninety-three different comet
ſettled their periods with great exactneſs. If this h
(and they affirm it with great confidence) it is n
be wiſhed, that their obſervations were made
whereby the theory of comets, which at preſent
lame and defective, might be brought to the ſam
fection with other parts of aſtronomy.

The King would be the moſt abſolute prince in
niverſe, if he could but prevail on a miniſtry to jo
him; but theſe having their eſtates below on th
nent, and conſidering that the office of a favourite
very uncertain tenure, would never conſent to the
ing their country.

If any town ſhould engage in rebellion or muti
into violent factions, or refuſe to pay the uſual t
the King hath two methods of reducing them to
ence. The firſt and the mildeſt courſe is by keep
iſland hovering over ſuch a town, and the lands al
whereby he can deprive them of the benefit of t
and the rain, and conſequently afflict the inhabitan
dearth and diſeaſes. And if the crime deſerve i
are at the ſame time pelted from above with great
againſt which they have no defence but by creepir
cellars or caves, while the roofs of their houſes are
to pieces. But if they ſtill continue obſtinate,

to raiſe inſurrections, he proceeds to the laſt remedy, letting the iſland drop directly upon their heads, hich makes an univerſal deſtruction both of houſes and n. However, this is an extremity to which the prince ſeldom driven, neither indeed is he willing to put it in ecution, nor dare his miniſters adviſe him to an action, hich, as it would render them odious to the people, ſo would be a great damage to their own eſtates, which all below, for the iſland is the King's demeſn.

But there is ſtill indeed a more weighty reaſon, why : Kings of this country have been always averſe from ecuting ſo terrible an action, unleſs upon the utmoſt ceſſity. For if the town, intended to be deſtroyed, ould have in it any tall rocks, as it generally falls out the larger cities, a ſituation probably choſen at firſt h a view to prevent ſuch a cataſtrophe; or if it abound high ſpires, or pillars of ſtone, a ſudden fall might en- ger the bottom or under ſurface of the iſland, which, hough it conſiſt, as I have ſaid, of one intire adamant o hundred yards thick, might happen to crack by too at a ſhock, or burſt by approaching too near the fires m the houſes below, as the backs both of iron and ne will often do in our chimnies. Of all this the peo- are well appriſed, and underſtand how far to carry ir obſtinacy, where their liberty or property is con- ned. And the King, when he is higheſt provoked, l moſt determined to preſs a city to rubbiſh, orders the nd to deſcend with great gentleneſs, out of a pretence tenderneſs to his people; but indeed for fear of break- ; the adamantine bottom; in which caſe it is the opi- n of all their philoſophers, that the load-ſtone could longer hold it up, and the whole maſs would fall to ground.

By a fundamental law of this realm, neither the King, r either of his two elder ſons, are permitted to leave iſland, nor the Queen, till ſhe is paſt child-bearing.

CHAP. IV.

The author leaves Laputa, *is conveyed to* Balnibarbi, *arrives at the metropolis. A deſcription of the metropolis, and the country adjoining. The author hoſpitably received by a great lord. His converſation with that lord.*

ALTHOUGH I cannot ſay that I was ill-treated in this iſland, yet I muſt confeſs I thought myſelf too much neglected, not without ſome degree of contempt. For neither prince nor people appeared to be curious in any part of knowledge, except mathematics and muſic, wherein I was far their inferior, and upon that account very little regarded.

On the other ſide, after having ſeen all the curioſities of the iſland, I was very deſirous to leave it, being heartily weary of thoſe people. They were indeed excellent in two ſciences, for which I have great eſteem, and wherein I am not unverſed, but at the ſame time ſo abſtracted and involved in ſpeculation, that I never met with ſuch diſagreeable companions. I converſed only with women, tradeſmen, *flappers*, and court pages, during two months of my abode there; by which at laſt I rendered myſelf extremely contemptible; yet theſe were the only people, from whom I could ever receive a reaſonable anſwer.

I had obtained by hard ſtudy a good degree of knowledge in their language; I was weary of being confined to an iſland, where I received ſo little countenance, and reſolved to leave it with the firſt opportunity.

There was a great lord at court, nearly related to the King, and for that reaſon alone, uſed with reſpect. He was univerſally reckoned the moſt ignorant and ſtupid perſon among them. He had performed many eminent ſervices for the crown, had great natural and acquired parts adorned with integrity and honour, but ſo ill an ear for muſic, that his detractors reported he had been often known to beat time in the wrong place; neither could *his* tutors, without extreme difficulty, teach him to diſ-

tin

ſtrate the moſt eaſy propoſition in the mathematics.
vas pleaſed to ſhew me many marks of favour, often
ne the honour of a viſit, deſired to be informed in
affairs of Europe, the laws and cuſtoms, the man-
and learning of the ſeveral countries where I had
:lled. He liſtened to me with great attention, and
: very wiſe obſervations on all I ſpoke. He had two
ers attending him for ſtate, but never made uſe of
ı, except at court, and in viſits of ceremony, and
ld always command them to withdraw, when we were
e together.

entreated this illuſtrious perſon to intercede in my
lf with his Majeſty for leave to depart, which he ac-
ingly did, as he was pleaſed to tell me, with regret:
ndeed he had made me ſeveral offers very advantage-
which however I refuſed with expreſſions of the
eſt acknowledgment.

n the 16th of February I took leave of his Majeſty
the court. The King made me a preſent to the va-
f about two hundred pounds Engliſh, and my pro-
r, his kinſman, as much more, together with a let-
f recommendation to a friend of his in Lagado, the
opolis: the iſland being then hovering over a moun-
about two miles from it, I was let down from the
ſt gallery, in the ſame manner as I had been taken

he continent, as far as it is ſubject to the monarch
ıe *flying iſland*, paſſes under the general name of
barbi; and the metropolis, as I ſaid before, is call-
agado. I felt ſome little ſatisfaction in finding my-
on firm ground. I walked to the city without any
ern, being clad like one of the natives, and ſuffici-
inſtructed to converſe with them. I ſoon found out
perſon's houſe to whom I was recommended, pre-
d my letter from his friend the grandee in the iſland,
was received with much kindneſs. This great lord,
e name was Munodi, ordered me an apartment in his
houſe, where I continued during my ſtay, and was
tained in a moſt hoſpitable manner.

he next morning after my arrival he took me in his
ot to ſee the town, which is about half the bigneſs
ondon, but the houſes very ſtrangely built, and

lent. I could not forbear admiring at thefe
ances both in town and country; and I mad
ſire my conductor, that he would be pleaſe
to me what could be meant by ſo many
hands, and faces, both in the ſtreets and tl
cauſe I did not diſcover any good effects the
but, on the contrary, I never knew a ſoil
cultivated, houſes ſo ill contrived and ſo i
people whoſe countenances and habit expre
miſery and want.

This lord Munodi was a perſon of the fi
had been ſome years governor of Lagado;
bal of miniſters was diſcharged for inſuffic
ever the King treated him with tenderneſs
meaning man, but of a low contemptible u

When I gave that free cenſure of the co
inhabitants, he made no further anſwer, th
me, that I had not been long enough among
a judgment; and that the different nations
had different cuſtoms; with other common
ſame purpoſe. But, when we returned to
asked me how I liked the building, what abſ
ſerved, and what quarrel I had with the d
of his domeſtics. This he might ſafely do
very thing about him was magnificent, reg

l by farmers in managing their lands; which wholly unaccountable; for except in ſome ces I could not diſcover one ear of corn, or s. But in three hours travelling the ſcene ltered; we came into a moſt beautiful coun- s houſes at ſmall diſtances neatly built, the d, containing vineyards, corn-grounds, and Neither do I remember to have ſeen a more ſpect. His excellency obſerved my coun- ear up; he told me with a ſigh, that there gan, and would continue the ſame, till we to his houſe. That his countrymen ridicu- ſed him for managing his affairs no better, ng ſo ill an example to the kingdom, which followed by very few, ſuch as were old, and weak like himſelf.

at length to the houſe, which was indeed a re, built according to the beſt rules of anci- ire. The fountains, gardens, walks, ave- oves, were all diſpoſed with exact judgment gave due praiſes to every thing I ſaw, where- ency took not the leaſt notice till after ſup- there being no third companion, he told me melancholly air, that he doubted he muſt his houſes in town and country to rebuild e preſent mode, deſtroy all his plantations, rs into ſuch a form as modern uſage requir- the ſame directions to all his tenants, unleſs mit to incur the cenſure of pride, ſingulari- n, ignorance, caprice, and perhaps increaſe diſpleaſure.

admiration I appeared to be under, would niſh; when he had informed me of ſome par- ch probably I never heard of at court, the being too much taken up in their own ſpecu- ve regard to what paſſed here below.

of his diſcourſe was to this effect: that a- ears ago certain perſons went up to Laputa, buſineſs or diverſion, and after five months came back with a very little ſmattering in , but full of volatile ſpirits acquired in that That theſe perſons upon their return began

to diſlike the management of every thing belov
into ſchemes of putting all arts, ſciences, lang
mechanics upon a new foot. To this end the
a royal patent for erecting an academy of pr
Lagado; and the humour prevailed ſo ſtrong
the people, that there is not a town of any c
in the kingdom without ſuch an academy. In
leges the profeſſors contrive new rules and met
griculture and building, and new inſtruments
for all trades and manufactures, whereby, as t
take, one man ſhall do the work of ten, a pal
built in a week, of materials ſo durable, as to l
without repairing. All the fruits of the earth
to maturity at whatever ſeaſon we think fit to
increaſe an hundred-fold more than they do a
with innumerable other happy propoſals. Th
convenience is, that none of theſe projects are
to perfection, and in the mean time the who
lies miſerably waſte, the houſes in ruins, and
without food or cloaths. By all which, inſte
diſcouraged, they are fifty times more violentl
on proſecuting their ſchemes, driven equally
and deſpair; that as for himſelf, being not o
priſing ſpirit, he was content to go on in the
to live in the houſes his anceſtors had built,
they did in every part of life without innovati
ſome few other perſons of quality and gentry
the ſame, but were looked on with an eye of
and ill-will, as enemies to art, ignorant, an
monwealths-men, preferring their own eaſe an
fore the general improvement of their country.

His lordſhip added, that he would not by
particulars prevent the pleaſure I ſhould certai
viewing the grand academy, whither he was
ſhould go. He only deſired me to obſerve a ru
ing upon the ſide of a mountain about three mi
of which he gave me this account: that he h
convenient mill within half a mile of his hou
by a current from a large river, and ſufficient f
family, as well as a great number of his tenan
about ſeven years ago, a club of theſe projecto
him with propoſals to deſtroy this mill, and bui

on the ſide of that mountain, on the long ridge whereof a long canal muſt be cut for a repoſitory of water to be conveyed up by pipes and engines to ſupply the mill, becauſe the wind and air upon a height agitated the water, and thereby made it fitter for motion: and becauſe the water deſcending down a declivity would turn the mill with half the current of a river, whoſe courſe is more upon a level. He ſaid, that being then not very well with the court, and preſſed by many of his friends, he complied with the propoſal; and after employing an hundred men for two years the work miſcarried, the projectors went off, laying the blame entirely upon him, railing at him ever ſince, and putting others upon the ſame experiment with equal aſſurance of ſucceſs, as well as equal diſappointment.

In a few days we came back to town, and his excellency conſidering the bad character he had in the academy would not go with me himſelf, but recommended me to a friend of his to bear me company thither. My lord was pleaſed to repreſent me as a great admirer of projects, and a perſon of much curioſity, and eaſy belief; which indeed was not without truth; for I had myſelf been a ſort of projector in my younger days.

CHAP. V.

The author permitted to ſee the grand academy of Lagado. *The academy largely deſcribed. The arts wherein the profeſſors employ themſelves* *.

THIS academy is not an entire ſingle building, but a continuation of ſeveral houſes on both ſides of a ſtreet, which growing waſte, was purchaſed and applied to that uſe.

I was

* However wild the deſcription of the flying iſland and the manners and various projects of the philoſophers of Lagado may appear, yet it is a *real* picture embelliſhed with much *latent* wit and humour. It is a ſatire upon thoſe aſtronomers and mathematicians who have ſo entirely dedicated their time to the pla-

nets,

I was received very kindly by the warden, and went for many days to the academy. Every room hath in it one or more projectors; and I believe I could not be in fewer than five hundred rooms.

The first man I saw was of a meagre aspect, with sooty hands and face, his hair and beard long, ragged and singed in several places. His cloaths, shirt, and skin, were all of the same colour. He had been eight years upon a project for extracting sun-beams out of cucumbers, which were to be put into vials hermetically sealed, and let out to warm the air in raw inclement summers. He

nets, that they have been careless of their family and country, and have been chiefly anxious about the œconomy and welfare of the upper worlds. But if we consider Swift's romance in a serious light, we shall find him of opinion, that those determinations in philosophy, which at present seem to the most knowing men to be perfectly well founded and understood, are in reality unsettled, or uncertain, and may perhaps some ages hence be as much decried as the axioms of Aristotle are at this day. Sir Isaac Newton and his notions may hereafter be out of fashion. There is a kind of mode in philosophy, as well as in other things: and such modes often change more from the humour and caprice of men, than either from the unreasonableness or the ill-founded conclusions of the philosophy itself. The reasonings of some philosophers have undoubtedly better foundation than those of others: but I am of opinion, (and Swift seems to be in the same way of thinking) that the most applauded philosophy, hitherto extant, has not fully, clearly, and certainly explained many difficulties in the phænomena of nature: I am induced to believe, that God may have absolutely denied us the perfect knowledge of many points in philosophy, so that we shall never arrive at that perfection, however certain we may suppose ourselves of having attained to it already. Upon the whole, we may say with Tully, *Omnibus fere in rebus, et maxime in physicis, quid non sit citius quam quid sit, dixerim.* Orrery.

This note in general seems to be a testimony of his lordship's approbation, but it is not easy to discover what in particular is meant by the word *real*, since every picture is a real picture, whether it be copied from nature or fancy; and indeed it is equally difficult to conceive how a *picture* of any kind can be embellished with that which is *hidden*. Hawkes.

told

told me, he did not doubt, that in eight years more he ſhould be able to ſupply the governor's gardens with ſunſhine at a reaſonable rate; but he complained that his ſtock was low, and intreated me to give him ſomething as an encouragement to ingenuity, eſpecially ſince this had been a very dear ſeaſon for cucumbers. I made him a ſmall preſent, for my lord had furniſhed me with money on purpoſe, becauſe he knew their practice of begging from all who go to ſee them.

I went into another chamber, but was ready to haſten back, being almoſt overcome with a horrible ſtink. My conductor preſſed me forward, conjuring me in a whiſper to give no offence, which would be highly reſented, and therefore I durſt not ſo much as ſtop my noſe. The projector of this cell was the moſt ancient ſtudent of the academy; his face and beard were of a pale yellow: his hands and cloaths dawbed over with filth. When I was preſented to him he gave me a cloſe embrace (a compliment I could well have excuſed). His employment from his firſt coming into the academy was an operation to reduce human excrement to its original food by ſeparating the ſeveral parts, removing the tincture which it receives from the gall, making the odour exhale, and ſcumming off the ſaliva. He had a weekly allowance from the ſociety of a veſſel filled with human ordure about the bigneſs of a Briſtol barrel.

I ſaw another at work to calcine ice into gun-powder, who likewiſe ſhewed me a treatiſe he had written concerning the malleability of fire, which he intended to publiſh.

There was a moſt ingenious architect, who had contrived a new method for building houſes by beginning at the roof, and working downwards to the foundation, which he juſtified to me by the like practice of thoſe two prudent inſects the bee and the ſpider.

There was a man born blind, who had ſeveral apprentices in his own condition: their employment was to mix colours for painters, which their maſter taught them to diſtinguiſh by feeling and ſmelling. It was indeed my misfortune to find them at that time not very perfect in their leſſons, and the profeſſor himſelf happened to be ge-

nerally

nerally miſtaken. This artiſt is much encourag eſteemed by the whole fraternity.

In another apartment I was highly pleaſed witl jector, who had found a device of plowing the with hogs, to ſave the charges of ploughs, cattle bour. The method is this: in an acre of grou buryat ſix inches diſtance and eight deep, a quar acorns, dates, cheſnuts, and other maſte or veg whereof theſe animals are fondeſt: then you d hundred or more of them into the field, where i days they will root up the whole ground in ſearch food, and make it fit for ſowing, at the ſame ti nuring it with their dung; it is true, upon exp they found the charge and trouble very great, a had little or no crop. However, it is not to be that this invention may be capable of great impro

I went into another room, where the walls anc were all hung round with cobwebs, except a narr ſage for the artiſt to go in and out. At my ent called aloud to me not to diſturb his webs. He ed the fatal miſtake the world had been ſo long in ſilk-worms, while we had ſuch plenty of domeſtic who infinitely excelled the former, becauſe they ſhood how to weave as well as ſpin. And he p farther, that by employing ſpiders the charge (ſilks ſhould be wholly ſaved; whereof I was ful vinced, when he ſhewed me a vaſt number of fl beautifully coloured, wherewith he fed his ſpiders, us that the webs would take a tincture from ther as he had them of all hues, he hoped to fit every fancy, as ſoon as he could find proper food for t of certain gums, oils, and other glutinous matter, a ſtrength and conſiſtence to the threads.

There was an aſtronomer, who had undert place a ſun-dial upon the great weather-cock town-houſe, by adjuſting the annual and diurnal of the earth and ſun, ſo as to anſwer and coinci all accidental turnings of the wind.

I was complaining of a ſmall fit of the choli which my conductor led me into a room where phyſician reſided, who was famous for curing the contrary operations from the ſame inſtrume

had a large pair of bellows with a long ſlender muzzle of ivory: this he conveyed eight inches up the *anus*, and drawing in the wind he affirmed he could make the guts as lank as a dried bladder. But when the diſeaſe was more ſtubborn and violent, he let in the muzzle while the bellows were full of wind, which he diſcharged into the body of the patient; then withdrew the inſtrument to repleniſh it, clapping his thumb ſtrongly againſt the orifice of the fundament; and this being repeated three or four times, the adventitious wind would ruſh out, bringing the noxious along with it (like water put into a pump) and the patient recover. I ſaw him try both experiments upon a dog, but could not diſcern any effect from the former. After the latter the animal was ready to burſt, and made ſo violent a diſcharge, as was very offenſive to me and my companions. The dog died on the ſpot, and we left the doctor endeavouring to recover him by the ſame operation.

I viſited many other apartments, but ſhall not trouble my reader with all the curioſities I obſerved, being ſtudious of brevity.

I had hitherto ſeen only one ſide of the academy, the other being appropriated to the advancers of ſpeculative learning, of whom I ſhall ſay ſomething when I have mentioned one illuſtrious perſon more, who is called among them *the univerſal artiſt*. He told us, he had been thirty years employing his thoughts for the improvement of human life. He had two large rooms full of wonderful curioſities, and fifty men at work. Some were condenſing air into a dry tangible ſubſtance by extracting the nitre, and letting the aqueous or fluid particles percolate; others ſoftening marble for pillows and pin-cuſhions; others petrifying the hoofs of a living horſe to preſerve them from foundering. The artiſt himſelf was at that time buſy upon two great deſigns; the firſt, to ſow land with chaff, wherein he affirmed the true ſeminal virtue to be contained, as he demonſtrated by ſeveral experiments, which I was not skilful enough to comprehend. The other was by a certain compoſition of gums, minerals and vegetables, outwardly applied to prevent the growth of wool upon two young lambs; and he hoped in a yea-

a reaſonable time to propagate the breed of naked ſhee all over the kingdom.

We croſſed a walk to the other part of the academy where as I have already ſaid the projectors in ſpeculativ learning reſided.

The firſt profeſſor I ſaw was in a very large room wit forty pupils about him. After ſalutation obſerving me t look earneſtly upon a frame, which took up the greate part of both the length and breadth of the room, he ſai perhaps I might wonder to ſee him employed in a projec for improving ſpeculative knowledge by practical and me chanical operations. But the world would ſoon be ſen ſible of its uſefulneſs; and he flattered himſelf, that more noble exalted thought never ſprang in any othe man's head. Every one knew, how laborious the uſua method is of attaining to arts and ſciences; whereas by his contrivance the moſt ignorant perſon at a reaſonable charge and with a little bodily labour might write book in philoſophy, poetry, politics, law, mathematics, and theology, without the leaſt aſſiſtance from genius or ſtudy. He then led me to the frame, about the ſides whereof all his pupils ſtood in ranks: It was twenty feet ſquare, placed in the middle of the room. The ſuperficies was compoſed of ſeveral bits of wood about the bigneſs of a dye, but ſome larger than others. They were all linked together by ſlender wires. Theſe bits of wood were covered on every ſquare with paper paſted on them; and on theſe papers were written all the words of their language, in their ſeveral moods, tenſes, and declenſions; but without any order. The profeſſor then deſired me to obſerve; for he was going to ſet his engine at work. The pupils at his command took each of them hold of an iron handle, whereof there were forty fixed round the edges of the frame; and giving them a ſudden turn, the whole diſpoſition of the words was intirely changed. He then commanded ſix and thirty of the lads to read the ſeveral lines ſoftly, as they appeared upon the frame; and where they found three or four words together, that might make part of a ſentence, they dictated to the four remaining boys, who were ſcribes. This work was repeated three or four times, and at every turn, the engine was ſo contrived, that

the

ls ſhifted into new places, as the ſquare bits of
oved upſide down.

urs a-day the young ſtudents were employed in
ur, and the profeſſor ſhewed me ſeveral volumes
olio already collected of broken ſentences, which
led to piece together, and out of thoſe rich ma-
) give the world a compleat body of all arts and
which however might be ſtill improved and
pedited, if the public would raiſe a fund for
nd employing five hundred ſuch frames in La-
d oblige the managers to contribute in common
eral collections.

ured me, that this invention had employed all
hts from his youth: that he had emptied the
cabulary into his frame, and made the ſtricteſt
ion of the general proportion there is in books
the numbers of particles, nouns, and verbs, and
ts of ſpeech *.

my humbleſt acknowledgment to this illuſtrious
r his great communicativeneſs; and promiſed,
had the good fortune to return to my native
that I would do him juſtice, as the ſole inven-
s wonderful machine; the form and contrivance
I deſired leave to delineate upon paper, as in the
e annexed. I told him, although it were the
our learned in Europe to ſteal inventions from
r, who had thereby at leaſt this advantage, that
a controverſy which was the right owner; yet
take ſuch caution, that he ſhould have the ho-
re without a rival.

xt went to the ſchool of languages, where three
ſat in conſultation upon improving that of their
ıtry.

project for a more eaſy and expeditious method of
reatiſe in any ſcience, by a wooden engine, is enter-
atirical; and is aimed at thoſe authors who, inſtead
ng materials from their own thoughts and obſerva-
leſt from dictionaries and common-place books, an ir-
riety, without order, uſe, or deſign:

Ut nec pes nec caput uni
Reddatur formæ. Ovid.

The firſt project was to ſhorten diſcourſe by cuttin polyſyllables into one, and leaving out verbs and pa ticiples; becauſe in reality all things imaginable are b nouns *.

The other project was a ſcheme for entirely aboliſhi all words whatſoever; and this was urged as a great a vantage in point of health, as well as brevity. For it plain, that every word we ſpeak, is in ſome degree a diminution of our lungs by corroſion; and conſequen contributes to the ſhortening of our lives. An expedie was therefore offered, that ſince words are only nam for *things*, it would be more convenient for all men carry about them ſuch *things* as were neceſſary to expr the particular buſineſs they are to diſcourſe on. And t invention would certainly have taken place, to the g eaſe as well as health of the ſubject, if the women in c junction with the vulgar and illiterate had not threate to raiſe a rebellion, unleſs they might be allowed th berty to ſpeak with their tongues, after the manne their forefathers; ſuch conſtant irreconcileable enemie ſcience are the common people. However, many of moſt learned and wiſe adhere to the new ſcheme of preſſing themſelves by *things*, which hath only thi convenience attending it, that if a man's buſineſs be great and of various kinds, he muſt be obliged in pru tion to carry a greater bundle of *things* upon his b unleſs he can afford one or two ſtrong ſervants to a him. I have often beheld two of thoſe ſages almoſt ing under the weight of their packs, like pedlars am us; who, when they met in the ſtreets, would lay their loads, open their ſacks, and hold converſation an hour together; then put up their implements, each other to reſume their burthens, and take their l

* This project is pointed at the pernicious cuſtom of trafficking the Engliſh language, the dialect of which is nat harſh, and that harſhneſs is ſtill increaſed by improper tractions. As Swift was ſcrupulouſly exact in the pronunc of his own tongue, not the leaſt improper expreſſion ever e his cenſure. And I remember to have ſeen in manuſc dictionary of hard words, compoſed by him for the uſe female ſenate. *Orrery.*

But for ſhort converſations a man may carry imple-ents in his pockets and under his arms enough to ſupply m; and in his houſe he cannot be at a loſs. There-re the room, where company meet who practiſe this ', is full of all *things* ready at hand requiſite to furniſh ittor for this kind of artificial converſe.

Another great advantage propoſed by this invention s, that it would ſerve as an univerſal language to be derſtood in all civilized nations, whoſe goods and uten-are generally of the ſame kind, or nearly reſembling, hat their uſes might eaſily be comprehended. And s ambaſſadors would be qualified to treat with foreign ices, or miniſters of ſtate, to whoſe tongues they were r ſtrangers.

was at the mathematical ſchool, where the maſter ht his pupils after a method ſcarce imaginable to us urope. The propoſition and demonſtration were fair-ritten on a thin wafer, with ink compoſed of a cepha-incture. This the ſtudent was to ſwallow upon a ig ſtomach, and for three days following eat nothing ıread and water. As the wafer digeſted, the tincture ated to his brain, bearing the propoſition along with But the ſucceſs hath not hitherto been anſwerable, y by ſome error in the *quantum* or compoſition, and y by the perverſeneſs of lads; to whom this bolus nauſeous, that they generally ſteal aſide and diſ-ge it upwards, before it can operate; neither have been yet perſuaded to uſe ſo long an abſtinence as reſcription requires.

CHAP. VI.

ırther account of the academy. The author propoſes ne improvements, which are honourably received *.

the ſchool of political projectors I was but ill enter-ained; the profeſſors appearing in my judgment ly out of their ſenſes; which is a ſcene that never fails

This chapter is full of ſeverity and ſatire. Sometimes it ırted againſt the legiſlative power; ſometimes againſt par-

fails to make me melancholy. Theſe unhappy people were propoſing ſchemes for perſuading monarchs to chuſe favourites upon the ſcore of their wiſdom, capacity, and virtue; of teaching miniſters to conſult the public good; of rewarding merit, great abilities, and eminent ſervices: of inſtructing princes to know their true intereſt, by placing it on the ſame foundation with that of their people; of chuſing for employments perſons qualified to exerciſe them; with many other wild impoſſible chimæras, that never entered before into the heart of man to conceive; and confirmed in me the old obſervation, that there is nothing ſo extravagant and irrational, which ſome philoſophers have not maintained for truth.

But however I ſhall ſo far do juſtice to this part of the academy, as to acknowledge that all of them were not ſo viſionary. There was a moſt ingenious doctor, who ſeemed to be perfectly verſed in the whole nature and ſyſtem of government. This illuſtrious perſon had very uſefully employed his ſtudies in finding out effectual remedies for all diſeaſes and corruptions, to which the ſeveral kinds of public adminiſtration are ſubject by the vices or infirmities of thoſe who govern, as well as by the licentiouſneſs of thoſe who are to obey. For inſtance; whereas all writers and reaſoners have agreed, that there is a ſtrict univerſal reſemblance between the natural and the political body; can there be any thing more evident, than that the health of both muſt be preſerved and the diſeaſes cured by the ſame preſcriptions? It is allowed, that ſenates and great councils are often troub-

ticular politicians; ſometimes againſt women: and ſometimes it degenerates into filth. True humour ought to be kept up with decency and dignity, or it loſes every tincture of entertainment. Deſcriptions that ſhock our delicacy, cannot have the leaſt good effect upon our minds. They offend us, and we fly precipitately from the ſight. We cannot ſtay long enough to examine, whether wit, ſenſe, or morality, may be couched under ſuch odious appearances. I am ſorry to ſay, that theſe ſort of deſcriptions, which are too often interſperſed throughout all Swift's works, are ſeldom written with any other view, or from any other motive, than a wild unbridled indulgence of his own humour and diſpoſition. *Orrery.*

led

led with redundant, ebullient, and other peccant humours; with many diſeaſes of the head, and more of the heart; with ſtrong convulſions, with grievous contractions of the nerves and ſinews in both hands, but eſpecially the right; with ſpleen, flatus, vertigos and deliriums; with ſcrophulous tumours full of fœtid purulent matter; with ſour frothy ructations; with canine appetites, and crudeneſs of digeſtion, beſides many others needleſs to mention. This doctor therefore propoſed, that upon the meeting of a ſenate certain phyſicians ſhould attend at the three firſt days of their ſitting, and at the cloſe of each day's debate feel the pulſes of every ſenator; after which, having maturely conſidered and conſulted upon the nature of the ſeveral maladies and the methods of cure, they ſhould on the fourth day return to the ſenate-houſe attended by their apothecaries ſtored with proper medicines; and before the members ſat, adminiſter to each of them lenitives, aperitives, abſterſives, corroſives, reſtringents, palliatives, laxatives, cephalalgics, icterics, apophlegmatics, acouſtics, as their ſeveral caſes required; and according as theſe medicines ſhould operate, repeat, alter, or omit them at the next meeting.

This project could not be of any great expence to the public; and might in my poor opinion be of much uſe for the diſpatch of buſineſs in thoſe countries, where ſenates have any ſhare in the legiſlative power; beget unanimity, ſhorten debates, open a few mouths which are now cloſed, and cloſe many more which are now open; curb the petulancy of the young, and correct the poſitiveneſs of the old; rouze the ſtupid, and damp the pert.

Again; becauſe it is a general complaint, that the favourites of princes are troubled with ſhort and weak memories; the ſame doctor propoſed, that whoever attended a firſt miniſter, after having told his buſineſs with the utmoſt brevity and in the plaineſt words, ſhould at his departure give the ſaid miniſter a tweak by the noſe, or a kick in the belly, or tread on his corns, or lug him thrice by both ears, or run a pin into his breach, or pinch his arm black and blue, to prevent forgetfulneſs: and at every levee day repeat the ſame operation, till the buſineſs were done or abſolutely refuſed.

He likewiſe directed, that every ſenator in the great council

fails to make me melancholy. Theſe unhappy people were propoſing ſchemes for perſuading monarchs to chuſe favourites upon the ſcore of their wiſdom, capacity, and virtue; of teaching miniſters to conſult the public good; of rewarding merit, great abilities, and eminent ſervices; of inſtructing princes to know their true intereſt, by placing it on the ſame foundation with that of their people; of chuſing for employments perſons qualified to exerciſe them; with many other wild impoſſible chimeras, that never entered before into the heart of man to conceive; and confirmed in me the old obſervation, that there is nothing ſo extravagant and irrational, which ſome philoſophers have not maintained for truth.

But however I ſhall ſo far do juſtice to this part of the academy, as to acknowledge that all of them were not viſionary. There was a moſt ingenious doctor, who ſeemed to be perfectly verſed in the whole nature and ſyſtem of government. This illuſtrious perſon had very uſefully employed his ſtudies in finding out effectual remedies for all diſeaſes and corruptions, to which the ſeveral kinds of public adminiſtration are ſubject by the vices or infirmities of thoſe who govern, as well as by the licentiouſneſs of thoſe who are to obey. For inſtance; whereas all writers and reaſoners have agreed that there is a ſtrict univerſal reſemblance between the natural and the political body; can there be any thing more evident, than that the health of both muſt be preſerved and the diſeaſes cured by the ſame preſcriptions? It is allowed, that ſenates and great councils are often too

ticular politicians; ſometimes againſt women: and ſometi it degenerates into filth. True humour ought to be kep with decency and dignity, or it loſes every tincture of en tainment. Deſcriptions that ſhock our delicacy, cannot h the leaſt good effect upon our minds. They offend us, and fly precipitately from the ſight. We cannot ſtay long enou to examine, whether wit, ſenſe, or morality, may be con under ſuch odious appearances. I am ſorry to ſay, that t ſort of deſcriptions, which are too often interſperſed through all Swift's works, are ſeldom written with any other view from any other motive, than a wild unbridled indulgence o own humour and diſpoſition. *Orrery.*

ndant, ebullient, and other peccant hu-
many diſeaſes of the head, and more of the
rong convulſions, with grievous contractions
and ſinews in both hands, but eſpecially
th ſpleen, flatus, vertigos and deliriums;
ous tumours full of fœtid purulent matter;
hy ructations; with canine appetites, and
digeſtion, beſides many others needleſs to
his doctor therefore propoſed, that upon
a ſenate certain phyſicians ſhould attend
rſt days of their ſitting, and at the cloſe of
ate feel the pulſes of every ſenator; after
g maturely conſidered and conſulted upon
the ſeveral maladies and the methods of
uld on the fourth day return to the ſenate-
d by their apothecaries ſtored with proper
nd before the members ſat, adminiſter to
lenitives, aperitives, abſterſives, corroſives,
palliatives, laxatives, cephalalgics, icterics,
s, acouſtics, as their ſeveral caſes required;
as theſe medicines ſhould operate, repeat,
them at the next meeting.

It could not be of any great expence to the
night in my poor opinion be of much uſe for
f buſineſs in thoſe countries, where ſenates
e in the legiſlative power; beget unanimity,
s, open a few mouths which are now clo-
many more which are now open; curb the
the young, and correct the poſitiveneſs of
e the ſtupid, and damp the pert.

auſe it is a general complaint, that the fa-
nces are troubled with ſhort and weak me-
ame doctor propoſed, that whoever atten-
iſter, after having told his buſineſs with the
y and in the plaineſt words, ſhould at his
the ſaid miniſter a tweak by the noſe, or
belly, or tread on his corns, or lug him
ears, or run a pin into his breach, or pinch
and blue, to prevent forgetfulneſs: and at
y r peat the ſame operation, till the buſineſs
abſolutely refuſed.

directed, that every ſenator in the great

council

council of a nation, after he had delivered his opinion and argued in the defence of it, ſhould be obliged to gi his vote directly contrary; becauſe if that were done, t reſult would infallibly terminate in the good of the publi

When parties in a ſtate are violent, he offered a wo derful contrivance to reconcile them. The method i this: you take an hundred leaders of each party; yo diſpoſe them into couples of ſuch, whoſe heads are no reſt of a ſize; then let two nice operators ſaw off the *ciput* of each couple at the ſame time in ſuch a manne that the brain may be equally divided. Let the occip thus cut off be interchanged, applying each to the bo of his oppoſite party-man. It ſeems indeed to be a wo that requireth ſome exactneſs, but the profeſſor aſſur us, that if it were dextrouſly performed the cure wou be infallible. For he argued thus; that the two h brains being left to debate the matter between themſelv within the ſpace of one ſcull would ſoon come to a go underſtanding, and produce that moderation, as well regularity of thinking, ſo much to be wiſhed for in t heads of thoſe, who imagine they come into the wo only to watch and govern its motion: and as to the d ference of brains in quantity or quality, among thoſe t are directors in faction; the doctor aſſured us from own knowledge, that it was a perfect trifle.

I heard a very warm debate between two profeſſor bout the moſt commodious and effectual ways and me of raiſing money without grieving the ſubject. The affirmed, the juſteſt method would be to lay a certain upon vices and folly; and the ſum fixed upon every to be rated after the faireſt manner by a jury of his ne bours. The ſecond was of an opinion directly contra to tax thoſe qualities of body and mind, for which chiefly value themſelves: the rate to be more or leſs cording to the degrees of excelling; the deciſion whi ſhould be left entirely to their own breaſt. The hi tax was upon men, who are the greateſt favourite the other ſex, and the aſſeſſments according to the n ber and natures of the favours they have received; which they are allowed to be their own vouchers. valour, and politeneſs were likewiſe propoſed to be la ly taxed, and collected in the ſame manner, by e

per

's giving his own word for the quantum of what he
ed. But as to honour, juſtice, wiſdom, and learn-
ney ſhould not be taxed at all; becauſe they are
cations of ſo ſingular a kind, that no man will ei-
llow them in his neighbour, or value them in him-

: women were propoſed to be taxed according to
eauty and skill in dreſſing; wherein they had the
privilege with the men, to be determined by their
udgment. But conſtancy, chaſtity, good ſenſe, and
nature, were not rated, becauſe they would not bear
arge of collecting.

keep ſenators in the intereſt of the crown, it was
ſed, that the members ſhould raffle for employ-
; every man firſt taking an oath, and giving ſecu-
hat he would vote for the court, whether he won
; after which the loſers had in their turn the liber-
raffling upon the next vacancy. Thus hope and
ation would be kept alive; none would complain
ken promiſes, but impute their diſappointments
to fortune, whoſe ſhoulders are broader and
r than thoſe of a miniſtry.

ther profeſſor ſhewed me a large paper of inſtruc-
r diſcovering plots and conſpiracies againſt the go-
nt. He adviſed great ſtateſmen to examine into
t of all ſuſpected perſons; their times of eating;
hich ſide they lay in bed; with which hand they
heir poſteriors; to take a ſtrict view of their ex-
ts, and from the colour, the odour, the taſte, the
nce, the crudeneſs, or maturity of digeſtion, form
ient of their thoughts and deſigns. Becauſe men
er ſo ſerious, thoughtful, and intent, as when they
ſtool, which he found by frequent experiment:
uch conjunctures, when he uſed merely as a trial
der which was the beſt way of murdering the King,
are would have a tincture of green; but quite diſ-
when he thought only of raiſing an inſurrection,
ing the metropolis.

whole diſcourſe was written with great acuteneſs,
ing many obſervations both curious and uſeful for
ns; but, as I conceived, not altogether compleat.
ventured to tell the author, and offered if he pleaſ-

ed

ed to ſupply him with ſome additions. He received m propoſition with more compliance, than is uſual amon writers, eſpecially thoſe of the projecting ſpecies; pr feſſing he would be glad to receive farther information.

I told him, that in the kingdom of Tribnia, by the n tives called Langdon, where I had ſojourned ſome tim in my travels, the bulk of the people conſiſt in a mann wholly of diſcoverers, witneſſes, informers, accuſe proſecutors, evidences, ſwearers, together with their ſ veral ſubſervient and ſubaltern inſtruments, all under t colours, the conduct, and pay of miniſters of ſtate a their deputies. The plots in that kingdom are uſual the workmanſhip of thoſe perſons who deſire to raiſe th own characters of profound politicians; to reſtore ne vigour to a crazy adminiſtration; to ſtifle or divert gen ral diſcontents; to fill their coffers with forfeitures; a raiſe or ſink the opinion of public credit, as either ſh beſt anſwer their private advantage. It is firſt agree and ſettled among them, what ſuſpected perſons ſhall accuſed of a plot: then, effectual care is taken to ſecu all their letters and papers, and put the owners in chain Theſe papers are delivered to a ſett of artiſts, very de terous in finding out the myſterious meanings of word ſyllables, and letters; for inſtance, they can diſcover cloſeſtool to ſignify a privy-council; a flock of geeſe, ſenate; a lame dog *, an invader; the plague, a ſtan ing army; a buzzard, a prime miniſter; the gout, high prieſt; a gibbet, a ſecretary of ſtate; a chambe pot, a committee of grandees; a ſieve, a court-lady; broom, a revolution; a mouſe-trap, an employment; bottomleſs pit, a treaſury; a ſink, a court; a cap a bells, a favourite; a broken reed, a court of juſtice; empty tun, a general; a running ſore, the adminiſtr tion.

When this method fails, they have two others mo effectual, which the learned among them call *acroſti* and *anagrams*. *Firſt*, they can decypher all initial l ters into political meanings. Thus, *N* ſhall ſignify plot, *B*, a regiment of horſe, *L*, a fleet at ſea: or,

* See the proceedings againſt Dr. Atterbury, Biſhop of R cheſter. State-Trials, vol. 6.

cond

by tranſpoſing the letters of the alphabet in any
d paper, they can lay open the deepeſt deſigns of
ntented party. So for example, if I ſhould ſay in
to a friend, *Our brother Tom has juſt got the*
ſkilful decypherer would diſcover, that the ſame
which compoſe that ſentence, may be analyſed in-
following words, *Reſiſt,———a plot is brought*
—The Tour. And this is the anagrammatic me-

profeſſor made me great acknowledgments for
nicating theſe obſervations, and promiſed to make
able mention of me in his treatiſe.
v nothing in this country, that could invite me to a
continuance, and began to think of returning home
land.

CHAP. VII.

uthor leaves Lagado, *arrives at* Maldonada. *No*
ready. He takes a ſhort voyage to Glubbdubdrib.
reception by the governor. *

HE continent, of which this kingdom is a part,
extends itſelf, as I have reaſon to believe, eaſt-
o that unknown tract of America weſtward of Ca-

ulliver ſeems to have finiſhed his voyage to Laputa in a
s hurrying manner; which makes me almoſt think, that
mes he was tired with his work, and attempted to run
h it as faſt as he could, otherwiſe why was the curtain
o ſoon, or why were we deprived of ſo noble a ſcene as
have been diſcovered in the iſland of Glubbdubdrib, where
vernor, by his skill in necromancy, had the power of
whom he pleaſed from the dead. I have not time by
ſt to write to you my thoughts upon a ſubject, which I
s awakened, but by no means ſatisfied my curioſity. I
ted to find ſo many illuſtrious ghoſts vaniſh ſo quickly and
aptly from my ſight, many of whom were of the bright-
raſters in hiſtory. In my next letter I ſhall endeavour
ain them a little longer in Leiceſter fields, than Swift ſuf-
hem to ſtay in the iſland of Sorcerers. Orrery.

liſornia,

lifornia, and north to the Pacific ocean, which is not bove a hundred and fifty miles from Lagado; where th is a good port, and much commerce with the great isl of Luggnagg, ſituated to the north-weſt about 29 degr north latitude, and 140 longitude. This iſland of L gnagg ſtands ſouth-eaſtward of Japan, about an hund leagues diſtant. There is a ſtrict alliance between Japaneſe Emperor and the King of Luggnagg, which fords frequent opportunities of ſailing from one iſland the other. I determined therefore to direct my co this way, in order to my return to Europe. I hired t mules, with a guide, to ſhew me the way, and carry ſmall baggage. I took leave of my noble protector, w had ſhewn me ſo much favour, and made me a gener preſent at my departure.

My journey was without any accident or adven worth relating. When I arrived at the port of Ma nada (for ſo it is called) there was no ſhip in the harb bound for Luggnagg, nor like to be in ſome time. town is about as large as Portſmouth. I ſoon fell ſome acquaintance, and was very hoſpitably received. gentleman of diſtinction ſaid to me, that ſince the ſ bound for Luggnagg could not be ready in leſs th month, it might be no diſagreeable amuſement for m take a trip to the little iſland of Glubbdubdrib, about leagues off to the ſouth-weſt. He offered himſelf a friend to accompany me, and that I ſhould be prov with a ſmall convenient barque for the voyage.

Glubbdubdrib, as nearly as I can interpret the w ſignifies the iſland of Sorcerers or Magicians. It is a one third as large as the Iſle of Wight, and extre fruitful: it is governed by the head of a certain t who are all magicians. This tribe marries only am each other, and the eldeſt in ſucceſſion is prince or go nor. He hath a noble palace, and a park of about t thouſand acres, ſurrounded by a wall of hewn ſtone tw feet high. In this park are ſeveral ſmall incloſure cattle, corn, and gardening.

The governor and his family are ſerved and atte by domeſtics of a kind ſomewhat unuſual. By his in necromancy, he hath a power of calling whom he pl eth from the dead, and commanding their ſervice

iours, but no longer; nor can he call the
up again in leſs than three months, except
traordinary occaſions.
arrived at the iſland, which was about eleven
ig, one of the gentlemen, who accompanied
the governor, and deſired admittance for a
) came on purpoſe to have the honour of
his highneſs This was immediately grant-
ll three entered the gate of the palace, be-
ws of guards armed and dreſſed after a very
, and ſomething in their countenances that
ı creep with a horror I cannot expreſs. We
h ſeveral apartments between ſervants of the
ıked on each ſide, as before, till we came
:r of preſence, where, after three profound
nd a few general queſtions, we were permit-
hree ſtools near the loweſt ſtep of his high-
. He underſtood the language of Balnibarbi,
/ere different from that of this iſland. He
give him ſome account of my travels; and,
: that I ſhould be treated without ceremony,
ll his attendants with a turn of his finger at
great aſtoniſhment, they vaniſhed in an in-
ſions in a dream, when we awake on a ſud-
d not recover myſelf in ſome time, till the
ıred me, that I ſhould receive no hurt; and
y two companions to be under no concern,
n often entertained in the ſame manner, I
: courage, and related to his highneſs a ſhort
y ſeveral adventures: yet not without ſome
d frequently looking behind me to the place,
l ſeen thoſe domeſtic ſpectres. I had the
line with the governor, where a new ſet of
l up the meat, and waited at table. I now
/ſelf to be leſs terrified than I had been in
. I ſtayed till ſun-ſet, but humbly deſired his
excuſe me for not accepting his invitation
the palace. My two friends and I lay at a
e in the town adjoining, which is the capi-
le iſland; and the next morning we return-
ır duty to the governor, as he was pleaſed to

After this manner we continued in the iſland for ten days, moſt part of every day with the governor, and at night in our lodging. I ſoon grew ſo familiariſed to the ſight of ſpirits, that after the third or fourth time they gave me no emotion at all: or if I had any apprehenſions left, my curioſity prevailed over them. For his highneſs the governor ordered me to call up whatever perſons I would chuſe to name, and in whatever numbers, among all the dead, from the beginning of the world to the preſent time, and command them to anſwer any queſtions I ſhould think fit to ask; with this condition, that my queſtions muſt be confined within the compaſs of the times they lived in. And one thing I might depend upon, that they would certainly tell me truth, for lying was a talent of no uſe in the lower world. I made my humble acknowledgments to his highneſs for ſo great a favour *. We were in a chamber, from whence there was a fair proſpect into the park. And, becauſe my firſt inclination was to be entertained with ſcenes of pomp and magnificence, I deſired to ſee Alexander the Great at the head of his army, juſt after the battle of Arbela, which, upon a motion of the governor's finger, immediately appeared in a large field under the window, where we ſtood. Alexander was called up into the room: it was with great difficulty that I underſtood his Greek, and had but little of my own. He aſſured me upon his honour, that he was not poiſoned, but died of a fever by exceſſive drinking †.

Next

* I believe it would be impoſſible to find out the deſign of Dr. Swift, in ſummoning up a parcel of apparitions, that, from their behaviour, or from any thing they ſay, are almoſt of as little conſequence as the ghoſts in Gay's farce of the *What d' ye call it*. Perhaps Swift's general deſign might be to arraign the conduct of eminent perſons after their death, and to convey their names and images to poſterity, deprived of their falſe colours in which they formerly appeared. If theſe were his intentions, he has miſſed his aim; or at leaſt has been ſo far carried away by his diſpoſition to raillery, that the moral which ought to ariſe from ſuch a fable is buried in obſcurity. *Orrery.*

† The firſt airy ſubſtance introduced is Alexander the Great.

Aſ

After a hint from Gulliver, that we have loſt the true Greek idiom, the conqueror of the univerſe is made to declare upon his honour, "that he died by exceſſive drinking, not by poiſon." A trifling and an improper obſervation, becauſe the apparition is called up as he appeared at the head of his army, juſt after the battle of Arbela. I own my expectations were great, when I found his appearance was to be at that particular juncture. Or rather I could have wiſhed to have ſeen him after the battle of *ISSUS*, when the temperate uſe which he made of his victory, was highly worthy of imitation. Such a circumſtance might have graced his triumph. There are others too in the hiſtorical records of him, that redound to his honour. The tender regard which he ſhewed to Pindar, by ſparing the houſe of that poet, when he raſed the city of Thebes, ſeems to demand perpetual gratitude from all ſucceeding bards. The manner in which he viſited the tomb of Achilles; the affection and reſpect paid by him to Ariſtotle; the undaunted confidence placed in his phyſician Philip, are inſtances ſufficient to ſhew, that Alexander did not want ſome virtues of humanity. And when we conſider ſeveral of his raſh actions of inebriety, they convince us how far the native excellencies of the mind may be debaſed and changed by paſſions which too often attend ſucceſs and luxury;

Utcunque defecere mores
Dedecorant bene nata culpæ.

It is evident, that Swift had conceived an abſolute diſguſt to Alexander, whoſe character he aims to deſtroy, by touching it in ſo ſlight a manner, that he puts me in mind of the viſit paid by Auguſtus Cæſar to Alexander's ſepulchre at Alexandria. Upon the Emperor's arrival, the body of the Macedonian hero was found in its full dimenſions, but ſo tender, notwithſtanding all the former embalming, that Cæſar, by touching only the noſe of it, defaced the whole figure immediately. *Orrery.*

In this paſſage there is a peculiar beauty, though it is not diſcovered at an haſty view. The appearance of Alexander with a victorious army immediately after the battle of Arbela, produces only a declaration that he died by drunkenneſs; thus inadequate and ridiculous in the eye of reaſon is the ultimate purpoſe for which Alexander with his army marched into a remote country, ſubverted a mighty empire, and deluged a nation with blood; he gained no more than an epithet to his name, which after a few repetitions was no longer regarded even by

Next I saw Hannibal passing the Alps, who told me, he had not a drop of vinegar in his camp *.

himself: thus the purpose of his resurrection appears to be a fraft equally important with that of his life, upon which it is satire not more bitter than just. *Hawkes.*

* Hannibal seems to have been summoned with no other view than to censure Livy the historian. It is not only improbable but impossible, that Hannibal should have carried a sufficient quantity of vinegar for the purpose related by Livy; but vinegar will certainly soften and dissolve stones, the experiment might have been improved or so contrived by Hannibal, as to appear to make an easy and expeditious opening through some particular passage already fitted for the purpose. Such a trick practised in that age of darkness, and properly managed, might have been universally received as a kind of miracle: so that Livy could scarce have avoided inserting the report as an acknowledged truth; especially as the fact itself seems to prove that the Romans were invincible, unless from some supernatural cause. Swift, no friend to military men, thinks the Carthaginian general unworthy of any further notice; and hastens to call up the senate of Rome. This gives him an opportunity of being very severe upon a certain modern assembly, which treats in a manner more resembling the Cynic in his cell, than the free-humoured Rabelais in his easy chair. *Orrery.*

Livy the Roman historian has related that Hannibal split a great pile of wood upon a rock that stopped his passage; when it was thus heated poured *vinegar* upon it, by which it was made so soft as to be easily cut through. *Hawkes.*

Gulliver's account of his entertainment at Glubbdubdrib is strangely and whimsically diverting. Alexander the Great at the head of his army just after the battle of Arbela, assured Gulliver upon his honour, that he was not poisoned, but died of a fever by excessive drinking. And afterwards Hannibal, passing the Alps, declared to him, that he had not a drop of vinegar in his camp. How ridiculous, how contemptible are these plagues of the world, these destroyers of the human race, when stripped of their royalty and command, as well as the ability to perpetrate any further mischief?

———*Mors sola fatetur*
Quantula sint hominum corpuscula. Juv. sat. 10.

Swift.

I ſaw Cæſar and Pompey at the head of their troops juſt ready to engage. I ſaw the former in his laſt great triumph. I deſired, that the ſenate of Rome might appear before me in one large chamber, and a modern repreſentative in counterview in another. The firſt ſeemed to be an aſſembly of heroes and demi-gods, the other a knot of pedlars, pick-pockets, highwaymen, and bullies.

The governor, at my requeſt, gave the ſign for Cæſar and Brutus to advance towards us. I was ſtruck with a profound veneration at the ſight of Brutus, and could eaſily diſcover the moſt conſummate virtue, the greateſt intrepidity and firmneſs of mind, the trueſt love of his country, and general benevolence for mankind, in every lineament of his countenance. I obſerved with much pleaſure, that theſe two perſons were in good intelligence with each other; and Cæſar freely confeſſed to me, that the greateſt actions of his own life were not equal, by many degrees, to the glory of taking it away. I had the honour to have much converſation with Brutus; and was told that his anceſtor Junius, Socrates, Epaminondas, Cato the younger, Sir Thomas More, and himſelf, were perpetually together: a *ſextumvirate* to which all the ages of the world cannot add a ſeventh *.

It

* Pompey and Cæſar only appear to grace the entry of Brutus, who is Swift's favourite patriot. But as Cæſar generouſly confeſſed to Gulliver, "that the greateſt actions of his life were not equal, by many degrees, to the glory of taking it away;" it would have been a proper alleviation of the Dictator's crimes, to have acknowledged him the greateſt ſtateſman, orator, and ſoldier of the age in which he lived; an age fertile of eminent men; an age when ambition was ſcarce looked upon as a crime; and when the Roman virtue (once the ſupport and preſervation of the common-wealth) was long ſince loſt in vice and luxury. At ſuch a time a ſingle maſter was become neceſſary; and Pompey would have ſeized the reins of government, had not Cæſar interpoſed. If the conſpirators had reſtored liberty to their country, their act had been completely glorious, and would have ſhewed, that Cæſar, not Rome, was degenerated. But if we may judge from the conſequences, Heaven diſapproved of

It would be tedious to trouble the reader with relati
what vaſt numbers of illuſtrious perſons were called u
gratify that inſatiable deſire I had to ſee the world i

the deed. A particular fate attended the conſpirators, no
of whom died a natural death. And even Brutus, perhaps
collecting in his laſt moments the benefits which he ha
ceived from Cæſar, was ſtaggered in his thoughts of virtue
imagining himſelf deceived by a ſhadow, broke out into
thetical expreſſion, ſignifying, "that he had worſhipped
" as a ſubſtance, and had found it only a ſhadow:" ſo t
ſeems to have wanted that fortitude of mind, which con
attends true virtue to the grave. This defect in the ch
of Brutus, is not improperly expreſſed in the famous ga
the Great Duke of Tuſcany, where there is a very fi
of Brutus, begun by Michael Angelo, but left unfiniſh
der it is engraven upon a copper-plate this diſtich:

Dum BRUTI *effigiem ſculptor de marmore ducit,*
In mentem ſceleris venit, et abſtinuit.

If Brutus erred, it was from a wrong notion of virtu
character of Cæſar is perhaps more amiable, but leſs
His faults were great; however, many of them were
his virtues. A modern eminent writer has repreſente
a glutton. He tells us, that when Cæſar went to t
feaſts, he conſtantly took a vomit in the morning, wi
ſign to indulge himſelf with more keenneſs, and to in
appetite for the enſuing feaſt. The fact is true, but
willingly believe the inference unjuſt. It is more than
that he practiſed this cuſtom by the advice of his p
who might direct ſuch a regimen, as the moſt certai
mediate preſervation againſt epileptic fits, to which the
was often liable. My honoured father, who was ex
few phyſicians in the theory of phyſic, has often told
thoſe kind of convulſions were of ſuch a nature as gen
come on after eating, and more violently if the ſtom
overloaded. Cæſar was ſo careful in obſerving a dece
ty in his behaviour, that he dreaded the ſhame of expo
licly this weakneſs in his conſtitution; and therefore
againſt it in a prudent manner, which has ſince been
into a reproach. This ſurmiſe reſts upon the ſtronge

very period of antiquity placed before me. I chiefly fed mine eyes with beholding the deſtroyers of tyrants and uſurpers, and the reſtorers of liberty to oppreſſed and injured

tion, as all authors agree, that he was moſt ſtrictly and remarkably abſtemious.

In his public character, Cæſar appears a ſtrong example, how far the greateſt natural and acquired accompliſhments may loſe their luſtre, when made ſubſervient to falſe glory, and an immoderate thirſt of power; as, on the other hand, the hiſtory of Brutus may inſtruct us, what unhappy effects the rigid exerciſe of ſuperior virtue, when miſapplied and carried too far, may produce in the moſt ſtedfaſt mind, or the ſoundeſt judgment.

Gulliver has given to Brutus five companions, Jun. Brutus, Socrates, Epaminondas, Cato the cenſor, and Sir Thomas More. Such a ſextumvirate is not eaſily to be increaſed: yet let me hope, that the reflection is too ſeverely critical, when he adds, "that all the ages of the world cannot furniſh out a "ſeventh." Every age has produced men of virtue and abilities in the higheſt degree. The race of mankind, ſince their firſt creation, have been always the ſame. The greateſt characters have been blended with the greateſt faults. Poets and hiſtorians have ſingled out particular perſons for fame and immortality: they have adorned them with accompliſhments which perhaps they never poſſeſſed, while other men equally meritorious have been ſilently buried in oblivion, with only the ſelf-conſciouſneſs of deſerving a rank among the companions of Brutus in the Elyſian fields.

In this illuſtrious ſextumvirate, Socrates and Sir Thomas Moore undoubtedly deſerve the pre-eminence. The extravagant virtue of Junius Brutus is ſhocking to every parent, and every good-natured mind. The important ſervices of the father might juſtly have claimed from the public, the pardon of his ſons: and when his paternal piety had ſaved their lives, his precepts and example might ſo effectually have reclaimed their errors, as to have made them become uſeful members of the common-wealth. I am fully perſuaded, that if Dr. Swift had been a father, we ſhould not have found the name of Junius Brutus where it is now placed.

In Epaminondas the Theban glory firſt appeared, and died.

His

eſt nations. But it is impoſſible to expreſs tion I received in my own mind, after ſuch to make it a ſuitable entertainment to the rea

His own merit, in overcoming the greateſt difficu fixed his reputation. A happy concurrence of has often given fame to others; but Epaminonda ed for his ſuperior character, only to himſelf.

I am in ſome doubt, whether Cato the cenſor ca a rank among ſo choice a group of ghoſts *. He condemned the luxury of the Romans, and he p vices with an impartial ſeverity. But herein he i indulged his own natural temper, rather than to h ſolutely from a love of virtue. He was a decla poetry, painting, and all the politer arts. He was and moroſe. But, above all, he was ſo extreme that Rhadamanthus, in the Archbiſhop of Cambra of the dead, after expreſſing ſome regard to his him, as he was an uſurer, he could not be admi Elyſian fields; and therefore orders him to keep th ter, in which ſituation he might gratify the cenſ his diſpoſition, by examining every ghoſt that come into Elyſium, and by ſhutting the door ag who were not qualified for admittance. Rhadam gives him money, to pay Charon for ſuch paſſeng not able to pay for themſelves; and at the ſame that he will puniſh him as a robber, if he offer that money upon uſury. How very different are th of Abp. Fenelon, and of Dr. Swift, in their judgm The one thinks him unworthy of a place among Elyſium, while the other diſtinguiſhes him among men of antiquity. From this diſſenſion of opini traced, perhaps, the particular temper both of the and of the Dean; and from hence may be deduct why the cenſor was eſteemed by the latter, and co the former. *Orrery.*

* *This note of his Lordſhip is an encomium on the our author, who knew that Cato the cenſor and Cato were very different perſons, and for good reaſons pre fer.* Hawkeſ.

CHAP. VIII.

A further account of Glubbdubdrib. *Ancient and modern hiſtory corrected.*

HAVING a deſire to ſee thoſe ancients, who were moſt renowned for wit and learning, I ſet apart one day on purpoſe. * I propoſed that Homer and Ariſtotle

The noble author finiſhes his remarks on this ſeventh chapter, by obſerving, that "Gulliver, after having taken a tranſient "view of numberleſs illuſtrious perſons, whom he does not "name, cloſes the chapter, and gives him an opportunity of "finiſhing his letter;" and then addreſſes his ſon thus: "Late, "very late, may you become a ghoſt! and when one, may "you equal any of Swift's ſextumvirate; and may his ghoſt "(grown leſs cynical and better inſtructed) rejoice to admit "you into the company, from which he has ſo arbitrarily ex"cluded all future generations."

Gulliver has not excluded all future generations from adding to this ſextumvirate. For he ſpeaks only of the time paſt. What Cato's may appear to bleſs the world, and oppoſe the torrent of corruption, in after ages, God only knows. Swift.

* Gulliver, tired of heroes, changes the ſcene in this 8th chapter, and becomes curious to know the ſituation of poets and philoſophers, who, in their turn, have as eagerly contended for fame, as Cæſar did for power, or Brutus for liberty. He deſires, that Homer and Ariſtotle may make their appearance at the head of their commentators. "Homer," ſays our traveller, "was the taller and comlier perſon of the two; walk"ed very erect for one of his age, and his eyes were the moſt "quick and piercing I ever beheld †." It is certain, that Homer has rather gained, than loſt vigour by his years. Twenty-ſix centuries have not unbraced his nerves, or given one wrinkle to his brow. And although Gulliver has beſtowed upon him the

† *All that is meant by Gulliver is, that Homer had the moſt quick and piercing genius of all human race.* Swift.——— See Vol. ii. p. 0.

additional

Ariſtotle might appear at the head of all their commentators; but theſe were ſo numerous, that ſome hundreds were forced to attend in the court and outward rooms of the

additional ornament of fine eyes, yet I am apt to think they made the figure of this divine old man leſs awful: at leaſt I am glad that he wanted his eye ſight while he lived; ſince it is impoſſible not to conclude from the productions of Homer and Milton, that the *mind's eye* becomes more intenſely diſcerning when it is not interrupted by external objects. It is an old obſervation, that Homer has nouriſhed more perſons than Sylla, Cæſar, and Auguſtus; and while their pictures have decayed, not a letter of the Iliad has been loſt. The Grecian poet not only preſerves his original form, but breathes freely, and looks beautifully, in other languages; a happier metempſychoſis than Pythagoras ever dreamed of. However, if Homer was abſolutely obliged to wear the different dreſſes which have been given to him, he would ſometimes, I believe, find the motion of his limbs uneaſy and confined; and would prefer his own ſimple attire, even to the birth-day-ſuit which our Engliſh bard has given him. The commentators have done leſs honour to Homer, than the tranſlators. Some of thoſe learned pedants have entirely waſted their obſervations upon particles and words; others have run into a minute exactneſs, in comparing the propriety of his images; while others, again, have endeavoured to trace out from the Iliad and Odyſſey, all the rudiments of arts and ſciences. Some there are who dwell on ſuch narrow circumſtances as were neglected by Homer, and can only be ſuitable to their own confined genius. They are not able to purſue him in his ſublime flights, and attempt therefore to bring him down on a level with themſelves. Their low mechanical notions put me mind me of an abſurd problem, propoſed by the famous Monſieur Huet, whether the Iliad might not be written upon vellum ſo ſmall a hand, that the whole might be contained within a nut-ſhell? This important queſtion is ſaid to have engaged the thoughts and attention of the French court, and gives us a true picture of a laborious, taſteleſs critic, upon Homer. The Dauphin and his train, are for putting the Iliad into a nut-ſhell; when Alexander and his courtiers choſe the richeſt and moſt curious cabinet of Darius, as the only proper repoſitory for Homer's works.

Ho

I knew and could distinguish those two he-
sight, not only from the crowd, but from
Homer was the taller and comlier person of
lked very erect for one of his age, and his
e most quick and piercing I ever beheld.
oped much, and made use of a staff. His
ieagre, his hair lank and thin, and his voice
soon discovered that both of them were per-
fect

Aristotle were as opposite as possible in their cha-
Dr. Swift has placed them together, chiefly with a
ing their commentators in that just and ridicu-
which those scholiasts ought to appear. When an
with the productions of an uncommon genius,
oles Homer, it must, in some measure, be punish-
tations and comments; in the same manner that
: observed the sun, by its heat and influence, rais-
and animating insects, that infect, and perhaps
:, in which he shines with so much lustre. But
nal admired author, as Aristotle, is really errone-
ves with false specious principles, what a train
arise from commentators on such subjects, who,
leavour to pursue and extend a pleasing inchanted
has no real foundation, deviate into a dark, dis-
l of briers and thorns? —— It is on this account,
has introduced Aristotle in company with Homer.

ription of Aristotle is fine, and in a few words,
true nature of his works. By not having the im-
f Homer, he was unable to keep his body erect;
hich feebly supported him, like his commentators,
ect more conspicuous. He wanted not some use-
out these *real ornaments*, like his hair, were thin
†. His style was harsh, and, like his voice, had
nor harmony. He was without doubt a man of
nd penetration; but he did infinitely more preju-
ce to real literature. He studied words more than

he noble commentator seems to be mistaken; for it
ed, that Aristotle's real ornaments, *however few,*
al. Hawkes.

facts;

ſect ſtrangers to the reſt of the company, and had never ſeen or heard of them before. And I had a whiſper from a ghoſt, who ſhall be nameleſs, that theſe commentators always

facts; and delivered his philoſophy perplexed with ſuch intricate logical terms, as have laid a foundation for the endleſs ſcholaſtic diſputations which have corrupted and retarded the progreſs of learning. He waged war with all his predeceſſors. He never quotes an author but with a view to refute his opinion. Like the Ottoman Emperor, he could not reign in ſafety, till he had firſt deſtroyed his brethren. He was as ambitious in ſcience, as his pupil Alexander was in arms. He aimed to be a deſpotic original; and not only to be the prince, but the tyrant of philoſophy. What then can be expected from the commentators of his works, who were devoid of his ingenuity, and poſſeſſed all his intricate follies? Ramus with his covert ignorance, and Scotus and Aquinas, with their ſubdiviſions and imaginary nothings, muſt make a contemptible figure in the Elyſian fields, which are the ſuppoſed manſions of chearfulneſs, truth, and candour, and conſequently muſt be a very improper ſituation for that tribe of philoſophers. *Orrery.*

In Gulliver's portrait of Homer, we obſerve all the marks and delineations of quickneſs, genius, and fire, accompanied with an exquiſite power and felicity, in the communication of his ideas, with clearneſs and force, unto the ſouls of his auditors. Swift's portrait of Ariſtotle is equally ſtrong and maſterly. He ſtooped much, ſaith he, and made uſe of a ſtaff; that is, by thought, he conſidered, he ruminated, he pondered deeply, on the moſt intricate and abſtruſe points relating to the ſciences; and, by the force of reaſoning, which is meant by his ſtaff, he cleared his way through briers and thorns, until he ſtruck into the road which leads to ſcience and philoſophy.—The remaining part of Ariſtotle's portrait, is only the repreſentation of an abſtracted ſcholar, worn away and decayed with years, hard ſtudy, nocturnal lucubrations, and the want of bodily exerciſe.

Some would make Swift treat Ariſtotle with very little reſpect. But, on the contrary, Swift admired Ariſtotle beyond all the philoſophers which had appeared in the world, from the days of Alexander the Great to the moment he was then writing; I had almoſt ſaid, even to the contempt of all others, not excepting

kept in the moſt diſtant quarters from their prin-
n the lower world, through a conſciouſneſs of ſhame
ilt, becauſe they had ſo horribly miſrepreſented the
ng of thoſe authors to poſterity. I introduced Di-
and Euſtathius to Homer, and prevailed on him
at them better than perhaps they deſerved, for he
ound they wanted a genius to enter into the ſpirit
oet. But Ariſtotle was out of all patience with the
at I gave him of Scotus and Ramus, as I preſented
to him, and he aſked them whether the reſt of the
were as great dunces as themſelves.

ien deſired the governor to call up Deſcartes and
idi, with whom I prevailed to explain their ſyſtems
ſtotle. This great philoſopher freely acknowledged
n miſtakes in natural philoſophy, becauſe he pro-
in many things upon conjecture, as all men muſt
nd he found that Gaſſendi, who had made the
e of Epicurus as palatable as he could, and the
of Deſcartes, were equally to be exploded *. He
pre-

ſcartes, Gaſſendi, and the famous Sir Iſaac Newton.——
little book of inſtructions which Dr. Swift was pleaſed
up for the uſe of a lady, I ſhall, in his own words,
s real opinion of Ariſtotle. "Ariſtotle, the diſciple of
, and tutor to Alexander the Great. His followers
called *Peripatetics*, from a Greek word which ſignifies
lk; becauſe he taught his diſciples *walking*. We have
all his works; and ſome of thoſe which are imputed to
are ſuppoſed not genuine. He writ upon *logic*, or the
of reaſoning; upon *moral* and *natural philoſophy*; upon
ry, *poetry*, etc. and ſeems to be a perſon of the *moſt
rehenſive genius that ever lived*." Swift.

believe you will find, that Ariſtotle is ſtill to be prefer-
Epicurus. The former made ſome uſeful experiments
ſcoveries, and was engaged in a real purſuit of knowledge,
gh his manner is much perplexed. The latter was full
ity and ambition. He was an impoſtor, and only aimed
ceiving. He ſeemed not to believe the principles which he
erted. He committed the government of all things to
e. His natural philoſophy is abſurd. His moral phi-
ry wants its proper baſis, the fear of God. M. Bayle,

predicted the ſame fate to *attraction*, whereof the preſent learned are ſuch zealous aſſertors. He ſaid, that new ſyſtems of nature were but new faſhions, which would vary

one of his warmeſt advocates is of this laſt opinion, where he ſays, *On ne ſcauroit pas dire aſſez de bien de l'honneteté de ſes moeurs, ni aſſez de mal de ſes opinions ſur la religion.* His general maxim, that happineſs conſiſted in pleaſure, was too much unguarded, and muſt lay a foundation of a moſt deſtructive practice: although from his temper and conſtitution, he made his actions ſufficiently pleaſurable to himſelf, and agreeable to the rules of true philoſophy. His fortune exempted him from care and ſolicitude; his valetudinarian habit of body, from intemperance. He paſſed the greateſt part of his time in his garden, where he enjoyed all the elegant amuſements of life. There he ſtudied; there he taught his philoſophy. This particular happy ſituation greatly contributed to that tranquillity of mind and indolence of body, which he made his chief ends. He had not however reſolution ſufficient to meet the gradual approaches of death, and wanted that conſtancy which Sir William Temple aſcribes to him: for, in his laſt moments, when he found that his condition was deſperate, he took ſuch large draughts of wine, that he was abſolutely intoxicated, and deprived of his ſenſes; ſo that he died more like a Bacchanal, than a philoſopher; to which the epigram alludes,

Hinc ſtygias ebrius hauſit aquas.

I ſhould not have ventured into this criticiſm and cenſure upon theſe ancient philoſophers, if my opinion was not in a great meaſure ſupported by Lord Bacon, who, as he was certainly the moſt accurate judge of this ſubject, might be perhaps, from that pre-eminence, too ſevere a critic. It muſt be owned, that Epicurus in particular has many followers and admirers among the ancients, and among the moderns. Cicero commends him for cultivating his friendſhips in the moſt exquiſite manner. The book lies open before me, and I will tranſcribe the words. *De qua* [*amicitia*] *Epicurus quidem ita dicit, omnium rerum quas ad beate vivendum ſapientia comparaverit, nihil eſſe majus amicitia, nihil uberius, nihil jucundius; neque vero hoc oratione ſolum, ſed multo magis vita, et factis, et moribus, comprobavit.* Diogenes Laertius praiſes his virtue and learning. In the Auguſtan age the greateſt names are inſerted among his followers. Cæſar, Atticus, Mecænas, Lucretius, Virgil and Horace, embraced his philo-

ſophy

vary in every age: and even thoſe, who pretend to demonſtrate them from mathematical principles, would flouriſh but a ſhort period of time, and be out of vogue when that was determined.

I ſpent five days in converſing with many others of the

ſophy, and gave a luſtre to his ſect and doctrines. Sir William Temple ſays, "that he wonders why ſuch ſharp invectives were "ſo generally made againſt Epicurus, by the ages that follow-"ed him; eſpecially as his admirable wit, felicity of expreſſi-"on, excellence of nature, ſweetneſs of converſation, tempe-"rance of life, and conſtancy of death, made him ſo much "beloved by his friends, admired by his ſcholars, and honour-"ed by the Athenians." Sir William Temple imputes this injuſtice "to the envy and malignity of the Stoics, and to "ſome groſs pretenders, who aſſumed the denomination of that "ſect; who miſtook his favourite principle," [THAT ALL HAPPINESS CONSISTED IN PLEASURE], "by confining it "to ſenſual pleaſure only. To theſe ſucceeded the Chriſtians, "who eſteemed his principles of natural philoſophy more op-"poſite to thoſe of our religion, than either the Platoniſts, the "Peripatetics, or even the Stoics themſelves." This is the opinion, and theſe are almoſt the exact words of the great Sir William Temple.

Swift equally explodes Epicurus, and the more modern philoſophers Deſcartes and Gaſſendi.

Deſcartes was a knight-errant in philoſophy, perpetually miſtaking windmills for giants; yet by the ſtrength of a warm imagination, he ſtarted ſome opinions, which probably put Sir Iſaac Newton and others on making many experiments that produced moſt uſeful diſcoveries.

Gaſſendi was eſteemed one of the greateſt ornaments of France. He was a doctor of divinity, and royal profeſſor of mathematics. He was born in Provence in 1592, and died in 1655. With great induſtry he collected whatever related to the perſon and to the philoſophy of Epicurus; the latter of which he has reduced into a complete ſyſtem. *Hawkeſ.*

I have now curſorily gone through the characters of ſuch ghoſts, as are nominally ſpecified by Gulliver. I may be wrong either in my account or in my obſervations: and I ſhall rejoice to be confuted by you in any point of learning whatever. *Orrery.*

ancient learned. I saw most of the first Roman
ors. I prevailed on the governor to call up
balus's cooks to dress us a dinner, but they co
shew us much of their skill for want of materi
helot of Agesilaus made us a dish of Spartan broth
was not able to get down a second spoonful.

The two gentlemen, who conducted me to the
were pressed by their private affairs to return in
days, which I employed in seeing some of the m
dead, who had made the greatest figure for two or
hundred years past in our own and other countries o
rope; and having been always a great admirer of o
lustrious families, I desired the governor would ca
dozen or two of kings, with their ancestors in ord
eight or nine generations. But my disappointmen
grievous and unexpected. For, instead of a lon
with royal diadems, I saw in one family two fidlers
spruce courtiers, and an Italian prelate. In ano
barber, an abbot, and two cardinals. I have to
a veneration for crowned heads to dwell any longe
nice a subject. But as to counts, marquesses,
earls, and the like, I was not so scrupulous.
confess, it was not without some pleasure, that I
myself able to trace the particular features, by whi
tain families are distinguished up to their origin
could plainly discover from whence one family de
long chin, why a second hath abounded with kna
two generations, and fools for two more; why
happened to be crack-brained, and a fourth to b
pers; whence it came, what Polydore Virgil says c
tain great house, *Nec vir fortis, nec fœmina casta*
cruelty, falshood, and cowardice grew to be ch
istics, by which certain families are distinguished a
as by their coats of arms; who first brought the p
a noble house, which hath lineally descended in fe
lous tumours to their posterity. Neither could I
at all this, when I saw such an interruption of l
by pages, lacqueys, valets, coachmen, gamesters,
players, captains, and pick-pockets.

I was chiefly disgusted with modern history. F
ing strictly examined all the persons of greatest n
the courts of princes for an hundred years past, l

the world had been miſled by proſtitute writers to
ibe the greateſt exploits in war to cowards, the wiſeſt
nſel to fools, ſincerity to flatterers, Roman virtue to
trayers of their country, piety to atheiſts, chaſtity to
domites, truth to informers: how many innocent and
cellent perſons had been condemned to death or baniſh-
ent by the practiſing of great miniſters upon the cor-
uption of judges, and the malice of factions: how ma-
y villains had been exalted to the higheſt places of truſt,
ower, dignity, and profit: how great a ſhare in the mo-
ons and events of courts, councils, and ſenates, might
challenged by bawds, whores, pimps, paraſites, and
ffoons: how low an opinion I had of human wiſdom
d integrity, when I was truly informed of the ſprings
d motives of great enterprizes and revolutions in the
rld, and of the contemptible accidents to which they
ed their ſucceſs.

Here I diſcovered the roguery and ignorance of thoſe,
pretend to write *anecdotes*, or ſecret hiſtory; who
ſo many kings to their graves with a cup of poiſon;
repeat the diſcourſe between a prince and chief mi-
r, where no witneſs was by; unlock the thoughts
cabinets of ambaſſadors and ſecretaries of ſtate; and
the perpetual misfortune to be miſtaken. Here I diſ-
red the true cauſes of many great events that have ſur-
d the world; how a whore can govern the back-ſtairs,
back-ſtairs a council, and the council a ſenate. A gene-
onfeſſed in my preſence, that he got a victory purely
ne force of cowardice and ill conduct: and an admiral,
for want of proper intelligence he beat the enemy,
hom he intended to betray the fleet. Three kings
efted to me, that in their whole reigns they never did
e prefer any perſon of merit, unleſs by miſtake, or
chery of ſome miniſter in whom they confided: neither
ld they do it if they were to live again; and they
ved with great ſtrength of reaſon, that the royal throne
ld not be ſupported without corruption, becauſe that
tive, confident, reſtive temper, which virtue infuſed
a man, was a perpetual clog to public buſineſs.

had the curioſity to enquire in a particular manner,
what method great numbers had procured to them-
es high titles of honour and prodigious eſtates; and I

confined my enquiry to a very modern period, ho
without grating upon preſent times, becauſe I wou
ſure to give no offence even to foreigners; for I hope
reader need not to be told, that I do not in the leaſt i
tend my own country in what I ſay upon this occaſio
A great number of perſons concerned were called up, an
upon a very ſlight examination diſcovered ſuch a ſcene c
infamy, that I cannot reflect upon it without ſome feri
ouſneſs. Perjury, oppreſſion, ſubornation, fraud, pan
dariſm, and the like *infirmities*, were amongſt the mo
excuſable arts they had to mention; and for theſe I gav
as it was reaſonable, great allowance. But when ſor
confeſſed they owed their greatneſs and wealth to ſo
my, or inceſt; others to the proſtituting of their c
wives and daughters; others to the betraying their co
try or their prince; ſome to poiſoning, more to the
verting of juſtice in order to deſtroy the innocent; I h
I may be pardoned, if theſe diſcoveries inclined me a
le to abate of that profound veneration, which I am
turally apt to pay to perſons of high rank, who ough
be treated with the utmoſt reſpect due to their ſub
dignity by us their inferiors.

I had often read of ſome great ſervices done to pri
and ſtates, and deſired to ſee the perſons by whom t
ſervices were performed. Upon enquiry I was told,
their names were to be found on no record, except a
of them, whom hiſtory hath repreſented as the v
rogues and traitors. As to the reſt, I had never
heard of them. They all appeared with dejected lo
and in the meaneſt habit, moſt of them telling me
died in poverty and diſgrace, and the reſt on a ſca
or a gibbet.

Among others there was one perſon, whoſe caſe
peared a little ſingular. He had a youth about eigh
years old ſtanding by his ſide. He told me he had
many years been commander of a ſhip; and in the
fight at Actium had the good fortune to break thro
the enemy's great line of battle, ſink three of their c
tal ſhips, and take a fourth, which was the ſole cau
Anthony's flight, and of the victory that enſued;
the youth ſtanding by him, his only ſon, was kille
the action. He added, that upon the confidence of h
me

merit, the war being at an end, he went to Rome, and ſollicited at the court of Auguſtus to be preferred to a greater ſhip, whoſe commander had been killed; but without any regard to his pretenſions it was given to a boy, who had never ſeen the ſea, the ſon of Libertina, who waited on one of the emperor's miſtreſſes. Returning back to his own veſſel, he was charged with neglect of duty, and the ſhip given to a favourite page of Publicola, the vice-admiral; whereupon he retired to a poor farm at a great diſtance from Rome, and there ended his life. I was ſo curious to know the truth of this ſtory, that I deſired Agrippa might be called, who was admiral in that fight. He appeared, and confirmed the whole account, but with much more advantage to the captain, whoſe modeſty had extenuated or concealed a great part of his merit.

I was ſurpriſed to find corruption grown ſo high and ſo quick in that empire, by the force of luxury ſo lately introduced, which made me leſs wonder at many parallel caſes in other countries, where vices of all kinds have reigned ſo much longer, and where the whole praiſe, as well as pillage, hath been ingroſſed by the chief commander, who perhaps had the leaſt title to either.

As every perſon called up made exactly the ſame appearance he had done in the world, it gave me melancholy reflections to obſerve, how much the race of human kind was degenerated among us within theſe hundred years paſt. How the pox under all its conſequences and denominations had altered every lineament of an Engliſh countenance; ſhortened the ſize of bodies, unbraced the nerves, relaxed the ſinews and muſcles, introduced a ſallow complexion, and rendered the fleſh looſe and *rancid*.

I deſcended ſo low as to deſire, that ſome Engliſh yeomen of the old ſtamp might be ſummoned to appear; once ſo famous for the ſimplicity of their manners, diet, and dreſs; for juſtice in their dealings; for their true ſpirit of liberty; for their valour and love of their country. Neither could I be wholly unmoved, after comparing the living with the dead, when I conſidered how all thoſe pure native virtues were proſtituted for a piece of money by their grand-children, who, in ſelling their votes,

and

rank, when they deſire an admittance. Nay, ſometimes the floor is ſtrewed with duſt on purpoſe, when the perſon to be admitted happens to have powerful enemies at court. And I have ſeen a great lord with his mouth ſo crammed, that, when he had crept to the proper diſtance from the throne, he was not able to ſpeak a word. Neither is there any remedy; becauſe it is capital for thoſe who receive an audience, to ſpit or wipe their mouths in his Majeſty's preſence. There is indeed another cuſtom which I cannot altogether approve of; when the king hath a mind to put any of his nobles to death in a gentle, indulgent manner, he commands the floor to be ſtrewed with a certain brown powder of a deadly compoſition, which being licked up infallibly kills him in twenty-four hours. But in juſtice to this prince's great clemency, and the care he hath of his ſubjects lives (wherein it were much to be wiſhed, that the monarchs of Europe would imitate him) it muſt be mentioned for his honour, that ſtrict orders are given to have the infected parts of the floor well waſhed after every ſuch execution; which if his domeſticks neglect, they are in danger of incurring his royal diſpleaſure. I myſelf heard him give directions, that one of his pages ſhould be whipt, whoſe turn it was to give notice about waſhing the floor after an execution, but maliciouſly had omitted it, by which neglect a young lord of great hopes coming to an audience was unfortunately poiſoned, although the King at that time had no deſign againſt his life. But this good prince was ſo gracious as to forgive the poor page his whipping, upon promiſe that he would do ſo no more without ſpecial orders.

To return from this digreſſion; when I had crept within four yards of the throne, I raiſed myſelf gently upon my knees, and then, ſtriking my forehead ſeven times againſt the ground, I pronounced the following words, as they had been taught me the night before, *Ickpling gloſh ſlhrobb ſquut ſerumm blhiop mlaſhnalt zwin tnodbalkuf ſliophad gurdlubb aſht.* This is the compliment eſtabliſhed by the laws of the land for all perſons admitted to the King's preſence. It may be rendered into English thus: *May your celeſtial Majeſty outlive the ſun, eleven moons and a half.* To this the King returned ſome anſwer, which although I could not underſtand, yet I

pli

plied as I had been directed: *flute drin yalerick dwuldom raſtrad mirpuſh*, which properly ſignifies, *my tongue is in the mouth of my friend*; and by this expreſſion was meant, that I deſired leave to bring my interpreter; whereupon the young man already mentioned was accordingly introduced, by whoſe intervention I anſwered as many queſtions as his Majeſty could put in above an hour. I ſpoke in the Balnibarbian tongue, and my interpreter delivered my meaning in that of Luggnagg.

The King was much delighted with my company, and ordered his Bliſſmarklub, or high chamberlain, to appoint a lodging in the court for me and my interpreter, with a daily allowance for my table, and a large purſe of gold for my common expences.

I ſtayed three months in this country out of perfect obedience to his Majeſty, who was pleaſed highly to favour me, and made me very honourable offers. But I thought it more conſiſtent with prudence and juſtice to paſs the remainder of my days with my wife and family.

CHAP. X.

The Luggnuggians *commended. A particular deſcription of the* Struldbrugs, *with many converſations between the author and ſome eminent perſons upon that ſubject.*

THE Luggnuggians are a polite and generous people; and although they are not without ſome ſhare of that pride, which is peculiar to all *eaſtern* countries, yet they ſhew themſelves courteous to ſtrangers, eſpecially ſuch who are countenanced by the court. I had many acquaintance among perſons of the beſt faſhion, and being always attended by my interpreter, the converſation we had was not diſagreeable.

One day, in much good company, I was asked by a perſon of quality, whether I had ſeen any of their Struldbrugs or immortals. I ſaid, I had not; and deſired he would explain to me, what he meant by ſuch an appellation

tion applied to a mortal creature. * He told me, that ſometimes, though very rarely, a child happened to be born in a family with a red circular ſpot in the forehead di-

* The deſcription of the Struldbrugs is an inſtructive piece of morality. For if we conſider it in a ſerious light, it tends to reconcile us to our final diſſolution. Death, when ſet in contraſt to the immortality of the Struldbrugs, is no longer the king of terrors: he loſes his ſting; he appears to us as a friend, and we chearfully obey his ſummons, becauſe it brings certain relief to the greateſt miſeries. It is in this deſcription that Swift ſhines in a particular manner. He probably felt in himſelf the effects of approaching age, and tacitly dreaded that period of life in which he might become a repreſentative of thoſe *miſerable immortals*. His apprehenſions were unfortunately fulfilled. He lived to be the moſt melancholy ſight that was ever beheld. Yet, even in that condition, he continued to inſtruct, by appearing a providential inſtance to mortify the vanity which is too apt to ariſe in the human breaſt. Our life cannot be pronounced happy, till the laſt ſcene is cloſed with eaſe and reſignation; the mind ſtill continuing to preſerve its uſual dignity, and falling into the arms of death, as a wearied traveller ſinks into reſt. This is that *Euthanaſia* which Auguſtus often deſired, which Antoninus Pius enjoyed, and for which every wiſe man will pray. *Orrery.*

Gulliver's account of the Struldbrugs, is the fineſt lecture that ever was conceived by any mortal man, to reconcile poor tottering creatures unto a chearful reſignation of this wretched life; and perfectly agreeable to that ſentiment of the inſpired Prophet, *The days of our life are threeſcore years and ten; and though men be ſo ſtrong, that they live to fourſcore years; yet is their life then but labour and ſorrow.* Thoſe diſpenſations of the Almighty, which are frequently the concomitants of old age, Dr. Swift, throughout his whole life, conſtantly apprehended, from ſome peculiar infirmities attending his habit of body, would ſeize upon him at laſt. Theſe Lord Orrery, without any ſort of heſitation, roundly aſſerts to be the avenging judgments of God, as if he had been let into the ſecret by ſome particular revelation. But, inſtead of inſulting the aſhes of ſo bright a genius with the infirmities of his latter days, and comparing *him to* one of his own Struldbrugs, we ſhould endeavour to in-

ſame

ly over the left eye-brow, which was an infallible
, that it ſhould never die. The ſpot, as he de-
ed it, was about the compaſs of a ſilver three-pence,
in the courſe of time grew larger, and changed its
ur; for at twelve years old it became green, ſo con-
d till five and twenty, then turned to a deep blue;
e and forty it grew coal black, and as large as an
iſh ſhilling; but never admitted any farther altera-

He ſaid, theſe births were ſo rare, that he did not
ve there could be above eleven hundred Struldbrugs
th ſexes in the whole kingdom, of which he com-
l about fifty in the metropolis, and among the reſt a
g girl born about three years ago: that theſe pro-
ons were not peculiar to any family, but a meer ef-
f chance; and the children of the Struldbrugs them-
s were equally mortal with the reſt of the people.
freely own myſelf to have been ſtruck with inexpreſ-
delight upon hearing this account: and the perſon,
gave it me, happening to underſtand the Balnibar-
language, which I ſpoke very well, I could not for-
breaking out into expreſſions perhaps a little too ex-
gant. I cried out, as in a rapture, Happy nation,
e every child hath at leaſt a chance for being immor-
happy people, who enjoy ſo many living examples
cient virtue, and have maſters ready to inſtruct them
he wiſdom of all former ages! but, happieſt beyond
ompariſon are thoſe excellent Struldbrugs, who be-
born exempt from that univerſal calamity of human
re, have their minds free and diſengaged, without
weight and depreſſion of ſpirits cauſed by the conti-
apprehenſion of death. I diſcovered my admira-
; that I had not obſerved any of theſe illuſtrious per-
at court; the black ſpot on the forehead being ſo re-
kable a diſtinction, that I could not have eaſily over-
ed it: and it was impoſſible that his Majeſty, a moſt
cious prince, ſhould not provide himſelf with a good
ber of ſuch wiſe and able counſellors. Yet perhaps

e our ſouls by catching fire and ſpirit, and patriotiſm
n his inimitable writings; and ſilently confeſs the ways
od to be inſcrutable, and his judgments paſt finding out.
D.

the virtue of thoſe reverend ſages was too ſtrict
corrupt and libertine manners of a court. And
find by experience, that young men are too opi
and volatile to be guided by the ſober dictates
ſeniors. However, ſince the King was pleaſed
me acceſs to his royal perſon, I was reſolved,
very firſt occaſion, to deliver my opinion to hi
matter freely and at large by the help of my int
and whether he would pleaſe to take my advice o
in one thing I was determined, that, his Majeſ
frequently offered me an eſtabliſhment in this
I would with great thankfulneſs accept the fav
paſs my life here in the converſation of thoſe
beings, the Struldbrugs, if they would pleaſe
me.

The gentleman, to whom I addreſſed my
becauſe (as I have already obſerved) he ſpoke
guage of Balnibarbi, ſaid to me with a ſort o
which uſually ariſeth from pity to the ignoran
was glad of any occaſion to keep me among t
deſired my permiſſion to explain to the compa
had ſpoke. He did ſo, and they talked tog
ſome time in their own language, whereof I u
not a ſyllable, neither could I obſerve by thei
nances, what impreſſion my diſcourſe had made
After a ſhort ſilence the ſame perſon told me
friends and mine (ſo he thought fit to expreſs
were very much pleaſed with the judicious
had made on the great happineſs and advantag
mortal life, and they were deſirous to know, in
lar manner, what ſcheme of living I ſhould ha
to myſelf, if it had fallen to my lot to have be
Struldbrug.

I anſwered, it was eaſy to be eloquent on ſ
and delightful a ſubject, eſpecially to me, who
often apt to amuſe myſelf with viſions of what
do, if I were a King, a general, or a great lord :
on this very caſe, I had frequently run over t
ſyſtem how I ſhould employ myſelf, and paſs th
I were ſure to live for ever.

That, if it had been my good fortune to come
world a Struldbrug, as ſoon as I could diſcover

by underſtanding the difference between life and
would firſt reſolve by all arts and methods what-
procure myſelf riches. In the purſuit of which
and management, I might reaſonably expect in
o hundred years to be the wealthieſt man in the
. In the ſecond place, I would from my earlieſt
pply myſelf to the ſtudy of arts and ſciences, by
ſhould arrive in time to excel all others in learn-
aſtly, I would carefully record every action and
conſequence that happened in the public, impar-
aw the characters of the ſeveral ſucceſſions of
nd great miniſters of ſtate, with my own obſer-
n every point. I would exactly ſet down the
hanges in cuſtoms, language, faſhions of dreſs,
diverſions. By all which acquirements I ſhould
ng treaſury of knowledge and wiſdom, and cer-
come the oracle of the nation.

ld never marry after threeſcore, but live in an
e manner, yet ſtill on the ſaving ſide. I would
myſelf in forming and directing the minds of
oung men, by convincing them from my own
ance, experience and obſervation, fortified by
s examples, of the uſefulneſs of virtue in public
ate life. But my choice and conſtant compani-
ld be a ſett of my own immortal brotherhood, a-
om I would elect a dozen from the moſt ancient
my own contemporaries. Where any of theſe
ortunes, I would provide them with convenient
ound my own eſtate, and have ſome of them al-
my table, only mingling a few of the moſt valu-
ng you mortals, whom length of time would
ne to loſe with little or no reluctance, and treat
lerity after the ſame manner; juſt as a man di-
nſelf with the annual ſucceſſion of pinks and tu-
is garden, without regretting the loſs of thoſe,
/ithered the preceding year.

Struldbrugs and I would mutually communicate
rvations, and memorials through the courſe of
mark the ſeveral gradations by which corruption
o the world, and oppoſe it in every ſtep by giv-
ctual warning and inſtruction to mankind; which,
the ſtrong influence of our own example, would

probably prevent that continual degeneracy of human nature ſo juſtly complained of in all ages.

Add to all this the pleaſure of ſeeing the various revolutions of ſtates and empires; the changes in the lower and upper world; ancient cities in ruins, and obſcure villages become the ſeats of kings; famous rivers leſſening into ſhallow brooks; the ocean leaving one coaſt dry, and overwhelming another; the diſcovery of many countries yet unknown; barbarity over-running the politeſt nations, and the moſt barbarous become civilized. I ſhould then ſee the diſcovery of the *longitude*, the *perpetual motion*, the *univerſal medicine*, and many other great inventions brought to the utmoſt perfection.

What wonderful diſcoveries ſhould we make in aſtronomy by out-living and confirming our own predictions, by obſerving the progreſs and returns of comets, with the changes of motion in the ſun, moon, and ſtars.

I enlarged upon many other topics, which the natural deſire of endleſs life and ſublunary happineſs could eaſily furniſh me with. When I had ended, and the ſum of my diſcourſe had been interpreted, as before, to the reſt of the company, there was a good deal of talk among them in the language of the country, not without ſome laughter at my expence. At laſt the ſame gentleman, who had been my interpreter, ſaid he was deſired by the reſt to ſet me right in a few miſtakes, which I had fallen into through the common imbecillity of human nature, and upon that allowance was leſs anſwerable for them. That this breed of Struldbrugs was peculiar to their country, for there were no ſuch people either in Balnibarbi, or Japan, where he had the honour to be ambaſſador from his Majeſty, and found the natives in both thoſe kingdoms very hard to believe, that the fact was poſſible; and it appeared from my aſtoniſhment, when he firſt mentioned the matter to me, that I received it as a thing wholly new, and ſcarcely to be credited. That in the two kingdoms above mentioned, where during his reſidence he had converſed very much, he obſerved long life to be the univerſal deſire and wiſh of mankind. That whoever had one foot in the grave, was ſure to hold back the other as ſtrongly as he could. That the oldeſt had ſtill hopes of living one day longer, and looked on death

as the greateſt evil, from which nature always
ted him to retreat; only in this iſland of Luggnagg
petite for living was not ſo eager, from the conti-
ample of the Struldbrugs before their eyes.
t the ſyſtem of living contrived by me was unrea-
and unjuſt; becauſe it ſuppoſed a perpetuity of
health, and vigour, which no man could be ſo
to hope, however extravagant he may be in his
. That the queſtion therefore was not, whether
would chuſe to be always in the prime of youth,
ed with proſperity and health; but how he would
perpetual life under all the uſual diſadvantages,
old age brings along with it. For although few
will avow their deſires of being immortal upon ſuch
conditions, yet in the two kingdoms before mention-
of Balnibarbi and Japan, he obſerved that every
deſired to put off death for ſome time longer, let it
each ever ſo late; and he rarely heard of any man
died willingly, except he were incited by the extre-
of grief or torture. And he appealed to me, whe-
in thoſe countries I had travelled, as well as my
, I had not obſerved the ſame general diſpoſition †.

After-

To this it may poſſibly be objected, That the perpetuity
outh, health, and vigour would be leſs a prodigy than the
tuity of life in a body ſubject to gradual decay, and might
fore be hoped without greater extravagance of folly. But
entiment here expreſſed, is that of a being to whom im-
ality, though not perpetual youth, was familiar; and in
the wiſh of perpetual youth only would have been ex-
gant, becauſe that only appeared from facts to be impoſſible.
ef.

f it be ſaid, That although the folly of deſiring life to be
nged under the diſadvantages of old age, is here finely ex-
; yet the deſire of terreſtrial immortality upon terms, on
alone, in the nature of things, it is poſſible, an exempti-
m diſeaſe, accident and decay, is tacitely allowed: It may
ſwered, That as we grow old by imperceptible degrees,
the moſt part we grow old without repining, and every
is ready to profeſs himſelf willing to die, when he ſhall
ertaken by the decrepitude of age in ſome future period;
hen every other eye ſees that this period is arrived, he is

After this preface he gave me a particular accou the Struldbrugs among them. He ſaid, they comm acted like mortals, till about thirty years old, after w by degrees they grew melancholly and dejected, enc ing in both till they came to fourſcore. This he le from their own confeſſion; for otherwiſe, there no ing above two or three of that ſpecies born in an they were too few to form a general obſervation When they came to fourſcore years, which is reck the extremity of living in this country, they had not ly all the follies and infirmities of other old men, many more, which aroſe from the dreadful proſpe never dying. They were not only opinionative, pee covetous, moroſe, vain, talkative; but incapable of fri ſhip, and dead to all natural affection, which neve ſcended below their grand-children. Envy and impo deſires are their prevailing paſſions. But thoſe obj againſt which their envy ſeems principally directed the vices of the younger ſort, and the deaths of the By reflecting on the former they find themſelves cu from all poſſibility of pleaſure; and whenever they funeral, they lament and repine that others are gon an harbour of reſt, to which they themſelves never hope to arrive. They have no remembrance of thing, but what they learned and obſerved in their y and middle age, and even that is very imperfect. for the truth or particulars of any fact it is ſafer to pend on common tradition, than upon their beſt re lections. The leaſt miſerable among them appear t thoſe, who turn to dotage, and entirely loſe their mories; theſe meet with more pity and aſſiſtance, cauſe they want many bad qualities, which abound others.

If a Struldbrug happen to marry one of his own k the marriage is diſſolved of courſe by the courteſy of kingdom, as ſoon as the younger of the two comes t fourſcore. For the law thinks it a reaſonable indulge

ſtill tenacious of life, and murmurs at the condition upon w he received his exiſtence. To reconcile old age therefo the thoughts of a diſſolution, appears to be all that was nece to a moral writer for practical purpoſes. *Hawkeſ.*

re condemned without any fault of their
al continuance in the world, ſhould not
doubled by the load of a wife.

ey have compleated the term of eighty
ooked on as dead in law; their heirs im-
to their eſtates, only a ſmall pittance is
ſupport; and the poor ones are main-
lick charge. After that period they are
any employment of truſt or profit; they
lands or take leaſes; neither are they
neſſes in any cauſe, either civil or crimi-
the deciſion of meers and bounds.

loſe their teeth and hair; they have at
ction of taſte, but eat and drink whate-
t without reliſh or appetite. The diſ-
ubject to ſtill continue, without encreaſ-
g. In talking they forget the common
ngs, and the names of perſons, even of
eir neareſt friends and relations. For
they never can amuſe themſelves with
their memory will not ſerve to carry
ginning of a ſentence to the end; and
ey are deprived of the only entertain-
ey might otherwiſe be capable.

of this country being always upon the
rugs of one age do not underſtand thoſe
her are they able after two hundred years
verſation (farther than by a few general
ir neighbours, the mortals; and thus
ne diſadvantage of living like foreigners
ntry.

account given me of the Struldbrugs, as
ember. I afterwards ſaw five or ſix of
e youngeſt not above two hundred years
rought to me at ſeveral times by ſome
but although they were told, that I was
and had ſeen all the world, they had
oſity to aſk me a queſtion; only deſired
em *ſlumskudask*, or a token of remem-
s a modeſt way of begging, to avoid the
forbids it, becauſe they are provided

for

for by the public, although indeed with a very large allowance.

They are deſpiſed and hated by all ſorts of people; when one of them is born, it is reckoned ominous, and their birth is recorded very particularly; ſo that you may know their age by conſulting the regiſter; which however hath not been kept above a thouſand years paſt, or at leaſt hath been deſtroyed by time or public diſturbances. But the uſual way of computing how old they are, is, by asking them what kings or great perſons they can remember, and then conſulting hiſtory; for infallibly the laſt prince in their mind did not begin his reign after they were fourſcore years old.

They were the moſt mortifying ſight I ever beheld; and the women more horrible than men. Beſides the uſual deformities in extreme old age, they acquired an additional ghaſtlineſs in proportion to their number of years, which is not to be deſcribed; and among half a dozen, I ſoon diſtinguiſhed which was the eldeſt, although there was not above a century or two between them.

The reader will eaſily believe, that from what I had heard and ſeen, my keen appetite for perpetuity of life was much abated. I grew heartily aſhamed of the pleaſing viſions I had formed; and thought no tyrant could invent a death, into which I would not run with pleaſure from ſuch a life. The king heard of all that had paſſed between me and my friends upon this occaſion, and rallied me very pleaſantly; wiſhing I could ſend a couple of Struldbrugs to my own country to arm our people againſt the fear of death*, but this it ſeems is forbidden by the fundamental laws of the kingdom, or elſe I ſhould have been well content with the trouble and expence of tranſporting them.

I could not but agree, that the laws of this kingdom relating to the Struldbrugs were founded upon the ſtrong

* Perhaps it may not be wholly uſeleſs to remark, that the ſight of a Struldbrug would no otherwiſe arm thoſe againſt the fear of death, who have no hope beyond it, than a man is armed againſt the fear of breaking his limbs, who jumps out of a window when his houſe is on fire. *Hawkeſ.*

eſt reaſons, and ſuch as any other country would be under the neceſſity of enacting in the like circumſtances. Otherwiſe, as avarice is the neceſſary conſequent of old age, thoſe immortals would in time become proprietors of the whole nation, and engroſs the civil power; which, for want of abilities to manage, muſt end in the ruin of the public.

CHAP. XI.

The author leaves Luggnagg, *and ſails to* Japan. *From thence he returns in a* Dutch *ſhip to* Amſterdam, *and from* Amſterdam *to* England.

I Thought this account of the Struldbrugs might be ſome entertainment to the reader, becauſe it ſeems to be a little out of the common way; at leaſt I do not remember to have met the like in any book of travels, that hath come to my hands: and if I am deceived, my excuſe muſt be, that it is neceſſary * for travellers, who deſcribe the ſame country, very often to agree in dwelling on the ſame particulars, without deſerving the cenſure of having borrowed or tranſcribed from thoſe who wrote before them.

There is indeed a perpetual commerce between this kingdom and the great empire of Japan; and it is very probable, that the Japaneſe authors may have given ſome account of the Struldbrugs; but my ſtay in Japan was ſo ſhort, and I was ſo intirely a ſtranger to the language, that I was not qualified to make any enquiries. But I hope the Dutch upon this notice will be curious and able enough to ſupply my defects.

His Majeſty having often preſſed me to accept ſome

* The word *neceſſary* is here uſed in the ſame manner, as when by the idiom of our language it means *convenient*, though it is to be underſtood in its proper and original ſignification. "Travellers who deſcribe the ſame country, very often *neceſ-* "*ſarily* agree in dwelling on the ſame particulars, and there- "fore *do not deſerve* the cenſure of having borrowed, *etc.*" *Hawkeſ.*

employment in his court, and finding me abſolutely determined to return to my native country, was pleaſed to give me his licence to depart, and honoured me with a letter of recommendation under his own hand to the Emperor of Japan. He likewiſe preſented me with four hundred forty-four large pieces of gold (this nation delighting in even numbers) and a red diamond, which I ſold in England for eleven hundred pounds.

On the 6th day of May, 1709, I took a ſolemn leave of his Majeſty and all my friends. This prince was ſo gracious, as to order a guard to conduct me to Glanguenſtald, which is a royal port to the *ſouth-weſt* part of the iſland. In ſix days I found a veſſel ready to carry me to Japan, and ſpent fifteen days in the voyage. We landed at a ſmall port-town called Xamoſchi, ſituated on the *ſouth-eaſt* part of Japan; the town lies on the *weſtern* point, where there is a narrow ſtreight leading *northward* into a long arm of the ſea, upon the *north-weſt* part of which, Yedo the metropolis ſtands. At landing I ſhewed the cuſtom-houſe officers my letter from the King of Luggnagg to his Imperial Majeſty. They knew the ſeal perfectly well; it was as broad as the palm of my hand. The impreſſion was *A King lifting up a lame beggar from the earth.* The magiſtrates of the town, hearing of my letter, received me as a public miniſter: they provided me with carriages and ſervants, and bore my charges to Yedo, where I was admitted to an audience, and delivered my letter, which was opened with great ceremony, and explained to the Emperor by an interpreter, who then gave me notice by his Majeſty's order, that I ſhould ſignify my requeſt, and whatever it were, it ſhould be granted for the ſake of his royal brother of Luggnagg. This interpreter was a perſon employed to tranſact affairs with the Hollanders; he ſoon conjectured by my countenance that I was an European, and therefore repeated his Majeſty's commands in Low-dutch, which he ſpoke perfectly well. I anſwered (as I had before determined) that I was a Dutch merchant ſhipwrecked in a very remote country, from whence I had travelled by ſea and land to Luggnagg, and then took ſhipping for Japan, where I knew my countrymen often traded, and with ſome of theſe I hoped to get an opportunity of returning into Eu-

rop

rope: I therefore moſt humbly entreated his royal favour to give order, that I ſhould be conducted in ſafety to Nangaſac: to this I added another petition, that for the ſake of my patron the King of Luggnagg, his Majeſty would condeſcend to excuſe my performing the ceremony impoſed on my countrymen, of *trampling upon the crucifix*: becauſe I had been thrown into his kingdom by my misfortunes, without any intention of trading. When this latter petition was interpreted to the Emperor, he ſeemed a little ſurpriſed; and ſaid, he believed I was the firſt of my countrymen, who ever made any ſcruple in this point; and that he began to doubt, whether I was a real Hollander, or no; but rather ſuſpected I muſt be a Chriſtian. However, for the reaſons I had offered, but chiefly to gratify the King of Luggnagg, by an uncommon mark of his favour, he would comply with the *ſingularity* of my humour; but the affair muſt be managed with dexterity, and his officers ſhould be commanded to let me paſs as it were by forgetfulneſs. For he aſſured me, that if the ſecret ſhould be diſcovered by my countrymen the Dutch, they would cut my throat in the voyage. I returned my thanks by the interpreter for ſo unuſual a favour; and ſome troops being at that time on their march to Nangaſac, the commanding officer had orders to convey me ſafe thither, with particular inſtructions about the buſineſs of the *crucifix*.

On the 9th day of June, 1709, I arrived at Nangaſac after a very long and troubleſome journey. I ſoon fell into company of ſome Dutch ſailors belonging to the Amboyna of Amſterdam, a ſtout ſhip of 450 tons. I had lived long in Holland, purſuing my ſtudies at Leyden, and I ſpoke Dutch well. The ſeamen ſoon knew from whence I came laſt; they were curious to enquire into my voyages, and courſe of life. I made up a ſtory as ſhort and probable as I could, but concealed the greateſt part. I knew many perſons in Holland; I was able to invent names for my parents, whom I pretended to be obſcure people in the province of Guelderland. I would have given the captain (one Theodorus Vangrult) what he pleaſed to ask for my voyage to Holland; but underſtanding I was a ſurgeon, he was contented to take half the uſual rate, on condition that I would ſerve him in the

way

way of my calling. Before we took ſhipping, I was often asked by ſome of the crew, whether I had performed the ceremony above mentioned? I evaded the queſtion by general anſwers, that I had ſatisfied the Emperor and court in all particulars. However, a malicious rogue of a skipper went to an officer, and pointing to me, told him I had not yet *trampled on the crucifix*: but the other, who had received inſtructions to let me paſs, gave the raſcal twenty ſtrokes on the ſhoulders with a bamboo; after which I was no more troubled with ſuch queſtions.

Nothing happened worth mentioning in this voyage. We ſailed with a fair wind to the Cape of Good Hope, where we ſtaid only to take in freſh water. On the 10th of April 1710, we arrived ſafe at Amſterdam, having loſt only three men by ſickneſs in the voyage, and a fourth who fell from the fore-maſt into the ſea, not far from the coaſt of Guiney. From Amſterdam I ſoon after ſet ſail for England in a ſmall veſſel belonging to that city.

On the 16th of April we put in at the Downs. I landed next morning, and ſaw once more my native country, after an abſence of five years and ſix months complete. I went ſtrait to Redriff, where I arrived the ſame day, at two in the afternoon, and found my wife and family in good health.

TRAVELS into ſeveral REMOTE NATIONS of the World.

PART IV.

A VOYAGE to the Country of the HOUYHNHNMS.

CHAP. I.

The author ſets out as captain of a ſhip. His men conſpire againſt him, confine him a long time to his cabbin. Set him on ſhore in an unknown land. He travels up into the country. The Yahoos, *a ſtrange ſort of animal, deſcribed. The author meets two* Houyhnhnms.

Continued at home with my wife and children about five months in a very happy condition, if I could have ned the leſſon of knowing when I was well. I left poor wife big with child, and accepted an advantage-ous

In this laſt part of his imaginary travels, Swift has indulged iſanthropy that is intolerable. The repreſentation which he given us of human nature, muſt terrify, and even debaſe the d of the reader who views it. His ſallies of wit and humour all their force, nothing remaining but a melancholy and diſ-eable impreſſion: we are diſguſted, not entertained; we are ked, not inſtructed by the fable. I ſhould therefore chuſe to e no notice of his YAHOOS, did I not think it neceſſary to rt the vindication of human nature, and thereby, in ſome mea-, to pay my duty to the great Author of our ſpecies, who has ated us in a very fearful, and a very wonderful manner.

ous offer made me to be captain of the Adventure, merchant-man of 350 tuns: for I underſtood na well, and being grown weary of a ſurgeon's empl

We are compoſed of a mind, and of a body, intimatel and mutually affecting each other. Their operations indeed tirely different. Whether the immortal ſpirit, that enlivens machine, is originally of a ſuperior nature in various bodies I own, ſeems moſt conſiſtent, and agreeable to the ſcale a of beings), or whether the difference depends on a ſymmetry, liar ſtructure of the organs combined with it, is beyond my determine. It is evidently certain, that the body is curiouſ ed with proper organs to delight, and ſuch as are adapted t neceſſary uſes of life. The ſpirit animates the whole; it gu natural appetites, and confines them within juſt limits. natural force of this ſpirit is often immerſed in matter; mind becomes ſubſervient to paſſions, which it ought to go direct. Horace, although of the Epicurean doctrine, ackn this truth, where he ſays,

Atque effigit humo divinae particulam aurae.

It is no leſs evident, that this immortal ſpirit has an ind power of acting, and, when cultivated in a proper manne ingly quits the corporeal frame within which it is impriſo ſoars into higher and more ſpacious regions; where, with ergy, which I had almoſt ſaid was divine, it ranges among t venly bodies, that, in this lower world, are ſcarce viſible to and we can at once explain the diſtance, magnitude, and v the planets, and can foretel, even to a degree of minute particular time when a comet will return, and when the ſu eclipſed in the next century. Theſe powers certainly e dignity of human nature, and the ſurpriſing effects of the rial ſpirit within us; which, in ſo confined a ſtate, can th gage itſelf from the fetters of matter. It is from this pre- of the ſoul over the body, that we are enabled to view order and curious variety of different beings; to conſ cultivate the natural productions of the earth; and to and intimate the wiſe benevolence which reigns throughout

ea, which however I could exerciſe upon occaſion, I
k a ſkilful young man of that calling, one Robert
efoy, into my ſhip. We ſet ſail from Portſmouth up-
on

e ſyſtem of the univerſe. It is from hence, that we form
l laws for our conduct. From hence we delight in copy-
that great original, who in his eſſence is utterly incompre-
ble, but in his influence is powerfully apparent to every de-
of his creation. From hence too we perceive a real beau-
virtue, and a diſtinction between good and evil. Virtue
with the utmoſt generoſity, and with no view to her own
antage; while vice, like a glutton, feeds herſelf enormouſly,
then is willing to diſgorge the naufeous offals of her feaſt.
I ſhall wander too far, eſpecially as I flatter myſelf, that your
l is ſo good, and ſo unprejudiced, that you will more eaſily feel
I can illuſtrate the truth of theſe aſſertions.

vift deduces his obſervations from wrong principles: for, in his
of Houyhnhnms, he conſiders the ſoul and body in their
degenerate and uncultivated ſtate; the former as a ſlave to
appetites of the latter. He ſeems inſenſible of the ſurpriſing
haniſm and beauty of every part of the human compoſition.
forgets the fine deſcription which Ovid gives of mankind:

Os homini ſublime dedit, coelumque tueri
Juſſit, et erectos ad ſidera tollere vultus.

In painting YAHOOS he becomes one himſelf. Nor is the
re which he draws of the Houyhnhnms, inviting or amuſing.
ants both light and ſhade to adorn it. It is cold and inſipid,
there view the pure inſtincts of brutes, unaſſiſted by any
wledge of letters, acting within their own narrow ſphere,
ely for their immediate preſervation. They are incapable of
g wrong, therefore they act right. It is ſurely a very low
acter given to creatures, in whom the author would inſinuate
e degree of reaſon, that they act inoffenſively, when they have
ner the motive nor the power to act otherwiſe. Their vir-
s qualities are only negatives. Swift himſelf, amidſt all his
y, muſt have confeſſed, that to moderate our paſſions, to ex-
our munificence to others, to enlarge our underſtanding, and
iſe our idea of the Almighty by contemplating his works, is

on the 7th day of September, 1710; on the 14th, met with captain Pocock of Briſtol, at Teneriff, who going to the bay of Campeachy to cut logwood. On t 16

not only the buſineſs but often the practice, and the ſtudy of human mind. It is too certain, that no individual has ever p ſeſſed every qualification and excellence. However, ſuch an aſſ blage of different virtues may ſtill be collected from different perſo as are ſufficient to place the dignity of human nature in an ami and exalted ſtation. We muſt lament indeed the many inſtan of thoſe who degenerate or go aſtray from the end and intention their being. The true ſource of this depravity is often owing the want of education, to the falſe indulgence of parents, o ſome other bad cauſes, which are conſtantly prevalent in every tion. Many of theſe errors are finely ridiculed in the foreg parts of this romance: but the voyage to the Houyhnhnms is a inſult upon mankind.

I am heartily tired of the laſt part of Gulliver's travels; and glad, that, having exhauſted all my obſervations on this diſag able ſubject, I may finiſh my letter; eſpecially as the concluſio it naturally turns my thoughts from YAHOOS, to one of deareſt pledges I have upon earth, yourſelf, *etc. Orrery.*

Some others, beſides Lord Orrery, have thought proper to ſure Gulliver's voyage to the Houyhnhnms. But whether it their animadverſions proceeded from the infirmity of their ment, or from ſome *Yahoo* depravity in their own nature, I ſhal vouchſafe to inquire; as the daily occurrences of this wret world prove, illuſtrate, and confirm all the ſarcaſms of the de Shall we praiſe that excellent moraliſt, the humorous Hogarth expoſing midnight revels, debaucheries, and a thouſand other and follies of human kind, in a ſeries of hieroglyphics, ſuit the improvement and the correction of the wild, the gay, the lic, and the extravagant? And ſhall we condemn a preache righteouſneſs, for expoſing, under the character of a naſty unm able *Yahoo*, the deformity, the blackneſs, the filthineſs, and ruption of thoſe helliſh, abominable vices, which inflame the of God againſt the children of diſobedience; and ſubject them out repentance, that is, without a thorough change of life and

he was parted from us in a ſtorm; I heard, ſince
:turn, that his ſhip foundered, and none eſc ped,
ıe cabbin-boy. He was an honeſt man, and a good
ſailor,

› everlaſting perdition? Ought a preacher of righteouſneſs,
a watchman of the Chriſtian faith (who is accountable for
:nts, and obliged to warn the innocent, as well as terrify the
and profane), to hold his peace, like a dumb dog, that can-
:k, when avarice, fraud, cheating, violence, rapine, extortion,
', oppreſſion, tyranny, rancour, envy, malice, detraction, hatred,
e, murder, whoredom, adultery, laſciviouſneſs, bribery, corrup-
imping, lying, perjury, ſubornation, treachery, ingratitude, gam-
ttery, drunkenneſs, gluttony, luxury, vanity, effeminacy, cow-
pride, impudence, hypocriſy, infidelity, blaſphemy, idolatry,
y, and innumerable other vices, are as epidemical as the pox;
any of them the notorious characteriſtics of the bulk of hu-
ind? I would aſk thoſe mighty ſofteners, theſe kind pretenders
ievolence, theſe hollow charity-mongers, what is their real
ı of that *old-ſerpent*, which, like a roaring lion, traverſeth the
ſeeking whom he may devour? Was he not created by the
hty, pure, faultleſs, intelligent? But is there now, throughout
hole ſyſtem of created exiſtence, any *beaſt*, any *Yahoo*, any
ſo vile, ſo baſe, ſo corrupted? And whence originally pro-
the change? Was it not from the abuſe of that freedom,
t which no created *intelligence* can be reputed faithful, wiſe,
or virtuous, in the eyes of his Creator? And ſurely, if this
reat, once glorious, ſpirit hath been reduced for many thouſ-
ages, for ought we know to the contrary, below all the ſeveral
ions of created beings, whether intelligent, animal or inſen-
and expoſed to the fury of that avenging, though merciful,
who is the fountain of all wiſdom, gooodneſs, and virtue; are
t to conclude, by an exact parity of reaſon, that every moral
is equally accountable to God for that degree of intelligence
:rfection, which determines the nature of his exiſtence? And
his very principle, which cannot be denied without running
ıe laſt of abſurdities, and which in fact is the reaſoning of
ter throughout his whole 2*d* chapter of his 2*d* epiſtle, that
re man, that glorious creature man, is deſervedly more con-
ible than a brute beaſt, when he flies in the face of his Crea-

ſailor, but a little too poſitive in his own opinions, which was the cauſe of his deſtruction, as it hath been of ſeveral others. For if he had followed my advice, he might have been ſafe at home with his family at this time, as well as myſelf.

I had ſeveral men died in my ſhip of calentures, ſo that I was forced to get recruits out of Barbadoes and the Leeward Iſlands, where I touched by the direction of the merchants who employed me; which I had ſoon too much cauſe to repent; for I found afterwards, that moſt of them had been Bucaneers *. I had fifty hands on board, and my orders were, that I ſhould trade with the Indians in the South-ſea, and make what diſcoveries I could. Theſe rogues, whom I had picked up, debauched my other men, and they all formed a conſpiracy to ſeize the ſhip, and ſecure me; which they did one morning, ruſhing into my cabbin, and binding me hand and foot, threatening to throw me over-board if I offered to ſtir. I told them, I was their priſoner, and would ſubmit. This they made me ſwear to do, and then they unbound me, only faſtening one of my legs with a chain near my bed, and placed a centry at my door with his piece charged, who was commanded to ſhoot me dead,

tor, by liſting under the banner of the enemy; and perverts that reaſon which was deſigned to have been the glory of his nature, even the directing ſpirit of his life and demeanour, to the vileſt, the moſt execrable, the moſt helliſh purpoſes. And this manifeſtly appears to be the ground-work of the whole ſatire contained in the voyage to the Houyhnhnms. [Then the author inſerts ſeveral paſſages from the holy ſcriptures, and the Apocrypha, which, he ſays will fully juſtify all the ſarcaſms of the doctor. But theſe we omit as improper in a political romance.]

And to conclude: if the brutality and filthineſs of the *Yahoos* be repreſented by the ſatiric genius of Dr. Swift, in colours the moſt ſhocking and deteſtable, as they certainly are, and as, in fact, they ought to have been, the picture is the more ſtriking, as well as the more terrible; and, upon that account, more likely to inforce the obligation of religion and virtue upon the ſouls of men. *Swift.*

* Certain pyrates, that infeſted the Weſt Indies, were ſo called *Hawkeſ.*

attempted my liberty. They ſent me down victuals drink, and took the government of the ſhip to themes. Their deſign was to turn pyrates, and plunder Spaniards, which they could not do, till they got re men. But firſt they reſolved to ſell the goods in ſhip, and then go to Madagaſcar for recruits, ſeveamong them having died ſince my confinement. They ed many weeks, and traded with the Indians; but I w not what courſe they took, being kept a cloſe prier in my cabbin, and expecting nothing leſs than to murdered, as they often threatened me.

Upon the 9th day of May 1711, one James Welch ne down to my cabbin, and ſaid, he had orders from captain to ſet me a-ſhore. I expoſtulated with him, in vain; neither would he ſo much as tell me, who ir new captain was. They forced me into the longt, letting me put on my beſt ſuit of cloaths, which re as good as new, and take a ſmall bundle of linen, no arms, except my hanger; and they were ſo civil not to ſearch my pockets, into which I conveyed what ney I had, with ſome other little neceſſaries. They ved about a league; and then ſet me down on a ſtrand. leſired them to tell me what country it was. They ſwore, they knew no more than myſelf, but ſaid, that captain (as they called him) was reſolved, after they d ſold the lading, to get rid of me in the firſt place ere they could diſcover land. They puſhed off imdiately, adviſing me to make haſte, for fear of being ertaken with the tide; and ſo bad me farewel.

In this deſolate condition I advanced forward, and n got upon firm ground, where I ſat down on a bank reſt myſelf, and conſider what I had beſt do. When I s a little refreſhed, I went up into the country, reſolg to deliver myſelf to the firſt ſavages I ſhould meet, d purchaſe my life from them, by ſome bracelets, glaſsgs, and other toys, which ſailors uſually provide themves with in thoſe voyages, and whereof I had ſome aut me. The land was divided by long rows of trees, t regularly planted, but naturally growing; there was eat plenty of graſs, and ſeveral fields of oats. I walkvery circumſpectly for fear of being ſurpriſed, or ſudnly ſhot with an arrow from behind, or on either ſide.

I ſell

I fell into a beaten road, where I ſaw many tracks of human feet, and ſome of cows, but moſt of horſes. At laſt I beheld ſeveral animals in a field, and one or two of the ſame kind ſitting in trees. Their ſhape was very ſingular and deformed, which a little diſcompoſed me, ſo that I lay down behind a thicket to obſerve them better. Some of them coming forward near the place where I lay, gave me an opportunity of diſtinctly marking their form. Their heads and breaſts were covered with a thick hair, ſome frizled, and others lank; they had beards like goats, and a long ridge of hair down their backs, and the fore-parts of their legs and feet; but the reſt of their bodies were bare, ſo that I might ſee their ſkins, which were of a brown buff-colour. They had no tails, nor any hair at all on their buttocks, except about the *anus*; which, I preſume, nature had placed there to defend them, as they ſat on the ground; for this poſture they uſed, as well as lying down, and often ſtood on their hind-feet. They climbed high trees as nimbly as a ſquirrel; for they had ſtrong extended claws before and behind terminating in ſharp points, and hooked. They would often ſpring, and bound, and leap with prodigious agility. The females were not ſo large as the males; they had long lank hair on their heads, but none on their faces, nor any thing more than a ſort of down on the reſt of their bodies, except about the *anus* and *pudenda*. Their dugs hung between their fore-feet, and often reached almoſt to the ground as they walked. The hair of both ſexes was of ſeveral colours, brown, red, black, and yellow. Upon the whole, I never beheld in all my travels ſo diſagreeable an animal, or one againſt which I naturally conceived ſo ſtrong an antipathy. So that thinking I had ſeen enough, full of contempt and averſion, I got up, and purſued the beaten road, hoping it might direct me to the cabbin of ſome Indian. I had not got far when I met one of theſe creatures full in my way, and coming up directly to me. The ugly monſter, when he ſaw me, diſtorted ſeveral ways every feature of his viſage, and ſtared as at an object he had never ſeen before; then approaching nearer, lifted up his fore-paw, whether out of curioſity or miſchief, I could not tell: but I drew my hanger, and gave him a good blow with the flat of

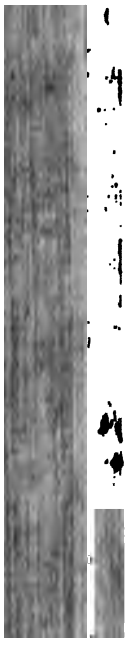
or I durſt not ſtrike with the edge, fearing the in-
its might be provoked againſt me, if they ſhould
o know, that I had killed or maimed any of their

When the beaſt felt the ſmart, he drew back,
ared ſo loud, that a herd of at leaſt forty came
g about me from the next field, howling and ma-
dious faces; but I ran to the body of a tree, and
; my back againſt it, kept them off by waving my
. Several of this curſed brood getting hold of the
es behind, leapt up into the tree, from whence they
to diſcharge their excrements on my head: howe-
eſcaped pretty well by ſticking cloſe to the ſtem of
e, but was almoſt ſtifled with the filth, which fell
me on every ſide.

he midſt of this diſtreſs, I obſerved them all to run
on a ſudden as faſt as they could, at which I ven-
o leave the tree, and purſue the road, wonder-
at it was that could put them into this fright. But
g on my left hand, I ſaw a horſe walking ſoftly in
d; which my perſecutors having ſooner diſcover-
as the cauſe of their flight. The horſe ſtarted a
when he came near me, but ſoon recovering him-
oked full in my face with manifeſt tokens of won-
e viewed my hands and feet, walking round me ſe-
imes. I would have purſued my journey, but he
himſelf directly in the way, yet looking with a
ild aſpect, never offering the leaſt violence. We
gazing at each other for ſome time; at laſt I took
ldneſs to reach my hand towards his neck with a
to ſtroak it, uſing the common ſtyle and whiſtle of
, when they are going to handle a ſtrange horſe.
is animal ſeemed to receive my civilities with diſdain,
his head, and bent his brows, ſoftly raiſing up his
fore-foot to remove my hand. Then he neighed
or four times, but in ſo different a cadence, that
oft began to think he was ſpeaking to himſelf in
anguage of his own.

hile he and I were thus employed, another horſe
up; who applying himſelf to the firſt in a very for-
anner, they gently ſtruck each other's right hoof
; neighing ſeveral times by turns, and varying the
which ſeemed to be almoſt articulate. They

went



proportionable degree of reaſon, they mu
wiſeſt people upon earth. This thougl
much comfort, that I reſolved to go fo
could diſcover ſome houſe or village, or
of the natives, leaving the two horſes to
ther as they pleaſed. But the firſt, who
grey, obſerving me to ſteal off, neighed
expreſſive a tone, that I fancied myſelf
what he meant; whereupon I turned b.
near him to expect his farther commands,
my fear as much as I could; for I begai
pain, how this adventure might terminate
er will eaſily believe, I did not much like
tuation.

The two horſes came up cloſe to me,
great earneſtneſs upon my face and han
ſteed rubbed my hat all round with his r
and diſcompoſed it ſo much, that I was f
it better, by taking it off and ſettling it a
both he and his companion (who was bi
peared to be much ſurpriſed; the latter
of my coat, and finding it to hang looſe
both looked with new ſigns of wonder.
right hand, ſeeming to admire the ſoftn
but he ſqueezed it ſo hard between hi
naſtern, that I was forced to roar: afi

thus metamorphoſed themſelves upon ſome deſign, and, ſeeing a ſtranger in the way, reſolved to divert themſelves with him; or perhaps were really amazed at the ſight of a man ſo very different in habit, feature, and complexion, from thoſe who might probably live in ſo remote a climate. Upon the ſtrength of this reaſoning, I ventured to addreſs them in the following manner: gentlemen, if you be conjurers, as I have good cauſe to believe, you can underſtand any language; therefore I make bold to let your worſhips know, that I am a poor diſtreſſed Engliſh-man, driven by his misfortunes upon your coaſt, and I intreat one of you to let me ride upon his back, as if he were a real horſe, to ſome houſe or village, where I can be relieved. In return of which favour I will make you a preſent of this knife and bracelet (taking them out of my pocket). The two creatures ſtood ſilent while I ſpoke, ſeeming to liſten with great attention; and when I had ended, they neighed frequently towards each other, as if they were engaged in ſerious converſation. I plainly obſerved, that their language expreſſed the paſſions very well, and the words might with little pains be reſolved into an alphabet more eaſily than the Chineſe.

I could frequently diſtinguiſh the word *yahoo*, which was repeated by each of them ſeveral times; and although it was impoſſible for me to conjecture what it meant, yet, while the two horſes were buſy in converſation, I endeavoured to practiſe this word upon my tongue; and as ſoon as they were ſilent, I boldly pronounced *yahoo* in a loud voice, imitating at the ſame time, as near as I could, the neighing of a horſe; at which they were both viſibly ſurpriſed, and the grey repeated the ſame word twice, as if he meant to teach me the right accent, wherein I ſpoke after him as well as I could, and found myſelf perceivably to improve every time, though very far from any degree of perfection. Then the bay tried me with a ſecond word much harder to be pronounced; but, reducing it to the Engliſh orthography, may be ſpelt thus, Houyhnhnm. I did not ſucceed in this ſo well as the former; but after two or three farther trials, I had better fortune; and they both appeared amazed at my capacity.

After ſome farther diſcourſe, which I then conjectur-

ed

ed might relate to me, the two friends took their leave with the ſame compliment of ſtriking each other's hoof; and the grey made me ſigns that I ſhould walk before him; wherein I thought it prudent to comply, till I could find a better director. When I offered to ſlacken my pace, he would cry *hhuun, hhuun*; I gueſſed his meaning, and gave him to underſtand, as well as I could, that I was weary, and not able to walk faſter; upon which he would ſtand a while to let me reſt.

CHAP. II.

The author conducted by a Houyhnhnm *to his houſe. The houſe deſcribed. The author's reception. The food of the* Houyhnhnms. *The author in diſtreſs for want of meat, is at laſt relieved. His manner of feeding in that country.*

HAVING travelled about three miles, we came to a long kind of building, made of timber ſtuck in the ground, and wattled a-croſs; the roof was low, and covered with ſtraw. I now began to be a little comforted; and took out ſome toys, which travellers uſually carry for preſents to the ſavage Indians of America and other parts, in hopes the people of the houſe would be thereby encouraged to receive me kindly. The horſe made me ſign to go in firſt; it was a large room with a ſmooth clay floor, and a rack and manger, extending the whole length on one ſide. There were three nags, and two mares, not eating, but ſome of them ſitting down upon their hams, which I very much wondered at; but wondered more to ſee the reſt employed in domeſtic buſineſs. theſe ſeemed but ordinary cattle: however this confirmed my firſt opinion, that a people, who could ſo far civilize brute animals, muſt needs excel in wiſdom all the nations of the world. The grey came in juſt after, and there prevented any ill treatment which the others might have given me. He neighed to them ſeveral times in a ſtile of authority, and received anſwers.

Beyond this room there were three others reaching the length of the houſe, to which you paſſed through the door

s, oppoſite to each other, in the manner of a viſta; went through the ſecond room towards the third; the grey walked in firſt, beckoning me to attend: I ed in the ſecond room, and got ready my preſents he maſter and miſtreſs of the houſe: they were two es, three bracelets of falſe pearl, a ſmall looking-glaſs, a bead-necklace. The horſe neighed three or four s, and I waited to hear ſome anſwers in a human e, but I heard no other returns than in the ſame di- t, only one or two a little ſhriller than his. I began hink, that this houſe muſt belong to ſome perſon of it note among them, becauſe there appeared ſo much mony before I could gain admittance. But, that a of quality ſhould be ſerved all by horſes, was be- d my comprehenſion. I feared my brain was diſturb- by my ſufferings and misfortunes: I rouſed myſelf, looked about me in the room, where I was left alone; was furniſhed like the firſt, only after a more elegant ner. I rubbed my eyes often, but the ſame objects occurred. I pinched my arms and ſides to awake elf, hoping I might be in a dream. I then abſolute- oncluded, that all theſe appearances could be nothing but necromancy and magic. But I had no time to ue theſe reflections; for the grey horſe came to the r, and made me a ſign to follow him into the third n; where I ſaw a very comely mare, together with lt and fole, ſitting on their haunches upon matts of w, not unartfully made and perfectly neat and clean. he mare ſoon after my entrance roſe from her matt, coming up cloſe, after having nicely obſerved my ds and face, gave me a moſt contemptuous look; then ing to the horſe, I heard the word *yahoo* often re- ed betwixt them; the meaning of which word I could then comprehend, although it was the firſt I had ned to pronounce; but I was ſoon better informed to everlaſting mortification: for the horſe beckoning to with his head, and repeating the word *hhuun, hhuun*, e did upon the road, which I underſtood was to at- l him, led me out into a kind of court, where was a- er building at ſome diſtance from the houſe. Here entered, and I ſaw three of thoſe deteſtable creatures, ch I firſt met after my landing, feeding upon roots

and the flesh of some animals, which I afterwards found to be that of asses and dogs, and now and then a cow dead by accident or disease. They were all tied by the neck with strong wyths fastened to a beam; they held their food between the claws of their fore-feet, and tore it with their teeth.

The master horse ordered a sorrel nag, one of his servants, to untie the largest of these animals, and take him into the yard. The beast and I were brought close together; and our countenances diligently compared both by master and servant, who thereupon repeated several times the word *yahoo*. My horror and astonishment are not to be described, when I observed in this abominable animal a perfect human figure: the face of it indeed was flat and broad, the nose depressed, the lips large, and the mouth wide: but these differences are common to all savage nations, where the lineaments of the countenance are distorted by the natives suffering their infants to lie grovelling on the earth, or by carrying them on their backs nuzzling with their face against the mother's shoulders. The fore-feet of the *yahoo* differed from my hands in nothing else, but the length of the nails, the coarseness and brownness of the palms, and the hairiness on the backs. There was the same resemblance between our feet, with the same differences, which I knew very well, though the horses did not, because of my shoes and stockings; the same in every part of our bodies, except as to hairiness and colour, which I have already described.

The great difficulty, that seemed to stick with the two horses, was, to see the rest of my body so very different from that of a *yahoo*, for which I was obliged to my cloaths, whereof they had no conception. The sorrel nag offered me a root, which he held (after their manner as we shall describe in its proper place) between his hoof and pastern: I took it in my hand, and having smelt it returned it to him again as civilly as I could. He brought out of the *yahoo*'s kennel a piece of ass's flesh but it smelt so offensively, that I returned from it with loathing; he then threw it to the *yahoo*, by whom it was greedily devoured *. He afterwards shewed me a whi

* Whoever is disgusted with this picture of a *Yahoo*, wou

hay and a fetlock full of oats; but I ſhook my head ignify, that neither of theſe were food for me. And eed I now apprehended, that I muſt abſolutely ſtarve, did not get to ſome of my own ſpecies; for as to ſe filthy *yahoos*, although there were few greater lo s of mankind at that time, than myſelf; yet I con , I never ſaw any ſenſitive being ſo deteſtable on all ac unts; and the more I came near them, the more hate they grew, while I ſtayed in that country. This the ſter-horſe obſerved by my behaviour, and therefore t the *yahoo* back to his kennel. He then put his fore- f to his mouth, at which I was much ſurpriſed, al ugh he did with eaſe, and with a motion that appear- perfectly natural; and made other ſigns to know what ould eat; but I could not return him ſuch an anſwer he was able to apprehend; and if he had underſtood , I did not ſee how it was poſſible to contrive any way finding myſelf nouriſhment. While we were thus en- ged, I obſerved a cow paſſing by; whereupon I point- to her, and expreſſed a deſire to go and milk her: is had its effect; for he led me back into the houſe, d ordered a mare-ſervant to open a room, where a od ſtore of milk lay in earthen and wooden veſſels after very orderly and cleanly manner. She gave me a large wl-full, of which I drank very heartily, and found my- f well refreſhed.

About noon I ſaw coming towards the houſe a kind of hicle drawn like a ſledge by four *yahoos*. There was it an old ſteed, who ſeemed to be quality; he a- hted with his hind-feet forward, having by accident t a hurt in his left fore-foot. He came to dine with r horſe, who received him with great civility. They ed in the beſt room, and had oats boiled in milk for e ſecond courſe, which the old horſe eat warm, but reſt cold. Their mangers were placed circular in e middle of the room, and divided into ſeveral partiti-

well to reflect, that it becomes his own in exact proportion as deviates from virtue, for virtue is the perfection of reaſon. e appetites of thoſe abandoned to vice, are not leſs brutal and did than that of a *yahoo* for aſſes fleſh; nor is their life a ſtate of s abject ſervility. *Hawkeſ.*

ons, round which they ſat on their haunches upon b
of ſtraw. In the middle was a large rack, with a
anſwering to every partition of the manger. So
each horſe and mare eat their own hay, and their
maſh of oats and milk, with much decency and re
rity. The behaviour of the young colt and fole ap
ed very modeſt; and that of the maſter and miſtreſ
tremely chearful and complaiſant to their gueſt.
grey ordered me to ſtand by him; and much diſc
paſſed between him and his friend concerning me,
found by the ſtranger's often looking at me, and the
quent repetition of the word *yahoo*.

I happened to wear my gloves, which the maſter
obſerving, ſeemed perplexed, diſcovering ſigns of wo
what I had done to my fore-feet; he put his hoof
or four times to them, as if he would ſignify, t
ſhould reduce them to their former ſhape, which I
ſently did, pulling off both my gloves, and putting
into my pocket. This occaſioned farther talk, and I
the company was pleaſed with my behaviour, where
ſoon found the good effects. I was ordered to ſpeak
few words I underſtood; and while they were at din
the maſter taught me names for oats, milk, fire,
ter, and ſome others; which I could readily prono
after him, having from my youth a great facility in le
ing languages.

When dinner was done, the maſter-horſe took m
ſide, and by ſigns and words made me underſtand
concern he was in, that I had nothing to eat. Oa
their tongue are called *hlunnh*. This word I pronou
two or three times; for although I had refuſed t
at firſt, yet upon ſecond thoughts I conſidered, th
could contrive to make of them a kind of bread, w
might be ſufficient with milk to keep me alive, till I c
make my eſcape to ſome other country, and to creat
of my own ſpecies. The horſe immediately order
white mare-ſervant of his family to bring me a g
quantity of oats in a ſort of wooden tray. Theſe I h
ed before the fire, as well as I could, and rubbed t
till the huſks came off, which I made a ſhift to winn
from the grain; I ground and beat them between t
ſtones, then took water, and made them into a paſt

ke, which I toaſted at the fire, and eat warm with lk. It was at firſt a very inſipid diet, though common ough in many parts of Europe, but grew tolerable by ne; and having been often reduced to hard fare in my :, this was not the firſt experiment I had made, how ſily nature is ſatisfied. And I cannot but obſerve, that ıever had one hour's ſickneſs while I ſtaid in this iſland. is true, I ſometimes made a ſhift to catch a rabbit, bird, by ſpringes made of *yahoo*'s hairs; and I often thered wholeſome herbs, which I boiled or eat as ads with my bread; and now and then, for a rarity, nade a little butter, and drank the whey. I was at t at a great loſs for ſalt; but cuſtom ſoon reconciled : to the want of it; and I am confident, that the freent uſe of ſalt among us is an effect of luxury, and was t introduced only as a provocative to drink; except ıere it is neceſſary for preſerving of fleſh in long voyes, or in places remote from great markets. For we ſerve no animal to be fond of it but man: and as to ſelf, when I left this country, it was a great while be- e I could endure the taſte of it in any thing that I eat. This is enough to ſay upon the ſubject of my diet, ıerewith other travellers fill their books, as if the readı were perſonally concerned, whether we fare well or . However it was neceſſary to mention this matter, ſt the world ſhould think it impoſſible, that I could find ſtenance for three years in ſuch a country, and among ch inhabitants.

When it grew towards evening, the maſter-horſe orıed a place for me to lodge in; it was but ſix yards om the houſe, and ſeparated from the ſtable of the *hoos*. Here I got ſome ſtraw, and covering myſelf ith my own cloaths, ſlept very ſound. But I was in a ort time better accommodated, as the reader ſhall know reafter, when I come to treat more particularly about y way of living.

CHAP. III.

The author ſtudious to learn the language: the Houyhnhnm, *his maſter, aſſiſts in teaching him. The language deſcribed. Several* Houyhnhnms *of quality came out of curioſity to ſee the author. He gives his maſter a ſhort account of his voyage.*

MY principal endeavour was to learn the language, which my maſter (for ſo I ſhall henceforth call him) and his children, and every ſervant of his houſe were deſirous to teach me. For they looked upon it as a prodigy, that a brute animal ſhould diſcover ſuch marks of a rational creature. I pointed to every thing, and enquired the name of it, which I wrote down in my *journal book* when I was alone, and corrected my bad accent by deſiring thoſe of the family to pronounce it often. In this employment a ſorrel nag, one of the under-ſervants, was very ready to aſſiſt me.

In ſpeaking they pronounce through the noſe and throat, and their language approaches neareſt to the High-Dutch or German, of any I know in Europe; but is much more graceful and ſignificant. The emperor Charles V. made almoſt the ſame obſervation, when he ſaid, that if he were to ſpeak to his horſe, it ſhould be in High-Dutch.

The curioſity and impatience of my maſter were ſo great, that he ſpent many hours of his leiſure to inſtruct me. He was convinced (as he afterwards told me) that I muſt be a *yahoo*; but my tractableneſs, civility, and cleanlineſs, aſtoniſhed him; which were qualities altogether oppoſite to thoſe animals. He was moſt perplexed about my cloaths, reaſoning ſometimes with himſelf whether they were a part of my body; for I never put them off till the family were aſleep, and got them on before they waked in the morning. My maſter was eager to learn from whence I came; how I acquired thoſe appearances of reaſon, which I diſcovered in all my actions; and to know my ſtory from my own mouth, which he hoped he ſhould ſoon do by the great proficiency

made in learning and pronouncing their words and ſentences. To help my memory, I formed all I learned into the Engliſh alphabet, and writ the words down with the tranſlations. This laſt after ſome time I ventured to do in my maſter's preſence. It coſt me much trouble to explain to him what I was doing: for the inhabitants have not the leaſt idea of books or literature.

In about ten weeks time I was able to underſtand moſt of his queſtions; and in three months could give him ſome tolerable anſwers. He was extremely curious to know from what part of the country I came, and how I was taught to imitate a rational creature; becauſe the *yahoos* (whom he ſaw I exactly reſembled in my head, hands, and face, that were only viſible) with ſome appearance of cunning, and the ſtrongeſt diſpotion to miſchief, were obſerved to be the moſt unteachable of all brutes. I anſwered that I came over the ſea from a far place, with many others of my own kind, in a great hollow veſſel made of the bodies of trees; that my companions forced me to land on this coaſt, and then left me to ſhift for myſelf. It was with ſome difficulty, and by the help of many ſigns, that I brought him to underſtand me. He replied, that I muſt needs be miſtaken, or that I *ſaid the thing which was not* (for they have no word in their language to expreſs lying or falſhood). He knew it was impoſſible, that there could be a country beyond the ſea, or that a parcel of brutes could move a wooden veſſel whither they pleaſed upon water. He was ſure no Houyhnhnm alive could make ſuch a veſſel, nor would truſt *yahoos* to manage it.

The word Houyhnhnm in their tongue ſignifies a *horſe*, and in its etymology, *the perfection of nature*. I told my maſter that I was at a loſs for expreſſion; but would improve as faſt as I could; and hoped in a ſhort time I ſhould be able to tell him wonders: he was pleaſed to direct his own mare, his colt and fole, and the ſervants of the family, to take all opportunities of inſtructing me; and every day for two or three hours he was at the ſame pains himſelf: ſeveral horſes and mares of quality in the neighbourhood came often to our houſe, upon the report ſpread of a wonderful *yahoo* that could ſpeak like a Houyhnhnm, and ſeemed in his words and actions to diſ-

cover

cover ſome glimmerings of reaſon. Theſe delighted to converſe with me; they put many queſtions, and received ſuch anſwers as I was able to return. By all theſe advantages I made ſo great a progreſs, that in five months from my arrival I underſtood whatever was ſpoken, and could expreſs myſelf tolerably well.

The Houyhnhnms who came to viſit my maſter, out of a deſign of ſeeing and talking with me, could hardly believe me to be a right *yahoo*, becauſe my body had a different covering from others of my kind. They were aſtoniſhed to obſerve me without the uſual hair or ſkin, except on my head, face, and hands; but I diſcovered that ſecret to my maſter upon an accident, which happened about a fortnight before.

I have already told the reader, that every night, when the family were gone to bed, it was my cuſtom to ſtrip, and cover myſelf with my cloaths: it happened one morning early, that my maſter ſent for me by the ſorrel nag, who was his valet; when he came, I was faſt aſleep, my cloaths had fallen off on one ſide, and my ſhirt above my waiſt. I awaked at the noiſe he made, and obſerved him to deliver his meſſage in ſome diſorder; after which he went to my maſter, and in a great fright gave him a very confuſed account of what he had ſeen: this I preſently diſcovered; for going as ſoon as I was dreſſed to pay my attendance upon his honour, he aſked me the meaning of what his ſervant had reported; that I was not the ſame thing when I ſlept, as I appeared to be at other times; that his valet aſſured him, ſome part of me was white, ſome yellow, at leaſt not ſo white, and ſome brown

I had hitherto concealed the ſecret of my dreſs in order to diſtinguiſh myſelf, as much as poſſible, from the curſed race of *yahoos*; but now I found it in vain to do ſo any longer. Beſides I conſidered, that my cloaths and ſhoes would ſoon wear out, which already were in a declining condition, and muſt be ſupplied by ſome contrivance from the hides of *yahoos*, or other brutes; whereby the whole ſecret would be known: I therefore told my maſter, that in the country from whence I came, thoſe of my kind always covered their bodies with the hairs of certain animals prepared by art, as well for decency,

oid the inclemencies of air both hot and cold; of
, as to my own perſon, I would give him immedi-
nviction, if he pleaſed to command me; only deſir-
i excuſe, if I did not expoſe thoſe parts that nature
: us conceal. He ſaid my diſcourſe was all very
:, but eſpecially the laſt part; for he could not un-
ıd, why nature ſhould teach us to conceal what
had given: that neither himſelf nor family were
:d of any parts of their bodies; but however I
do as I pleaſed. Whereupon I firſt unbuttoned
at, and pulled it off. I did the ſame with my waiſt-
I drew off my ſhoes, ſtockings, and breeches. I
ſhirt down to my waiſt, and drew up the bottom,
ng it like a girdle about my middle to hide my
neſs.

maſter obſerved the whole performance with great
ıf curioſity and admiration. He took up all my
s in his paſtern, one piece after another, and exa-
them diligently; he then ſtroaked my body very
, and looked round me ſeveral times, after which
l, it was plain I muſt be a perfect *yahoo*; but that I
d very much from the reſt of my ſpecies in the ſoft-
whiteneſs, and ſmoothneſs of my ſkin, my want of
ſeveral parts of my body, the ſhape and ſhortneſs
claws behind and before, and my affectation of
ıg continually on my two hinder feet. He deſired
no more; and gave me leave to put on my cloaths
for I was ſhuddering with cold.

preſſed my uneaſineſs at his giving me ſo often the
ıtion of *yahoo*, an odious animal, for which I had
r an hatred and contempt: I begged he would for-
pplying that word to me, and take the ſame order
family, and among his friends, whom he ſuffered
me. I requeſted likewiſe, that the ſecret of my
; a falſe covering to my body might be known to
ıut himſelf, at leaſt as long as my preſent loathing
laſt; for as to what the ſorrel nag his valet had
ed, his honour might commmand him to conceal it.
this my maſter very graciouſly conſented to, and
ıe ſecret was kept till my cloaths began to wear
hich I was forced to ſupply by ſeveral contrivances,
ıall hereafter be mentioned. In the mean time he

deſired

desired I would go on with my utmost dilligence to learn their language, because he was more astonished at my capacity for speech and reason, than at the figure of my body, whether it were covered or no; adding, that he waited with some impatience to hear the wonders, which I promised to tell him.

From thence forward he doubled the pains he had been at to instruct me; he brought me into all company, and made them treat me with civility, because, as he told them privately, this would put me into good humour, and make me more diverting.

Every day, when I waited on him, beside the trouble he was at in teaching, he would ask me several questions concerning myself, which I answered as well as I could; and by these means he had already received some general ideas, though very imperfect. It would be tedious to relate the several steps, by which I advanced to a more regular conversation: but the first account I gave of myself in any order and length was to this purpose:

That I came from a very far country, as I already had attempted to tell him, with about fifty more of my own species; that we travelled upon the seas in a great hollow vessel made of wood, and larger than his honour's house. I described the ship to him in the best terms I could, and explained by the help of my handkerchief displayed, how it was driven forward by the wind. That upon a quarrel among us I was set on shore on this coast, where I walked forward, without knowing whether, till he delivered me from the persecution of those execrable *yahoos*. He asked me, who made the ship, and how it was possible that the Houyhnhnms of my country would leave it to the management of brutes? My answer was, that I durst proceed no farther in my relation, unless he would give me his word and honour that he would not be offended, and then I would tell him the wonders he had so often promised. He agreed; and I went on assuring him, that the ship was made by creatures like myself, who in all the countries I had travelled, as well as in my own, were the only governing, rational animals? and that upon my arrival hither I was as much astonished to see the Houyhnhnms act like rational beings, as he or his friends could be in finding some ma

n in a creature he was pleaſed to call a *yahoo;* to owned my reſemblance in every part, but could ount for their degenerate and brutal nature. I her, that if good fortune ever reſtored me to my ountry to relate my travels hither, as I reſolved every body would believe, that I *ſaid the thing as not*; that I invented the ſtory out of my own nd (with all poſſible reſpect to himſelf, his fami- friends, and under his promiſe of not being of- our countrymen would hardly think it probable, louyhnhnm ſhould be the preſiding creature of a and a *yahoo* the brute.

CHAP. IV.

ouyhnhnms notion of truth and falſhood. The r's diſcourſe diſapproved by his maſter The au gives a more particular account of himſelf, and ccidents of his voyage.

maſter heard me with great appearances of un- eaſineſs in his countenance; becauſe *doubting* or *ieving*, are ſo little known in this country, that ıbitants cannot tell how to behave themſelves un- h circumſtances. And I remember, in frequent es with my maſter concerning the nature of man- other parts of the world, having occaſion to talk ; and *falſe repreſentation*, it was with much di- that he comprehended what I meant; although otherwiſe a moſt acute judgment. For he argued hat the uſe of ſpeech was to make us underſtand ther, and to receive information of facts; now, one *ſaid the thing which was not*, theſe ends were d; becauſe I cannot properly be ſaid to underſtand nd I am ſo far from receiving information, that he me worſe than in ignorance; for I am led to be- thing *black* when it is *white*, and *ſhort* when it is And theſe were all the notions he had concerning culty of *lying*, ſo perfectly well underſtood, and erſally practiſed, among human creatures.

return *from this* digreſſion; when I aſſerted that the

the *yahoos* were the only governing animals in my countr which, my maſter ſaid, was altogether paſt his concep on, he deſired to know, whether we had Houyhnhn among us, and what was their employment: I told hi we had great numbers; that in ſummer they grazed the fields, and in winter were kept in houſes with h and oats, where *yahoo*-ſervants were employed to r their ſkins ſmooth, comb their manes, pick their fe ſerve them with food, and make their beds. I und ſtand you well, ſaid my maſter; it is now very plain fr all you have ſpoken, that whatever ſhare of reaſon *yahoos* pretend to, the Houyhnhnms are your maſters; heartily with our *yahoos* would be ſo tractable. I begg his honour would pleaſe to excuſe me from proceedi any farther, becauſe I was very certain that the accou he expected from me would be highly diſpleaſing. H he inſiſted in commanding me to let him know the b and the worſt: I told him he ſhould be obeyed. I ow ed, that the Houyhnhnms among us, whom we call *horſes*, were the moſt generous and comely animal had; that they excelled in ſtrength and ſwiftneſs; a when they belonged to perſons of quality, were emplo ed in travelling, racing, or drawing chariots, they w treated with much kindneſs and care, till they fell in diſeaſes, or became foundered in the feet; but then th were ſold, and uſed to all kind of drudgery, till th died; after which their ſkins were ſtripped, and ſold f what they were worth, and their bodies left to be d voured by dogs and birds of prey. But the comm race of horſes had not ſo good fortune, being kept farmers and carriers and other mean people who put the to great labour, and fed them worſe. I deſcribed, as w as I could, our way of riding; the ſhape and uſe o bridle, a ſaddle, a ſpur, and a whip; of harneſs a wheels. I added, that we faſtened plates of a certa hard ſubſtance, called *iron*, at the bottom of their fe to preſerve their hoofs from being broken by the ſto ways, on which we often travelled.

My maſter, after ſome expreſſions of great indi nation, wondered how we dared to venture upon Houyhnhnm's back; for he was ſure that the weak ſervant in his houſe would be able to ſhake off the ſtron

ſt *yahoo*; or by lying down, and rolling on his back, queeze the brute to death. I anſwered, that our hor es vere trained up from three or four years old to t e ſeve- al uſes we intended them for; that, if any of them prov- d intolerably vicious, they were employed for carriages; hat they were ſeverely beaten, while they were yo ung, or any miſchievous tricks; that the males deſigned for ne common uſe of riding or draught, were generally *ca- rated* about two years after their birth, to take dow n neir ſpirits and make them more tame and gentle; that ney were indeed ſenſible of rewards and puniſhments; ut his honour would pleaſe to conſider, that they had not ne leaſt tincture of reaſon, any more than the *yahoos* in his country.

It put me to the pains of many circumlocutions to give y maſter a right idea of what I ſpoke; for their lan- uage doth not abound in variety of words, becauſe their ants and paſſions are fewer than among us. But it is npoſſible to expreſs his noble reſentment at our ſavage eatment of the Houyhnhnm race; particularly after I id explained the manner and uſe of *caſtrating* horſes a- ong us, to hinder them from propagating their kind, and render them more ſervile. He ſaid, if it were poſſible here could be any country, where *yahoos* alone were en- ued with reaſon, they certainly muſt be the governing nimal, becauſe reaſon will in time always prevail againſt rutal ſtrength. But, conſidering the frame of our bodies, nd eſpecially of mine, he thought no creature of equal ulk was ſo ill contrived for employing that reaſon in th e ommon offices of life; whereupon, he deſired to know, whether thoſe, among whom I lived, reſembled me or he *yahoos* of his country. I aſſured him, that I was as ell ſhaped as moſt of my age: but the younger, and the males were much more ſoft and tender, and the ſkins f the latter generally as white as milk. He ſaid, I dif- red indeed from other *yahoos*, being much more clean- r, and not altogether ſo deformed; but in point of real dvantage, he thought I differed for the worſe. Th t my ails were of no uſe either to my fore or hinder-feet: as r my fore-feet, he could not properly call them by that ame, for he never obſerved me to walk upon them; that ney were too ſoft to bear the ground; that I generally

went with them uncovered, neither was the
ſometimes wore on them, of the ſame ſhape, o
as that on my feet behind. That I could not
any ſecurity; for if either of my hinder-feet
muſt inevitably fall. He then began to find
other parts of my body; the flatneſs of my fac
mi ence of my noſe, mine eyes placed direct
ſo that I could not look on either ſide witho
my head: that I was not able to feed myſe
lifting one of my fore-feet to my mouth; and
nature had placed theſe joints to anſwer that
He knew not what could be the uſe of th
clefts and diviſions in my feet behind; that
too ſoft to bear the hardneſs and ſharpneſs of ſt
out a covering made from the ſkin of ſome ot
that my whole body wanted a fence againſ
cold, which I was forced to put on and off
with tediouſneſs and trouble. And laſtly, th
ſerved every animal in this country naturally t
yahoos, whom the weaker avoided, and the ſtro
from them. So that, ſuppoſing us to have
reaſon, he could not ſee how it were poſſible t
natural antipathy, which every creature di
gainſt us; nor conſequently how we could tan
der them ſerviceable. However, he would,
debate the matter no farther, becauſe he was
ous to know my own ſtory, the country w
born, and the ſeveral actions and events of my
I came hither.

I aſſured him, how extremely deſirous I wa
ſhould be ſatisfied in every point; but I doub
whether it would be poſſible for me to explain
ſeveral ſubjects, whereof his honour could ha
ception; becauſe I ſaw nothing in his country
I could reſemble them. That however I, w
beſt, and ſtrive to expreſs myſelf by ſimilitude
deſiring his aſſiſtance, when I wanted prop
which he was pleaſed to promiſe me.

I ſaid, my birth was of honeſt parents, in an
led England, which was remote from his coun
ny days journey, as the ſtrongeſt of his honou
could travel in the annual courſe of the ſun;

geon, whoſe trade it is to cure wounds and
e body gotten by accident or violence: That
y was governed by a female man, whom we
een: That I left it to get riches, whereby I
ntain myſelf and family when I ſhould return:
y laſt voyage I was commander of the ſhip, and
fifty *yahoos* under me, many of which died at
was forced to ſupply them by others picked
everal nations: That our ſhip was twice in
being, ſunk; the firſt time by a great ſtorm,
ond by ſtriking againſt a rock. Here my maſter
by aſking me, how I could perſuade ſtrangers
erent countries to venture with me, after the
I ſuffained, and the hazards I had run. I ſaid,
fellows of deſperate fortunes, forced to fly
laces of their birth on account of their poverty
imes. Some were undone by law-ſuits; o-
t all they had in drinking, whoring, and ga-
ners fled for treaſon; many for murder, theft,
robbery, perjury, forgery, coining falſe money,
tting rapes or ſodomy; for flying from their
r deſerting to the enemy; and moſt of them
n priſon; none of theſe durſt return to their
ntries for fear of being hanged, or of ſtarving
and therefore they were under a neceſſity of
ivelihood in other places.

this diſcourſe, my maſter was pleaſed to inter-
veral times; I had made uſe of many circum-
n deſcribing to him the nature of the ſeveral
which moſt of our crew had been forced to
ountry. This labour took up ſeveral days con-
before he was able to comprehend me. He
y at a loſs to know, what could be the uſe or
f practiſing thoſe vices. To clear up which, I
d to give him ſome ideas of the deſire of
riches; of the terrible effects of luſt, intempe-
ice, and envy. All this I was forced to define
be by putting caſes and making ſuppoſitions.
h, like one whoſe imagination was ſtruck with
never ſeen or heard of before, he would lift up
th amazement and indignation. Power, go-
war, law, puniſhment, and a thouſand other

things had no terms, wherein that language cou
t reon; which made the difficulty almoſt inſup
give my maſter any conception of what I mea
being of an excellent underſtanding, much imp
contemplation and converſe, he at laſt arrived
petent knowledge of what human nature in ot
the world is capable to perform, and deſired I v
him ſome particular account of that land, whi
Europe, but eſpecially o. my own country.

CHAP. V.

*The author, at his maſter's commands, infor
the ſtate of England. The cauſes of war
princes of Europe. The author begins to e:
Engliſh conſtitution.*

THE reader may pleaſe to obſerve, that th
ing extract of many converſations I had
maſter, contains a ſummary of the moſt materi
which were diſcourſed on at ſeveral times for a
years; his honour often deſiring fuller ſatisfac
farther improved in the Houyhnhnm tongue.
fore him, as well as I could, the whole ſtate o
I diſcourſed of trade and manufactures, of arts
ces; and the anſwers I gave to all the queſtions
as they aroſe upon ſeveral ſubjects, were a fund
verſation not to be exhauſted. But I ſhall here
down the ſubſtance of what paſſed between us co
my own country, reducing it into order as well
without any regard to time or other circumſtanc
I ſtrictly adhere to truth. My only concern is
ſhall hardly be able to do juſtice to my maſter
ments and expreſſions, which muſt needs ſuffe
want of capacity, as well as by a tranſlation
barbarous Engliſh.

In obedience therefore to his honour's com
related to him the *revolution* under the Prince of
the long war with France entered into by the ſai
and renewed by his ſucceſſor the preſent Queen,
the greateſt powers of Chriſtendom were eng

h ſtill continued: I computed, at his requeſt, that t a million of *yahoos* might have been killed in the e progreſs of it; and perhaps a hundred or more ci- aken, and five times as many ſhips burnt or ſunk.

: aſked me, what were the uſual cauſes or motives made one country go to war with another. I an- d they were innumerable; but I ſhould only menti- few of the chief. Sometimes the ambition of prin- who never think they have land or people enough to n. Sometimes the corruption of miniſters, who en- their maſter in a war, in order to ſtifle or divert the ur of the ſubjects againſt their evil adminiſtration. ence in opinions hath coſt many millions of lives: ſtance, whether *fleſh* be *bread*, or *bread* be *fleſh*; ner the juice of a certain *berry* be *blood* or *wine* *; ner *whiſtling* be a vice or a virtue †; whether it be to *kiſs a poſt*, or throw it into the fire ‡; what is ſt colour for a *coat*, whether *black*, *white*, *red*, or and whether it ſhould be *long* or *ſhort*, *narrow* or *dirty* or *clean*, with many more **. Neither are ars ſo furious and bloody, or of ſo long continuance, ſe occaſioned by difference in opinion, eſpecially if n things indifferent.

metimes the quarrel between two princes is to de- which of them ſhall diſpoſſeſs a third of his domini- where neither of them pretend to any right. Some- one prince quarrelleth with another, for fear the ſhould quarrel with him. Sometimes a war is en- upon becauſe the enemy is too *ſtrong*; and ſome- becauſe he is too *weak*. Sometimes our neigh- *want* the *things* which we *have*, or *have* the things h we *want*; and we both fight, till they take ours, ve us theirs. It is a very juſtifiable cauſe of a war, vade a country after the people have been waſted by e, deſtroyed by peſtilence, or embroiled by factions g themſelves. It is juſtifiable to enter into a war a- t our neareſt ally, when one of his towns lies conve- : for us, or a territory of land, that would render our

Tranſubſtantiation. † Church-muſic. ‡ Kiſſing a croſs.
The colour and make of ſacred veſtments, and differenc s of Popiſh eccleſiaſtics. *Houkeſ*

things had no terms, wherein that language could expreſs them; which made the difficulty almoſt inſuperable to give my maſter any conception of what I meant. But being of an excellent underſtanding, much improved by contemplation and converſe, he at laſt arrived at a competent knowledge of what human nature in our parts of the world is capable to perform, and deſired I would give him ſome particular account of that land, which we call Europe, but eſpecially of my own country.

CHAP. V.

The author, at his maſter's commands, informs him of the ſtate of England. The cauſes of war among the princes of Europe. The author begins to explain the Engliſh conſtitution.

THE reader may pleaſe to obſerve, that the following extract of many converſations I had with my maſter, contains a ſummary of the moſt material points, which were diſcourſed on at ſeveral times for above two years; his honour often deſiring fuller ſatisfaction, as I farther improved in the Houyhnhnm tongue. I laid before him, as well as I could, the whole ſtate of Europe. I diſcourſed of trade and manufactures, of arts and ſciences; and the anſwers I gave to all the queſtions he made, as they aroſe upon ſeveral ſubjects, were a fund of converſation not to be exhauſted. But I ſhall here only ſet down the ſubſtance of what paſſed between us concerning my own country, reducing it into order as well as I can, without any regard to time or other circumſtances, while I ſtrictly adhere to truth. My only concern is, that I ſhall hardly be able to do juſtice to my maſter's arguments and expreſſions, which muſt needs ſuffer by my want of capacity, as well as by a tranſlation into our barbarous Engliſh.

In obedience therefore to his honour's commands, I related to him the *revolution* under the Prince of Orange; the long war with France entered into by the ſaid Prince, and renewed by his ſucceſſor the preſent Queen, wherein *the greateſt* powers of Chriſtendom were engaged, and which

hich ſtill continued: I computed, at his requeſt, that out a million of *yahoos* might have been killed in the hole progreſs of it; and perhaps a hundred or more ci-s taken, and five times as many ſhips burnt or ſunk.

He aſked me, what were the uſual cauſes or motives at made one country go to war with another. I an-ered they were innumerable; but I ſhould only menti-a few of the chief. Sometimes the ambition of prin-s, who never think they have land or people enough to vern. Sometimes the corruption of miniſters, who en-ge their maſter in a war, in order to ſtifle or divert the amour of the ſubjects againſt their evil adminiſtration. ifference in opinions hath coſt many millions of lives: r inſtance, whether *fleſh* be *bread*, or *bread* be *fleſh*; hether the juice of a certain *berry* be *blood* or *wine* *; hether *whiſtling* be a vice or a virtue †; whether it be tter to *kiſs a poſt*, or throw it into the fire ‡; what is e beſt colour for a *coat*, whether *black*, *white*, *red*, or *ey*; and whether it ſhould be *long* or *ſhort*, *narrow* or *ide*, *dirty* or *clean*, with many more **. Neither are y wars ſo furious and bloody, or of ſo long continuance, thoſe occaſioned by difference in opinion, eſpecially if be in things indifferent.

Sometimes the quarrel between two princes is to de-de, which of them ſhall diſpoſſeſs a third of his domini-ns, where neither of them pretend to any right. Some-mes one prince quarrelleth with another, for fear the-her ſhould quarrel with him. Sometimes a war is en-red upon becauſe the enemy is too *ſtrong*; and ſome-mes becauſe he is too *weak*. Sometimes our neigh-ours *want* the *things* which we *have*, or *have* the things hich we *want*; and we both fight, till they take ours, give us theirs. It is a very juſtifiable cauſe of a war, invade a country after the people have been waſted by mine, deſtroyed by peſtilence, or embroiled by factions nong themſelves. It is juſtifiable to enter into a war a-inſt our neareſt ally, when one of his towns lies conve-ent for us, or a territory of land, that would render our

* Tranſubſtantiation. † Church-muſic. ‡ Kiſſing a croſs.
** The colour and make of ſacred veſtments, and different dets of Popiſh eccleſiaſtics. *Hawkeſ.*

dominions round and compact. If a prince sends forces into a nation, where the people are poor and ignorant, he may lawfully put the half of them to death, and make slaves of the rest, in order to civilize and reduce them from their barbarous way of living. It is a very kingly, honourable, and frequent practice, when one prince desires the assistance of another to secure him against an invasion, that the assistant, when he hath driven out the invader, should seize on the dominions himself, and kill, imprison, or banish the prince he came to relieve. Alliance by blood, or marriage, is a frequent cause of war between princes; and the nearer the kindred is, the greater is their disposition to quarrel: *poor* nations are *hungry*, and *rich* nations are *proud*: and pride and hunger will ever be at variance. For these reasons, the trade of a *soldier* is held the most honourable of all others; because a *soldier* is a *yahoo* hired to kill in cold blood as many of his own species, who have never offended him, as possibly he can.

There is likewise a kind of beggarly princes in Europe, not able to make war by themselves, who hire out their troops to richer nations, for so much a day to each man; of which they keep three-fourths to themselves, and it is the best part of their maintenance; such are those in many *northern* parts of Europe.

What you have told me (said my master) upon the subject of war, does indeed discover most admirably the effects of that reason you pretend to: however it is happy that the *shame* is greater than the *danger*; and that nature hath left you utterly incapable of doing much mischief. For, your mouths lying flat with your faces, you can hardly bite each other to any purpose, unless by consent. Then as to the claws upon your feet before and behind, they are so short and tender, that one of our *yahoos* would drive a dozen of yours before him. And therefore in recounting the numbers of those who have been killed in battle, I cannot but think you have *said the thing which is not*.

I could not forbear shaking my head, and smiling a little at his ignorance. And being no stranger to the use of war, I gave him a description of cannons, culverins, muskets, carabines, pistols, bullets, powder, swords, bayonets,

bayonets, battles, ſieges, retreats, attacks, undermines, countermines, bombardments, ſea-fights, ſhips ſunk with a thouſand men, twenty thouſand killed on each ſide, dying groans, limbs flying in the air, ſmoke, noiſe, confuſion, trampling to death under horſes feet; flight, purſuit, victory; fields ſtrewed with carcaſes, left for food to dogs and wolves, and birds of prey; plundering, ſtripping, raviſhing, burning and deſtroying. And to ſet forth the valour of my own dear countrymen, I aſſured him, that I had ſeen them blow up a hundred enemies at once in a ſiege, and as many in a ſhip; and beheld the dead bodies drop down in pieces from the clouds, to the great diverſion of the ſpectators *.

I was going on to more particulars, when my maſter commanded me ſilence. He ſaid, whoever underſtood the nature of *yahoos*, might eaſily believe it poſſible for ſo vile an animal to be capable of every action I had named, if their ſtrength and cunning equalled their malice. But as my diſcourſe had increaſed his abhorrence of the whole ſpecies, ſo he found it gave him a diſturbance in his mind,

* It would perhaps be impoſſible, by the moſt laboured argument or forcible eloquence, to ſhew the abſurd injuſtice and horrid cruelty of war ſo effectually, as by this ſimple exhibition of them in a new light. With war, including every ſpecies of iniquity and every art of deſtruction, we become familiar by degrees, under ſpecious terms, which are ſeldom examined, becauſe they are learned at an age, in which the mind implicitly receives and retains whatever is impreſt. Thus it happens, that when one man murders another to gratify his luſt, we ſhudder; but when one man murders a million to gratify his vanity, we approve and we admire, we envy and we applaud. If, when this and the preceeding pages are read, we diſcover with aſtoniſhment, that, when the ſame events have occurred in hiſtory, we felt no emotion, and acquieſced in wars which we could not but know to have been commenced for ſuch cauſes, and carried on by ſuch means; let not him be cenſured for too much debaſing his ſpecies, who has contributed to their felicity and preſervation, by ſtripping off the veil of cuſtom and prejudice, and holding up, in their native deformity, the vices by which they become wretched, and the arts by which they are deſtroyed. Howbeit,

to which he was wholly a ſtranger before. H
his ears, being uſed to ſuch abominable words,
degrees admit them with leſs deteſtation.
though he hated the *yahoos* of this country,
more blamed them for their odious qualities, t
a *gnnayh* (a bird of prey) for its cruelty, or a
for cutting his hoof. But when a creature,
to reaſon, could be capable of ſuch enormities,
ed, leſt the corruption of that faculty migh
than brutality itſelf. He ſeemed therefore
that, inſtead of reaſon, we were only poſſeſſ
quality fitted to increaſe our natural vices; a
tion from a troubled ſtream returns the image
ſhapen body, not only *larger* but more *diſtort*

He added, that he had heard too much up
ject of war, both in this, and ſome former
There was another point, which a little perpl
preſent. I had informed him, that ſome of o
their country on account of being ruined by *l*
had already explained the meaning of the wo
was at a loſs how it ſhould come to paſs, tha
which was intended for every man's preſervat
be any man's ruin. Therefore he deſired to
ſatisfied what I meant by *law*, and the *diſpe*
of, according to the preſent practice in my ow
becauſe he thought *nature* and *reaſon* wer
guides for a reaſonable animal, as we preten
ſhewing us what we ought to do, and what t

I aſſured his honour, that *law* was a ſcienc
I had not much converſed, further than by em
vocates in vain upon ſome injuſtices that ha
me; however I would give him all the ſatisfa
able.

I ſaid, there was a ſociety of men among
from their youth in the art of proving, by wor
ed for the purpoſe, that *white* is *black*, and *bla*
according as they are paid *. To this ſoc
reſt of the people are ſlaves. For example, i

* As in every cauſe council are fee'd on both
not be pretended, that this account is much exagger
ſelf.

bour hath a mind to my *cow*, he hires a *lawyer* to prove that he ought to have my *cow* from me. I muſt then hire another to defend my right; it being againſt all rules of *law*, that any man ſhould be allowed to ſpeak for himſelf. Now in this caſe I, who am the right owner, lie under two great diſadvantages; *firſt*, my *lawyer*, being practiſed almoſt from his cradle in defending falſhood, is quite out of his element, when he would be an advocate for juſtice, which is an unnatural office, he always attempts with great aukwardneſs, if not with ill-will. The *ſecond* diſadvantage is, that my *lawyer* muſt proceed with great caution, or elſe he will be reprimanded by the *judges*, and abhorred by his brethren, as one that would leſſen the practice of the *law*. And therefore I have but two methods to preſerve my *cow*. The firſt is, to gain over my adverſary's *lawyer* with a double fee; who will then betray his client, by inſinuating that he hath *juſtice* on his ſide. The ſecond way is, for my *lawyer* to make my cauſe appear as *unjuſt* as he can, by allowing the *cow* to belong to my adverſary; and this, if it be ſkilfully done, will certainly beſpeak the favour of the bench. Now your honour is to know, that theſe *judges* are perſons appointed to decide all controverſies of property, as well as for the trial of criminals, and picked out from the moſt dexterous lawyers who are grown old or lazy; and having been byaſſed all their lives againſt truth and equity, lie under ſuch a fatal neceſſity of favouring fraud, perjury, and oppreſſion, that I have known ſome of them refuſe a large bribe from the ſide where juſtice lay, rather than injure the faculty, by doing any thing unbecoming their nature or their office.

It is a maxim among theſe lawyers, that whatever hath been done before, may legally be done again: and therefore they take ſpecial care to record all the deciſions formerly made againſt common juſtice, and the general reaſon of mankind. Theſe, under the name of *precedents*, they produce as authorities to juſtify the moſt iniquitous opinions, and the judges never fail of directing accordingly.

In pleading, they ſtudiouſly avoid entering into the *merits* of the cauſe; but are loud, violent, and tedious, in dwelling upon all *circumſtances* which are not to the purpoſe.

poſe. For inſtance, in the caſe already mentioned: I never deſire to know what claim or title my adver hath to my *cow*; but whether the *cow* were re black; her horns long or ſhort; whether the field I g her in be round or ſquare; whether ſhe was milke home or abroad; what diſeaſes ſhe is ſubject to, an like; after which they conſult *precedents*, adjourn cauſe from time to time, and in ten, twenty, or t years come to an iſſue.

It is likewiſe to be obſerved, that this ſociety h peculiar cant and jargon of their own, that no other tal can underſtand, and wherein all their laws are ten, which they take ſpecial care to multiply; whe they have wholly confounded the very eſſence of and falſhood, or right and wrong; ſo that it will thirty years to decide, whether the field left me b anceſtors for ſix generations, belongs to me or to a ſ ger three hundred miles off.

In the trial of perſons accuſed for crimes againſt ſtate, the method is much more ſhort and commend the judge firſt ſends to ſound the diſpoſition of tho power, after which he can eaſily hang or ſave a crim ſtrictly preſerving all the due forms of *law*.

Here my maſter interpoſing, ſ id it was a pity, creatures endued with ſuch prodigious abilities of as theſe *lawyers*, by the deſcription I gave of them, certainly be, were not rather encouraged to be inſ tors of others in wiſdom and knowledge. In anſw which I aſſured his honour, that, in all points out of own trade, they were uſually the moſt ignorant an pid generation among us, the moſt deſpicable in con converſation, avowed enemies to all knowledge learning, and equally diſpoſed to pervert the general ſon of mankind in every other ſubject of diſcourſe that of their own profeſſion.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

A continuation of the ſtate of England under Queen Anne. The character of a firſt miniſter of ſtate in European courts.

MY maſter was yet wholly at a loſs to underſtand, what motives could incite this race of *lawyers* to perplex, diſquiet, and weary themſelves, and engage in a confederacy of injuſtice, merely for the ſake of injuring their fellow-animals; neither could he comprehend what I meant in ſaying, they did it for *hire*. Whereupon I was at much pains to deſcribe to him the uſe of *money*, the materials it was made of, and the value of the metals; that when a *yahoo* had got a great ſtore of this precious ſubſtance, he was able to purchaſe whatever he had a mind to, the fineſt clothing, the nobleſt houſes, great tracts of land, the moſt coſtly meats and drinks; and have his choice of the moſt beautiful females Therefore, ſince *money* alone was able to perform all theſe feats, our *yahoos* thought they could never have enough of it to ſpend, or to ſave, as they found themſelves inclined from their natural bent either to profuſion or avarice. That the rich man enjoyed the fruit of the poor man's labour, and the latter were a thouſand to one in proportion to the former. That the bulk of our people were forced to live miſerably, by labouring every day for ſmall wages, to make a few live plentifully. I enlarged myſelf much on theſe and many other particulars to the ſame purpoſe: but his honour was ſtill to ſeek; for he went upon a ſuppoſition, that all animals had a title to their ſhare in the production of the earth, and eſpecially thoſe who preſided over the reſt. Therefore he deſired I would let him know, what theſe coſtly meats were, and how any of us happened to want them. Whereupon I enumerated as many ſorts as came into my head, with the various methods of dreſſing them, which could not be done without ſending veſſels by ſea to every part of the world, as well for liquors to drink, as for ſauces, and innumerable other conveniencies. I aſſured him that

this

this whole globe of earth muſt be at leaſt three gone round, before one of our better female *yahoo* get her breakfaſt, or a cup to put it in. He ſa muſt needs be a miſerable country, which cannot food for its own inhabitants. But what he chiefl dered at was, how ſuch vaſt tracts of ground, a ſcribed, ſhould be wholly without *freſh water*, people put to the neceſſity of ſending over the drink. I replied, that England (the dear place nativity) was computed to produce three times th tity of food, more than its inhabitants are able ſume, as well as liquors extracted from grain, or out of the fruit of certain trees, which made e drink; and the ſame proportion in every other c ence of life. But in order to feed the luxury an perance of the males, and the vanity of the fem ſent away the greateſt part of our neceſſary thin ther countries, from whence we in return brought terials of diſeaſes, folly, and vice, to ſpend am ſelves. Hence it follows of neceſſity, that vaſt of our people are compelled to ſeek their livel begging, robbing, ſtealing, cheating, pimping, fl ſuborning, forſwearing, forging, gaming, lying, l lectoring, voting, ſcribling, ſtar-gazing, poiſonin ing, canting, libelling, free-thinking, and the cupations: every one of which terms I was at m to make him underſtand.

That *wine* was not imported among us from countries to ſupply the want of water, or othe but becauſe it was a ſort of liquid which made t by putting us out of our ſenſes, diverted all me thoughts, begat wild extravagant imagination brain, raiſed our hopes, and baniſhed our fears; ed every office of reaſon for a time, and depri the uſe of our limbs, till we fell into a profou although it muſt be confeſſed, that we always ſick and diſpirited; and that the uſe of this liq us with diſeaſes, which made our lives uncer and ſhort ‡.

‡ This account excites ideas of drunkenneſs, ver from thoſe which are conceived under the terms by w generally expreſſed. Hawkeſ.

ſides all this, the bulk of our people ſupported
s by furniſhing the neceſſities or conveniencies
the rich, and to each other. For inſtance, when
ome, and dreſſed as I ought to be, I carry on
the workmanſhip of an hundred tradeſmen; the
and furniture of my houſe employ as many more,
times the number to adorn my wife.

going on to tell him of another ſort of people,
their livelihood by attending the ſick, having
ne occaſions informed his honour, that many of
had died of diſeaſes. But here it was with the
difficulty, that I brought him to apprehend what
. He could eaſily conceive, that a Houyhnhnm
eak and heavy a few days before his death, or by
cident might hurt a limb: but that nature, who
ll things to perfection, ſhould ſuffer any pains to
our bodies, he thought impoſſible, and deſired to
he reaſon of ſo unaccountable an evil. I told
e fed on a thouſand things, which operated con-
each other; that we eat when we were not hun-
d drank without the provocation of thirſt; that
whole nights drinking ſtrong liquors without eat-
t, which diſpoſed us to ſloth, enflamed our bo-
d precipitated or prevented digeſtion. That pro-
emale *yahoos* acquired a certain malady, which
ottenneſs in the bones of thoſe who fell into their
es; that this and many other diſeaſes were propa-
rom father to ſon; ſo that great numbers come
e world with complicated maladies upon them:
would be endleſs to give him a catalogue of all
incident to human bodies; for they could not be
han five or ſix hundred ſpread over every limb
nt; in ſhort, every part, external and inteſtine,
diſeaſes appropriated to itſelf. To remedy which
vas a ſort of people bred up among us in the pro-
, or pretence, of curing the ſick. And becauſe I
ne ſkill in the faculty, I would in gratitude to his
let him know the whole myſtery and method, by
they proceed.

ir fundamental is, that all diſeaſes ariſe from *re-*
; from whence they conclude, that a great *evacu-*
of the body is neceſſary either through the natural

paſſage, or upwards at the mouth. Their next buſine is from herbs, minerals, gums, oils, ſhells, ſalts, juice ſea-weed, excrements, barks of trees, ſerpents, toad frogs, ſpiders, dead mens fleſh and bones, birds, beaſt and fiſhes, to form a compoſition for ſmell and taſte th moſt abominable, nauſeous, and deteſtable, they can po ſibly contrive, which the ſtomach immediately reject with loathing; and this they call a *vomit*: or elſe fro the ſame ſtore-houſe, with ſome other poiſonous additi ons, they command us to take in at the orifice *above* o *below* (juſt as the phyſician then happens to be diſpoſed a medicine equally annoying and diſguſtful to the bowels which, relaxing the belly, drives down all before it; an this they call a *purge* or a *clyſter*. For nature (as th phyſicians alledge) having intended the ſuperior anterio orifice only for the *intromiſſion* of ſolids and liquids, an the inferior poſterior for ejection; theſe artiſts ingenioufly conſidering that in all diſeaſes nature is forced out of he ſeat, therefore to replace her in it, the body muſt be trea ted in a manner directly contrary, by interchanging th uſe of each orifice; forcing ſolids and liquids in at the *a nus*, and making evacuations at the mouth.

But beſides real diſeaſes, we are ſubject to many tha are only imaginary, for which the phyſicians have invent ed imaginary cures: theſe have their ſeveral names, an ſo have the drugs that are proper for them; and wit theſe our female *yahoos* are always infeſted.

One great excellency in this tribe is their ſkill at *prog noſtics*, wherein they ſeldom fail; their predictions in re al diſeaſes, when they riſe to any degree of malignity generally portending *death*, which is always in thei power, when recovery is not: and therefore, upon-an unexpected ſigns of amendment after they have pronoun ced their ſentence, rather than be accuſed for falſe pro phets, they know how to approve their ſagacity to th world by a ſeaſonable doſe.

They are likewiſe of ſpecial uſe to huſbands an wives, who are grown weary of their mates: to eldeſt ſons, to great miniſters of ſtate, and often to princes.

I had formerly upon occaſion diſcourſed with my maſter upon the nature of *government* in general, and par ticularly of our own *excellent conſtitution*, deſervedly th wonder

ler and envy of the whole world. But having here
entally mentioned a *miniſter of ſtate*, he command-
e ſome time after to inform him, what ſpecies of
I particularly meant by that appellation.
old him, that a firſt or chief miniſter of ſtate, who
the perſon I intended to deſcribe, was a creature
ly exempt from joy and grief, love and hatred, pity
nger; at leaſt makes uſe of no other paſſions, but
lent deſire of wealth, power, and titles; that he ap-
his words to all uſes, except to the indication of his
; that he never tells a *truth* but with an intent that
hould take it for a *lye*; nor a *lye*, but with a deſign
you ſhould take it for a *truth*; that thoſe he ſpeaks
of behind their backs, are in the ſureſt way of pre-
nt; and whenever he begins to praiſe you to others,
yourſelf, you are from that day forlorn. The worſt
you can receive is a *promiſe*, eſpecially when it is
med with an oath; after which every wiſe man re-
and gives over all hopes.
ere are three methods, by which a man may riſe to
ief miniſter. The firſt is, by knowing how with
nce to diſpoſe of a wife, a daughter, or a ſiſter; the
d, by betraying or undermining his predeceſſor; and
ird is, by a *furious zeal* in public aſſemblies againſt
orruptions of the court. But a wiſe prince would
r chooſe to employ thoſe, who practiſe the laſt of
methods; becauſe ſuch zealots prove always the
obſequious and ſubſervient to the will and paſſions
ir maſter. That theſe *miniſters*, having all em-
ients at their diſpoſal, preſerve themſelves in power
bing the majority of a ſenate or great council; and
by an expedient, called an *act of indemnity* (where-
eſcribed the nature to him) they ſecure themſelves
after-reckonings, and retire from the public, laden
the ſpoils of the nation.
e palace of a *chief miniſter* is a ſeminary to breed
ers in his own trade: the pages, lacquies, and por-
y imitating their maſter, become *miniſters of ſtate*
ir ſeveral diſtricts, and learn to excel in the three
pal *ingredients*, of *inſolence*, *lying*, and *bribery*.
dingly they have a *ſubaltern* court paid to them
ſons of the beſt rank; and ſometimes, by the

force of dexterity and impudence, arrive, through several gradations, to be successor to their lord.

He is usually governed by a decayed wench, or favourite footman, who are the funnels through which all graces are conveyed, and may properly be called, *in the last resort*, the governors of the kingdom. One day in discourse, my master having heard me mention the *nobility* of my country, was pleased to make me a compliment, which I could not pretend to deserve: that he was sure I must have been born of some noble family, because I far exceeded in shape, colour, and cleanliness all the *yahoos* of this nation, although I seemed to fail in strength and agility, which must be imputed to my different way of living from those other brutes; and besides I was not only endued with the faculty of speech, but likewise with some rudiments of reason, to a degree, that with all his acquaintance I passed for a prodigy.

He made me observe, that among the Houyhnhnms, the *white*, the *sorrel*, and the *iron-grey*, were not so exactly shaped as the *bay*, the *dapple-grey*, and the *black*; nor born with equal talents of mind, or a capacity to improve them; and therefore continued always in the condition of servants, without ever aspiring to match out of their own race, which in that country would be reckoned monstrous and unnatural.

I made his honour my most humble acknowledgements for the good opinion he was pleased to conceive of me; but assured him, at the same time, that my birth was of the lower sort, having been born of plain honest parents, who were just able to give me a tolerable education; that *nobility* among us was altogether a different thing from the idea he had of it; that our young noblemen are bred from their childhood in idleness and luxury; that, as soon as years will permit, they consume their vigour, and contract odious diseases among lewd females; and when their fortunes are almost ruined, they marry some woman of mean birth, disagreeable person, and unsound constitution, merely for the sake of money, whom they hate and despise. That the productions of such marriages are generally scrophulous, rickety, or deformed children; by which means the family seldom continues above three generations, unless the wife takes care to provide a healthy

father.

father among her neighbours or domeſtics, in order to improve and continue the breed: That a weak diſeaſed body, a meagre countenance, and ſallow complexion, are the true marks of *noble blood*; and a healthy robuſt appearance, is ſo diſgraceful in a man of quality, that the world concludes his real father to have been a *groom*, or a *coachman*. The imperfections of his mind run parallel with thoſe of his body, being a compoſition of ſpleen, dulneſs, ignorance, caprice, ſenſuality, and pride.

Without the conſent of this illuſtrious body, no law can be enacted, repealed, or altered; and theſe *nobles* have likewiſe the deciſions of all our poſſeſſions, without appeal.

CHAP. VII.

The author's great love of his native country. His maſter's obſervations upon the conſtitution and adminiſtration of England, as deſcribed by the author, with parallel caſes and compariſons. His maſter's obſervations upon human nature.

THE reader may be diſpoſed to wonder, how I could prevail on myſelf to give a free repreſentation of my own ſpecies among a race of mortals, who are already too apt to conceive the vileſt opinion of human kind from that intire congruity betwixt me and their *yahoos*. But I muſt freely confeſs, that the many virtues of thoſe excellent *quadrupeds*, placed in oppoſite view to human corruptions, had ſo far opened my eyes, and enlarged my underſtanding, that I began to view the actions and paſſions of man in a very different light; and to think the honour of my own kind not worth managing; which beſides it was impoſſible for me to do before a perſon of ſo acute a judgment as my maſter, who daily convinced me of a thouſand faults in myſelf, whereof I had not the leaſt perception before, and which with us would never be numbered even among human infirmities. I had likewiſe learned from his example an utter deteſtation of all falſhood or diſguiſe; and *truth* appeared ſo amiable to me, that I determined upon ſacrificing every thing to it.

Let me deal ſo candidly with the reader as to confeſs, that

that there was yet a much ſtronger motive for the freedom I took in my repreſentation of things. I had not been a year in this country, before I contracted ſuch a love and veneration for the inhabitants, that I entered on a firm reſolution never to return to human kind, but to paſs the reſt of my life among theſe admirable Houyhnhnms in the contemplation and practice of every virtue, where I could have no example or incitement to vice. But it was decreed by fortune, my perpetual enemy, that ſo great a felicity ſhould not fall to my ſhare. However, it is now ſome comfort to reflect, that, in what I ſaid of my countrymen, I *extenuated* their faults as much as I durſt before ſo ſtrict an examiner; and upon every article gave as *favourable* a turn as the matter would bear. For indeed who is there alive, that will not be ſwayed by his byaſs and partiality to the place of his birth?

I have related the ſubſtance of ſeveral converſations I had with my maſter, during the greateſt part of the time I had the honour to be in his ſervice; but have indeed, for brevity's ſake, omitted much more than is here ſet down.

When I had anſwered all his queſtions, and his curioſity ſeemed to be fully ſatisfied, he ſent for me one morning early, and commanding me to ſit down at ſome diſtance (an honour which he had never before conferred upon me), he ſaid, he had been very ſeriouſly conſidering my whole ſtory, ſo far as it related both to myſelf and my country: that he looked upon us as a ſort of animals, to whoſe ſhare, by what accident he could not conjecture, ſome ſmall pittance of *reaſon* had fallen, whereof we made no other uſe, than by its aſſiſtance to aggravate our *natural* corruptions, and to acquire new ones, which nature had not given us: that we diſarmed ourſelves of the few abilities ſhe had beſtowed; had been very ſucceſsful in multiplying our original wants, and ſeemed to ſpend our whole lives in vain endeavours to ſupply them by our own inventions. That as to myſelf it was manifeſt, I had neither the ſtrength or agility of a common *yahoo*; that I walked infirmly on my hinder-feet; had found out a contrivance to make my claws of no uſe or defence, and to remove the hair from my chin, which

tended as a ſhelter from the ſun and the weather.
That I could neither run with ſpeed, nor climb
ke my *brethren* (as he called them), the *yahoos* in
intry.
t our inſtitutions of *government* and *law* were
owing to our groſs defects in *reaſon*, and by con-
:e in *virtue*; becauſe *reaſon* alone is ſufficient to
a *rational* creature; which was therefore a cha-
we had no pretence to challenge, even from the
t I had given of my own people: although I e ma-
perceived, that, in order to favour them, I had
led many particulars, and often *ſaid the thing
was not*.
was the more confirmed in this opinion, becauſe
erved, that as I agreed in every feature of my bo-
h other *yahoos*, except where it was to my real
antage, in point of ſtrength, ſpeed, and activity,
ortneſs of my claws, and ſome other particulars
nature had no part; ſo from the repreſentation I
ven him of our lives, our manners, and our actions,
nd as near a reſemblance in the diſpoſition of our
He ſaid the *yahoos* were known to hate one ano-
more than they did any different ſpecies of animals;
he reaſon uſually aſſigned was, the odiouſneſs of
own ſhapes, which all could ſee in the reſt but not
mſelves. He had therefore begun to think it not
e in us to *cover* our bodies, and by that invention
al many of our deformities from each other, which
l elſe be hardly ſupportable. But he now found he
been miſtaken, and that the diſſenſions of thoſe
in his country were owing to the ſame cauſe with
as I had deſcribed them. For if (ſaid he) you
among five *yahoos* as much food as would be ſuf-
t for fifty, they will, inſtead of eating peaceably,
ogether by the ears, each ſingle one impatient to
all to itſelf; and therefore a ſervant was uſually
oyed to ſtand by while they were feeding abroad,
hoſe kept at home were tied at a diſtance from each
; that if a cow died of age or accident, before a
'hnhnm could ſecure it for his own *yahoos*, thoſe
: neighbourhood would come in herds to ſeize it,
hen *would enſue* ſuch a battle as I had deſcribed,
with

with terrible wounds made by their claws on both ſides, although they ſeldom were able to kill one another for want of ſuch convenient inſtruments of death as we had invented. At other times the like battles have been fought between the *yahoos* of ſeveral neighbourhoods without any viſible cauſe: thoſe of one diſtrict watching all opportunities to ſurpriſe the next, before they are prepared. But if they find their project hath miſcarried, they return home, and, for want of enemies, engage in what I call a civil war among themſelves.

That in ſome fields of his country there are certain *ſhining ſtones* of ſeveral colours, whereof the *yahoos* are violently fond; and when part of theſe *ſtones* is fixed in the earth, as it ſometimes happeneth, they will dig with their claws for whole days to get them out; then carry them away and hide them by heaps in their kennels; but ſtill looking round with great caution for fear their comrades ſhould find out their treaſure. My maſter ſaid, he could never diſcover the reaſon of this unnatural appetite, or how theſe *ſtones* could be of any uſe to a *yahoo*; but now he believed it might proceed from the ſame principle of *avarice*, which I had aſcribed to mankind: that he had once, by way of experiment, privately removed a heap of theſe *ſtones* from the place where one of his *yahoos* had buried it; whereupon the ſordid animal, miſſing his treaſure, by his loud lamenting brought the whole herd to the place, there miſerably howled, then fell to biting and tearing the reſt; began to pine away, would neither eat, nor ſleep, nor work, till he ordered a ſervant privately to convey the *ſtones* into the ſame hole, and hide them as before; which when his *yahoo* had found, he preſently recovered his ſpirits, and good humour, but took care to remove them to a better hiding-place, and hath ever ſince been a very ſerviceable brute*.

My maſter farther aſſured me, which I alſo obſerved myſelf, that in the fields where the *ſhining ſtones* abound the fierceſt and moſt frequent battles are fought, occaſ

* Nothing can be ſaid to make avarice a greater reproach to mankind, except that it is a vice which this deſcription will not cure. *Hawkeſ.*

ons

oned by perpetual inroads of the neighbouring *yahoos*.

He ſaid, it was common, when two *yahoos* diſcovered ſuch a *ſtone* in a field, and were contending which of them ſhould be the proprietor, a third would take the advantage, and carry it away from them both; which my maſter would needs contend to have ſome kind of reſemblance with our *ſuits at law*; wherein I thought it for our credit not to undeceive him; ſince the deciſion he mentioned was much more equitable than many degrees among us: becauſe the plantiff and defendant there loſt nothing beſide the *ſtone* they contended for, whereas our *courts of equity* would never have diſmiſſed the cauſe, while either of them had any thing left.

My maſter, continuing his diſcourſe, ſaid, there was nothing that rendered the *yahoos* more odious, than their indiſtinguiſhing appetite to devour every thing that came in their way, whether herbs, roots, berries, the corrupted fleſh of animals, or all mingled together: and it was peculiar in their temper, that they were fonder of what they could get by rapine or ſtealth at a greater diſtance, than much better food provided for them at home. If their prey held out, they would eat till they were ready to burſt, after which nature had pointed out to them a certain *root* that gave them a general evacuation.

There was alſo another kind of *root*, very *juicy*, but ſomewhat rare and difficult to be found, which the *yahoos* ſought for with much eagerneſs, and would ſuck it with great delight; it produced in them the ſame effects, that wine hath upon us. It would make them ſometimes hug, and ſometimes tear one another; they would howl, and grin, and chatter, and reel, and tumble, and then fall aſleep in the mud.

I did indeed obſerve, that the *yahoos* were the only animals in this country ſubject to any diſeaſes; which however were much fewer than horſes have among us, and contracted not by any ill treatment they meet with, but by the naſtineſs and greedineſs of that ſordid brute. Neither has their language any more than a general appellation for thoſe maladies, which is borrowed from the name of the beaſt, and called *hnea-yahoo* or the *yahoo's evil*, and the cure preſcribed is a mixture of *their own dung* and *urine*, forcibly put down the *yahoo*'s throat.

This

This I have ſince often known to have been ta
ſucceſs, and do here freely recommend it to my
men, for the public-good, as an admirable ſpeci
all diſeaſes produced by repletion.

As to learning, government, arts, manufact
the like, my maſter confeſſed, he could find litt
reſemblance between the *yahoos* of that country
in ours. For he only meant to obſerve, wh
there was in our natures. He had heard inc
curious Houyhnhnms obſerve, 'that in moſt h
was a ſort of ruling *yahoo* (as among us there is
ly ſome leading or principal ſtag in a park) wh
ways more *deformed* in body, and *miſchievous i*
tion, than any of the reſt. That this *leader* ha
a favourite as *like himſelf* as he could get, whoſe
ment was to *lick his maſter's feet and poſter*
drive the female yahoos *to his kennel* *; for
was now and then rewarded with a piece of a
This *favouriti* is hated by the whole herd; a
fore to protect himſelf keeps always *near the*
his leader. He uſually continues in office, til
can be found; but the very moment he is diſca
ſucceſſor at the head of all the *yahoos* in tha
young and old, male and female, come in a b
diſcharge their excrements upon him from head
But how far this might be applicable to our c
favourites, and *miniſters of ſtate*, my maſter ſa
beſt determine.

I durſt make no return to this malicious in
which debaſed human underſtanding below the
of a common *hound*, who hath judgment enou
ſtinguiſh and follow the cry of the *ableſt dog in*
without being ever miſtaken.

My maſter told me there was ſome qualities
able in the *yahoos*, which he had not obſerved m
tion, or at leaſt very ſlightly, in the accounts I
him of human kind; he ſaid, thoſe animals,
brutes, had their females in common; but in
differed, that the ſhe *yahoo* would admit the m
ſhe was pregnant; and that the hees would qu

* Flattery and pimping. Haw.

ight with the females, as fiercely as with each other; oth which practices were ſuch degrees of infamous bru- ality, as no other ſenſitive creature ever arrived at.

Another thing he wondered at in the *yahoos*, was their range diſpoſition to naſtineſs and dirt; whereas there ppears to be a natural love of cleanlineſs in all other a- imals. As to the two former accuſations, I was glad to t them paſs without any reply, becauſe I had not a word o offer upon them in defence of my ſpecies, which o- herwiſe I certainly had done from my own inclinations. ut I could have eaſily vindicated human kind from the mputation of ſingularity upon the laſt article, if there ad been any *ſwine* in that country (as unluckily for me here were not), which, although it may be a *ſweeter uadruped* than a *yahoo*, cannot, I humbly conceive, in ſtice, pretend to more cleanlineſs; and ſo his honour imſelf muſt have owned, if he had ſeen their filthy way f feeding, and their cuſtom of wallowing and ſleeping in e mud.

My maſter likewiſe mentioned another quality, which is ſervants had diſcovered in ſeveral *yahoos*, and to him as wholly unaccountable. He ſaid, a fancy would metimes take a *yahoo* to retire into a corner, to lie down, nd howl and groan, and ſpurn away all that came near im, although he were young and fat, wanted neither ood nor water; nor did the ſervants imagine what could oſſibly ail him. And the only remedy they found was o ſet him to hard work, after which he would infallibly ome to himſelf. To this I was ſilent, out of partiality o my own kind; yet here I could plainly diſcover the rue ſeeds of *ſpleen*, which only ſeizeth on the *lazy*, the *uxurious* and the *rich*; who if they were forced to un- ergo the *ſame regimen*, I would undertake for the ure.

His honour had farther obſerved, that a female *yahoo* would often ſtand behind a bank or a buſh to gaze on he young males paſſing by, and then appear, and hide, ſing many antic geſtures and grimaces, at which time it was obſerved that ſhe had a moſt *offenſive ſmell*; and when any of the males advanced, would ſlowly retire, looking often back, and with a counterfeit ſhew of fear

run off into ſome convenient place, where ſhe knew the male would follow her.

At other times, if a female ſtranger came among them, three or four of her own ſex would get about her, and ſtare, and chatter, and grin, and ſmell her all over; and then turn off, with geſtures that ſeemed to expreſs contempt and diſdain.

Perhaps my maſter might refine a little on theſe ſpeculations, which he had drawn from what he obſerved himſelf, or had been told him by others: however I could not reflect without ſome amazement and much ſorrow that the rudiments of *lewdneſs*, *coquetry*, *cenſure* and *ſcandal* ſhould have place by inſtinct in womankind.

I expected every moment, that my maſter would diſcuſe the *yahoos* of thoſe unnatural appetites in both ſexes, ſo common among us. But nature, it ſeems, has not been ſo expert a ſchool-miſtreſs; and theſe polite pleaſures are intirely the productions of art and reaſon on our ſide of the globe.

CHAP. VIII.

The author relates ſeveral particulars of the yahoos. The great virtues of the Houyhnhnms. The education and exerciſe of their youth. Their general aſſembly.

AS I ought to have underſtood human nature much better, than I ſuppoſed it poſſible for my maſter to do, ſo it was eaſy to apply the character he gave of the *yahoos* to myſelf, and my countrymen; and I believed I could yet make farther diſcoveries from my own obſervation. I therefore often begged his honour to let me go among the herds of *yahoos* in the neighbourhood, which he always very graciouſly conſented, being perfectly convinced, that the hatred I bore theſe brutes would never ſuffer me to be corrupted by them; and his honour ordered one of his ſervants, a ſtrong ſorrel-nag, very gentleſt and good-natured, to be my guard, without whoſe protection I durſt not undertake ſuch adventures. I have already told the reader, how much I was pe-

odious animals upon my first arrival. And I
ls failed very narrowly three or four times of
to their clutches, when I happened to stray at
ice without my hanger. And I have reason to
hey had some imagination that I was of their
ies, which I often assisted myself, by stripping up
s, and shewing my naked arms and breast in their
en my protector was with me. At which times
uld approach as near as they durst, and imitate
is after the manner of monkies, but ever with
is of hatred; as a tame *jack-daw* with cap and
is always persecuted by the wild ones, when he
o be got among them.

ire prodigiously nimble from their infancy; how-
ce caught a young male of three years old, and
red by all marks of tenderness to make it quiet;
ttle imp fell a squaling, and scratching, and bi-
h such violence, that I was forced to let it go;
is high time; for a whole troop of old ones came
at the noise; but finding the cub was safe (for
an), and my sorrel nag being by, they durst not
ear us. I observed the young animal's flesh to
y rank, and the stink was somewhat beyond a
id a *fox*, but much more disagreeable. I forgot
circumstance (and perhaps I might have the rea-
don, if it were wholly omitted), that while I
odious vermin in my hands, it voided its filthy
ts, of a yellow liquid substance, all over my
but by good fortune there was a small brook
where I washed myself as clean as I could; al-
durst not come into my master's presence, until
fficiently aired.

iat I could discover, the *yahoos* appear to be the
eachable of all animals; their capacities never
higher than to draw or carry burdens. Yet I
inion, this defect ariseth chiefly from a perverse,
ispositon: For they are cunning, malicious,
ous, and revengeful. They are strong and har-
of a cowardly spirit, and by consequence inso-
ject, and cruel. It is observed, that the *red-*
both sexes are more libidinous and mischievous

than the reſt, whom yet they much exceed in ſtren and activity.

The Houyhnhnms keep the *yahoos* for preſent uſ huts not far from the houſe; but the reſt are ſent abr to certain fields, where they dig up roots, eat ſeve kinds of herbs, and ſearch about for carrion, or ſo times catch *weaſels* and *lubimuh* (a ſort of *wild r* which they greedily devour. Nature hath taught th to dig deep holes with their nails on the ſide of a ri ground, wherein they lie by themſelves; only the l nels of the females are larger, ſufficient to hold tw three cubs.

They ſwim from their infancy like frogs, and are to continue long under water, where they often take which the females carry home to their young. And on this occaſion I hope the reader will pardon my rela an odd adventure.

Being one day abroad with my protector, the ſo nag, and the weather exceeding hot, I intreated hi let me bathe in a river that was near. He conſen and I immediately ſtripped myſelf ſtark-naked, and down ſoftly into the ſtream. It happened that a y female *yahoo*, ſtanding behind a bank, ſaw the whole ceeding, and inflamed by deſire, as the nag and I jectured, came running with all ſpeed, and leaped the water within five yards of the place where I ba I was never in my life ſo terribly frighted; the nag gazing at ſome diſtance, not ſuſpecting any harm. embraced me, after a moſt fulſome manner: I roa loud as I could, and the nag came galloping towar whereupon ſhe quitted her graſp with the utmo luctancy, and leaped upon the oppoſite bank, wh ſtood gazing and howling all the time I was putti my cloaths.

This was a matter of diverſion to my maſter family, as well as of mortification to myſelf. Fo I could no longer deny, that I was a real *yahoo* in limb and feature, ſince the females had a nature penſity to me, as one of their own ſpecies: neith the hair of this brute of a red colour (which migh been ſome excuſe for an appetite a little irregula black as a ſloe, and her countenance did not make

pearance altogether ſo hideous as the reſt of her kind; for, I think, ſhe could not be above eleven years old.

Having lived three years in this country, the reader, I ſuppoſe, will expect, that I ſhould, like other travellers, give him ſome account of the manners and cuſtoms of its inhabitants, which it was indeed my principal ſtudy to learn.

As theſe noble Houyhnhnms are endued by nature with a general diſpoſition to all virtues, and have no conceptions or ideas of what is evil in a rational creature; ſo their grand maxim is, to cultivate *reaſon*, and to be wholly governed by it. Neither is *reaſon* among them a point problematical, as with us, where men can argue with plauſibility on both ſides of a queſtion; but ſtrikes you with immediate conviction; as it muſt needs do, where it is not mingled, obſcured, or diſcoloured, by paſſion and intereſt. I remember it was with extreme difficulty, that I could bring my maſter to underſtand the meaning of the word *opinion*, or how a point could be diſputable; becauſe *reaſon* taught us to affirm or deny only where we are certain; and beyond our knowledge we cannot do either: So that controverſies, wranglings, diſputes, and poſitiveneſs, in falſe or dubious propoſitions, are evils unknown among the Houyhnhnms. In the like manner, when I uſed to explain to him our ſeveral ſyſtems of *natural philoſophy*, he would laugh, that a creature pretending to *reaſon*, ſhould value itſelf upon the knowledge of other people's conjectures, and in things where that knowledge, if it were certain, could be of no uſe; wherein he agreed entirely with the ſentiments of Socrates, as Plato delivers them; which I mention as the higheſt honour I can do that prince of philoſophers. I have often ſince reflected, what deſtruction ſuch a doctrine would make in the libraries of Europe; and how many paths to fame would be then ſhut up in the learned world.

Friendſhip and *benevolence* are the two principal virtues among the Houyhnhnms *; and theſe not confined to particular objects, but univerſal, to the whole race. For a ſtranger from the remoteſt parts is equally treated with the neareſt neighbour; and where-ever he

† Their virtuous qualities are only negative. OTTERY.

goes, looks upon himself as at home. They preserve *decency* and *civility* in the highest degrees; but are altogether ignorant of *ceremony*. They have no fondness for their colts or foles; but the care they take in educating them, proceedeth entirely from the dictates of *reason**. And I observed my master to shew the same affection to his neighbour's issue, that he had for his own. They will have it that *nature* teaches them to love the whole species, and it is *reason* only that maketh a distinction of persons, where there is a superior degree of virtue †.

When the matron Houyhnhnms have produced one of each sex, they no longer accompany with their consorts, except they lose one of their issue by some casualty, which very seldom happens: but in such a case they meet again; or when the like accident befals a person whose wife is past bearing, some other couple bestow on him one of their own colts, and then go together again until the mother is pregnant. The caution is necessary to prevent the country from being over-burdened with numbers. But the race of inferior Houyhnhnms, bred up to be servants, is not so strictly limited upon this article; these are allowed to produce three of each sex to be domestics in the noble families.

In their marriages, they are exactly careful to choose such colours as will not make any disagreeable mixture in the breed. *Strength* is chiefly valued in the male,

* We here view the pure instincts of brutes, acting in their narrow sphere, merely for their immediate preservation. *Orrery.* — See above, P. 219. 222.

† It may perhaps be be thought somewhat strange, that the sense of the noble Commentator should appear to be directly opposite to that of the author, in the passages which these notes were intended to illustrate. But this apparent opposition may arise merely from their using the same word in an opposite sense; as by the word *candour*, his Lordship always means a quality which inclines a man to put the worst construction upon the words and actions of another; and by *candour*, the Dean always means just the contrary.

Compare the note from Orrery, in Gulliver's Travels, vol. 4. p. 50. with Swift's apology for the Tale of a Tub, in vol. 1. p. 2.

and

:omelineſs in the female; not upon the account of
but to preſerve the race from degenerating; for
e a female happens to excel in *ſtrength*, a conſort is
n with regard to *comelineſs*.
ourtſhip, love, preſents, jointures, ſettlements, have
ace in their thoughts; or terms whereby to expreſs
in their language. The young couple meet and are
l, merely becauſe it is the determination of their
nts and friends: it is what they ſee done every day,
they look upon it as one of the neceſſary actions of
ſonable being. But the violation of marriage, or
ther unchaſtity, was never heard of; and the mar-
pair paſs their lives with the ſame friendſhip, and
al benevolence, that they bear to others of the
ſpecies who come in their way; without jealouſy,
neſs, quarrelling, or diſcontent.
educating the youth of both ſexes, their method is
rable, and highly deſerveth our imitation. Theſe
not ſuffered to taſte a grain of *oats*, except upon cer-
days, till eighteen years old; nor *milk*, but very
y; and in ſummer they graze two hours in the morn-
and as many in the evening, which their parents like-
s obſerve; but the ſervants are not allowed above half
time, and a great part of their graſs is brought home,
ch they eat at the moſt convenient hours, when they
be beſt ſpared from work.
Temperance, *induſtry*, *exerciſe*, and *cleanlineſs*, are
leſſons equally enjoined to the young ones of both
s: and my maſter thought it monſtrous in us to give
females a different kind of education from the males,
ept in ſome articles of domeſtic management; where-
as he truly obſerved, one half of our natives were
d for nothing but bringing children into the world:
to truſt the care of our children to ſuch uſeleſs ani-
s, he ſaid, was yet a greater inſtance of brutality.
But the Houyhnhnms train up their youth to ſtrength,
d, and hardineſs, by exerciſing them in running races
and down ſteep hills, and over hard ſtony grounds;
when they are all in a ſweat, they are ordered to
over head and ears into a pond or river. Four times
ear the youth of a certain diſtrict meet to ſhew their
ficiency in running and leaping, and other ſeats of

ſtrength and agility; where the victor is rewarded, wit a ſong in his or her praiſe. On this feſtival the ſervant drive a herd of *yahoos* into the field, laden with hay, an oats, and milk, for a repaſt to the Houyhnhnms; aft which theſe brutes are immediately driven back agai for fear of being noiſome to the aſſembly.

Every fourth year, at the *vernal equinox*, there is repreſentative council of the whole nation, which met in a plain about twenty miles from our houſe, and co tinueth about five or ſix days. Here they enquire in the ſtate and condition of the ſeveral diſtricts; whet they abound, or be deficient in hay or oats, or cows *yahoos*? and wherever there is any want (which is t ſeldom), it is immediately ſupplied by unanimous conſe and contribution. Here likewiſe the regulation of ch dren is ſettled: as for inſtance, if a Houyhnhnm ha two males, he changeth one of them with another th hath two females: and when a child hath been loſt l any caſualty, where the mother is paſt breeding, it is d termined what family in the diſtrict ſhall breed another ſupply the loſs.

CHAP. IX.

A grand debate at the general aſſembly of the Houyhnhnm *and how it was determined. The learning of t* Houyhnhnms. *Their buildings. Their manner burials. The defectiveneſs of their language.*

ONE of theſe grand aſſemblies was held in my tim about three months before my departure, whith my maſter went as the repreſentative of our diſtrict. I this council was reſumed their old debate, and indeed th only debate that ever happened in their country; when of my maſter after his return gave me a very particul account.

The queſtion to be debated was, whether the *yaho* ſhould be exterminated from the face of the earth. On of the *members* for the affirmative, offered ſeveral argu ments of great ſtrength and weight; alledging, that a the *yahoos* were the moſt filthy, noiſome, and deforme animal which nature ever produced, ſo they were th

moſ

oſt reſtive and indocile, miſchievous and malicious: ey would privately ſuck the teats of the Houyhnhms ws, kill and devour their cats, trample down their ts and graſs, if they were not continually watched; and mmit a thouſand other extravagancies. He took noe of a general tradition, that *yahoos* had not been alays in their country; but that, many ages ago, two of ſe brutes appeared together upon a mountain; whether produced by the heat of the ſun upon corrupted mud d ſlime, or from the ooze and froth of the ſea, was ver known: that theſe *yahoos* engendered, and their ood, in a ſhort time, grew ſo numerous as to over-run d infeſt the whole nation: that the Houyhnhnms, to get l of this evil, made a general hunting, and at laſt inoſed the whole herd; and deſtroying the elder, every ouyhnhnm kept two young ones in a kennel, and ought them to ſuch a degree of tameneſs, as an anial ſo ſavage by nature can be capable of acquiring; ung them for draught and carriage: that there ſeemed to e much truth in this tradition, and that thoſe creatures ould not be *Yhnhnianſhy* (or *aborigines* of the land), beauſe of the violent hatred the Houyhnhnms, as well as ll other animals, bore them; which, although their evil liſpoſition ſufficiently deſerved, could never have arrived it ſo high a degree, if they had been Aborigines; or elſe hey would have long ſince been rooted out: that the inhabitants, taking a fancy to uſe the ſervice of the *yahoos*, had very imprudently neglected to cultivate the breed of *aſſes*, which are a comely animal, eaſily kept, more tame and orderly, without any offenſive ſmell, ſtrong enough for labour, although they yield to the other in agility of body; and, if their braying be no agreeable ſound, it is far preferable to the horrible howlings of the *yahoos*.

Several others declared their ſentiments to the ſame purpoſe, when my maſter propoſed an expedient to the aſſembly, whereof he had indeed borrowed the hint from me. He approved of the tradition mentioned by the *honourable member*, who ſpoke before; and affirmed, that the two *yahoos*, ſaid to be the firſt ſeen among them, had been driven thither over the ſea; that, coming to land, and being forſaken by their companions, they retired to the mountains, and, degenerating by degrees, became

came in proceſs of time much more ſavage, than the their own ſpecies in the country from whence theſe originals came. The reaſon of this aſſertion was, he had now in his poſſeſſion a certain wonderful (meaning myſelf), which moſt of them had heard of many of them had ſeen. He then related to them, he firſt found me: that my body was all covered an artificial compoſure of the ſkins and hairs of animals: that I ſpoke in a language of my own, had thoroughly learned theirs: that I had related t the accidents which brought me thither; that, wh ſaw me without my covering, I was an exact *yahoo* very part, only of a whiter colour, leſs hairy, and ſhorter claws. He added, how I had endeavour perſuade him, that, in my own and other countries *yahoos* acted as the governing, rational animal, and the Houyhnhnms in ſervitude: that he obſerved i all the qualities of a *yahoo*; only a little more civiliz ſome tincture of reaſon; which however was in a d as far inferior to the Houyhnhnm race, as the y of their country were to me: that, among others th I mentioned a cuſtom we had of *caſtrating* Houyhn when they were young, in order to render them t that the operation was eaſy and ſafe; that it wa ſhame to learn wiſdom from brutes, as induſtry is ta by the ant, and building by the ſwallow (for ſo I ſtate the word *lyhannh*, although it be a much l fowl): that this invention might be practiſed upo younger *yahoos* here, which, beſides rendering them t able and fitter for uſe, would in an age put an end t whole ſpecies without deſtroying life: that, in the t time, the Houyhnhnms ſhould be *exhorted* to cultivat breed of aſſes, which as they are in all reſpects more v able brutes; ſo they have this advantage, to be fit for vice at five years old, which the others are not till tw

This was all my maſter thought fit to tell me at time, of what paſſed in the grand council. But he pleaſed to conceal one particular, which related pe nally to myſelf, whereof I ſoon felt the unhappy ef as the reader will know in its proper place, and f whence I date all the ſucceeding misfortunes of my l

The Houyhnhnms have no letters, and conſequ

their knowledge is all traditional. But there happening few events of any moment among a people ſo well united, naturally diſpoſed to every virtue, wholly governed by reaſon, and cut off from all commerce with other nations; the hiſtorical part is eaſily preſerved without burdening their memories. I have already obſerved, that they are ſubject to no diſeaſes, and therefore can have no need of phyſicians. However, they have excellent medicines compoſed of herbs, to cure accidental bruiſes, and cuts in the paſtern or frog of the foot by ſharp ſtones, as well as other maims and hurts in the ſeveral parts of the body.

They calculate the year by the revolution of the ſun and the moon, but uſe no ſubdiviſions into weeks. They are well enough acquainted with the motions of thoſe two luminaries, and underſtand the nature of *eclipſes*; and this is the utmoſt progreſs of their *aſtronomy*.

In *poetry* they muſt be allowed to excel all other mortals; wherein the juſtneſs of their ſimilies, and the minuteneſs as well as exactneſs of their deſcriptions, are indeed inimitable. Their verſes abound very much in both of theſe; and uſually contain either ſome exalted notions of friendſhip and benevolence, or the praiſes of thoſe, who were victors in races and other bodily exerciſes. Their buildings, although very rude and ſimple, are not inconvenient, but well contrived to defend them from all injuries of cold and heat. They have a kind of tree, which at forty years old looſens in the root, and falls with the firſt ſtorm; it grows very ſtrait, and being pointed like ſtakes, with a ſharp ſtone (for the Houyhnhnms know not the uſe of iron); they ſtick them erect in the ground about ten inches aſunder, and their weave in oat-ſtraw, or ſometimes wattles, betwixt them. The roof is made after the ſame manner, and ſo are the doors.

The Houyhnhnms uſe the hollow part, between the paſtern and the hoof, of their fore-feet, as we do our hands, and this with greater dexterity than I could at firſt imagine. I have ſeen a white mare of our family, thread a needle (which I lent her on purpoſe) with that joint. They milk their cows, reap their oats, and do all the work which requires hands in the ſame manner. They have a kind of hard flints, which, by grinding a-

gainſt

gainſt other ſtones, they form into inſtruments, that ſerve inſtead of wedges, axes, and hammers. With tools made of theſe flints they likewiſe cut their hay, and reap their oats, which there grow naturally in ſeveral fields: the *yahoos* draw home the ſheaves in carriages, and the ſervants tread them, in certain covered huts, to get out the grain, which is kept in ſtores. They make a rude kind of earthen and wooden veſſels, and bake the former in the ſun.

If they can avoid caſualties, they die only of old age, and are buried in the obſcureſt places that can be found; their friends and relations expreſſing neither joy nor grief at their departure; nor does the dying perſon diſcover the leaſt regret that he is leaving the world, any more than if he were upon returning home from a viſit to one of his neighbours. I remember, my maſter having once made an appointment with a friend and his family, to come to his houſe upon ſome affair of importance, on the day fixed, the miſtreſs and her two children came very late; ſhe made two excuſes, firſt for her huſband, who, as ſhe ſaid, happened that very morning to *Ihnuwsk*. The word is ſtrongly expreſſive in their language, but not eaſily rendered into Engliſh; it ſignifies *to return to his firſt mother*. Her excuſe for not coming ſooner was, that her huſband dying late in the morning, ſhe was a good while conſulting her ſervants about a convenient place where his body ſhould be laid; and I obſerved, ſhe behaved herſelf at our houſe as chearfully as the reſt: ſhe died about three months after.

They live generally to ſeventy, or ſeventy-five years, very ſeldom to fourſcore: ſome weeks before their death, they feel a gradual decay; but without pain. During this time they are much viſited by their friends, becauſe they cannot go abroad with their uſual eaſe and ſatisfaction. However, about ten days before their death, which they ſeldom fail in computing, they return the viſits that have been made them, by thoſe who are neareſt in the neighbourhood, being carried in a convenient ſledge drawn by *yahoos*; which vehicle they uſe, not only upon this occaſion, but when they grow old, upon long journies, or when they are lamed by any accident. And therefore when the dying Houyhnhnms return thoſe viſits,

hey take a ſolemn leave of their friends, as if they oing to ſome remote part of the country, where ſigned to paſs the reſt of their lives.

ow not whether it may be worth obſerving, that ouyhnhnms have no word in their language to ex- ny thing that is *evil*, except what they borrow he deformities or ill qualities of the *yahoos*. Thus note the folly of a ſervant, an omiſſion of a child, that cuts their feet, a continuance of foul or un- ble weather, and the like, by adding to each the of *yahoo*. For inſtance, *hhnm yahoo, whnaholm ynlhnmdwihlma yahoo*, and an ill contrived houſe, *hnmrohlnw yahoo*.

uld with great pleaſure enlarge farther upon the rs and virtues of this excellent people; but intend- a ſhort time to publiſh a volume by itſelf, expreſly that ſubject, I refer the reader thither. And, in ean time, proceed to relate my own ſad cata- e.

CHAP. X.

thor's œconomy and happy life among the Houy- nms. His great improvement in virtue by con- ſing with them. Their converſations. The author notice given him by his maſter, that he muſt de- t from the country. He falls into a ſwoon for f; but ſubmits. He contrives and finiſhes a ca- by the help of a fellow-ſervant, and puts to ſea at venture.

D ſettled my little œconomy to my own heart's ntent. My maſter had ordered a room to be made e after their manner, about ſix yards from the ; the ſides and floors of which I plaiſtered with nd covered with ruſh-matts of my own contriving; beaten hemp, which there grows wild, and made a ſort of ticking: this I filled with the feathers of l birds I had taken with ſpringes made of *yahoos* and were excellent food. I had worked two with my knife, the ſorrel-nag helping me in the groſſer

groſſer and more laborious part. When my clo
worn to rags, I made myſelf others with th
rabbets, and of a certain beautiful animal a
ſame ſize, called *nnuhnoh*, the ſkin of which
with a fine down. Of theſe I alſo made very
ſtockings. I ſoaled my ſhoes with wood, w
from a tree, and fitted to the upper-leather; t
this was worn out, I ſupplied it with the ſkins
dried in the ſun. I often got honey out of holl
which I mingled with water, or eat with my br
man could more verify the truth of theſe two
That nature is very eaſily ſatisfied; and, *Th*
is the mother of invention. I enjoyed perfect
body, and tranquillity of mind. I did not feel th
ery or inconſtancy of a friend, nor the injuries
or open enemy. I had no occaſion of bribing,
or pimping, to procure the favour of any great
of his minion. I wanted no fence againſt fra
preſſion; here was neither phyſician to deſtroy
nor lawyer to ruin my fortune; no informer
my words and actions, or forge accuſations aga
hire; here were no gibers, cenſurers, back-bit
pockets, highwaymen, houſe-breakers, attorni
buffoons, gameſters, politicians, wits, ſpleneti
talkers, controvertiſts, raviſhers, murderers, rol
tuoſoes; no leaders or followers of party an
no encouragers to vice by ſeducement or exa
dungeons, axes, gibbets, whipping-poſts, or pil
cheating ſhop-keepers or mechanics; no pride,
affectation; no fops, bullies, drunkards, ſtrollir
or poxes; no ranting, lewd, expenſive wives;
proud pedants; no importunate, over-bearing
ſome, noiſy, roaring, empty, conceited, ſweari
nions; no ſcoundrels raiſed from the duſt up
rit of their vices, or nobility thrown into it
of their virtues; no lords, fidlers, judges, o
maſters.

I had the favour of being admitted to ſeve
hnhms, who came to viſit or dine with m
where his honour graciouſly ſuffered me to w
room, and liſten to their diſcourſe. Both h
company would often deſcend to aſk me quel

: my anſwers. I had alſo ſometimes the honour ending my maſter in his viſits to others. I never ied to ſpeak, except in anſwer to a queſtion; and did it with inward regret, becauſe it was a loſs of ch time for improving myſelf: but I was infinitely ted with the ſtation of an humble auditor in ſuch rſations, where nothing paſſed but what was uſeful, ſed in the feweſt and moſt ſignificant words: where ave already ſaid) the greateſt *decency* was obſerv- thout the leaſt degree of ceremony; where no per- oke without being pleaſed himſelf, and pleaſing his nions; where there was no interruption, tediouſ- heat, or difference of ſentiments. They have a), that when people are met together, a ſhort ſi- doth much improve converſation: this I found to ie; for during thoſe little intermiſſions of talk, new would ariſe in their minds, which very much en- d the diſcourſe. Their ſubjects are generally on ſhip and benevolence, on order and œconomy; imes upon the viſible operations of nature, or anci- additions; upon the bounds and limits of virtue; up- : uncerring rules of reaſon, or upon ſome determi- is to be taken at the next great aſſembly; and of- on the various excellencies of *poetry*. I may add, ut vanity, that my preſence often gave them ſuffi- matter for diſcourſe, becauſe it afforded my maſter caſion of letting his friends into the hiſtory of me y country, upon which they were all pleaſed to de- n a manner not very advantageous to human kind; r that reaſon I ſhall not repeat what they ſaid: on- ay be allowed to obſerve, that his honour, to my admiration, appeared to underſtand the nature of much better than myſelf. He went through all :es and follies, and diſcovered many which I had mentioned to him, by only ſuppoſing what qualities o of their country, with a ſmall proportion of reaſon, be capable of exerting; and concluded, with too probability, how vile, as well as miſerable, ſuch a re muſt be.

:ely confeſs, that all the little knowledge I have of .lue, was acquired by the lectures I received from ıſter, and from hearing the diſcourſes of him and his

his friends; to which I ſhould be prouder to liſten, than to dictate to the greateſt and wiſeſt aſſembly in Europe. I admired the ſtrength, comelineſs, and ſpeed of the inhabitants; and ſuch a conſtellation of virtues, in ſuch amiable perſons, produced in me the higheſt veneration. At firſt indeed I did not feel that natural awe, which the *yahoos* and all other animals bear towards them: but it grew upon me by degrees, much ſooner than I imagined, and was mingled with a reſpectful love and gratitude, that they would condeſcend to diſtinguiſh me from the reſt of my ſpecies.

When I thought of my family, my friends, my countrymen, or human race in general, I conſidered them as they really were, *yahoos* in ſhape and diſpoſition, perhaps a little more civilized, and qualified with the gift of ſpeech; but making no other uſe of reaſon, than to improve and multiply thoſe vices, whereof their brethren in this country had only the ſhare that nature allotted them. When I happened to behold the reflection of my own form in a lake or a fountain, I turned away my face in horror and deteſtation of myſelf; and could better endure the ſight of a common *yahoo* than of my own perſon. By converſing with the Houyhnhnms, and looking upon them with delight, I fell to imitate their gate and geſture, which is now grown into an habit; and my friends often tell me in a blunt way, that *I trot like a horſe*; which however I take for a great compliment: neither ſhall I diſown, that in ſpeaking I am apt to fall into the voice and manner of the Houyhnhnms, and hear myſelf ridiculed on that account without the leaſt mortification.

In the midſt of all this happineſs, and when I looked upon myſelf to be fully ſettled for life, my maſter ſent for me one morning a little earlier than his uſual hour. I obſerved by his countenance, that he was in ſome perplexity, and at a loſs how to begin what he had to ſpeak. After a ſhort ſilence, he told me, he did not know how I would take what he was going to ſay; that in the laſt general aſſembly, when the affair of the *yahoos* was entered upon, the repreſentatives had taken offence at his keeping a *yahoo* (meaning myſelf) in his family, more like a Houyhnhnm, than a brute animal. That he was

known

frequently to converſe with me, as if he could
me advantage or pleaſure in my company: that
actice was not agreeable to reaſon or nature, or
ver heard of before among them. The aſſem-
herefore *exhort* him either to employ me like the
y ſpecies, or command me to ſwim back to the
m whence I came: That the firſt of theſe ex-
was utterly rejected by all the Houyhnhnms,
ever ſeen me at his houſe or their own: for they
that becauſe I had ſome rudiments of reaſon,
the natural pravity of thoſe animals, it was to
d, I might be able to ſeduce them into the
nd mountainous parts of the country, and bring
troops by night to deſtroy the Houyhnhnms cat-
ing naturally of the ravenous kind, and averſe
our.

after added, that he was daily preſſed by the
nms of the neighbourhood to have the aſſem-
hortation executed, which he could not put off
nger. He doubted it would be impoſſible for
im to another country; and therefore wiſhed I
ontrive ſome ſort of vehicle reſembling thoſe I
ibed to him, that might carry me on the ſea:
work I ſhould have the aſſiſtance of his own
as well as thoſe of his neighbours. He con-
that, for his own part, he could have been con-
eep me in his ſervice as long as I lived; becauſe
I had cured myſelf of ſome bad habits and diſ-
, by endeavouring, as far as my inferior nature
ible, to imitate the Houyhnhnms.

ld here obſerve to the reader, that a decree of
ral aſſembly in this country is expreſſed by the
bloayn, which ſignifies an *exhortation*, as near as
der it; for they have no conception how a rati-
ture may be *compelled*, but only adviſed, or *ex-*
becauſe no perſon can diſobey reaſon without
p his claim to be a rational creature.

ſtruck with the utmoſt grief and deſpair at my
diſcourſe: and being unable to ſupport the ago-
s under, I fell into a ſwoon at his feet: when I
myſelf, he told me, that he concluded I had
d (for theſe people are ſubject to no ſuch inbe-

cilities of nature). I answered, in a faint voice, that death would have been too great an happiness; that although I could not blame the assembly's *exhortation*, or the urgency of his friends; yet, in my weak and corrupt judgment, I thought it might consist with reason to have been less rigorous: that I could not swim a league, and probably the nearest land to theirs might be distant above an hundred: that many materials necessary for making a small vessel to carry me off, were wholly wanting in this country, which however I would attempt in obedience and gratitude to his honour, although I concluded the thing to be impossible, and therefore looked on myself as already devoted to destruction: that the certain prospect of an unnatural death was the least of my evils: for supposing I should escape with life by some strange adventure, how could I think with temper of passing my days among *yahoos*, and relapsing into my old corruptions, for want of examples to lead and keep me within the paths of virtue: that I knew too well, upon what solid reasons all the determinations of the wise Houyhnhnms were founded, not to be shaken by arguments of mine, a miserable *yahoo*; and therefore, after presenting him with my humble thanks for the offer of his servants assistance in making a vessel, and desiring a reasonable time for so difficult a work, I told him I would endeavour to preserve a wretched being; and if, ever I returned to England, was not without hopes of being useful to my own species, by celebrating the praises of the renowned Houyhnhnms, and proposing their virtues to the imitation of mankind.

My master, in a few words, made a very gracious reply, allowed me the space of two *months* to finish my boat, and ordered the sorrel-nag, my fellow-servant (for so at this distance I may presume to call him); to follow my instructions; because I told my master, that his help would be sufficient, and I knew he had a tenderness for me.

In his company, my first business was to go to that part of the coast, where my rebellious crew had ordered me to be set on shore. I got upon a height, and looking on every side into the sea, fancied I saw a small island *towards* the *north-east*: I took out my pocket-glass, and could

then clearly diſtinguiſh it about five leagues off, as puted; but it appeared to the ſorrel-nag to be only cloud: for as he had no conception of any coun- ſide his own, ſo he could not be as expert in di- iſhing remote objects at ſea, as we who ſo much rſe in that element.

er I had diſcovered this iſland, I conſidered no far- but reſolved, it ſhould, if poſſible, be the firſt of my baniſhment, leaving the conſequence to for-

turned home, and conſulting with the ſorrel-nag, nt into a copſe at ſome diſtance, where I with my and he with a ſhort flint, faſtened very artificially eir manner to a wooden handle, cut down ſeveral ttles, about the thickneſs of a walking-ſtaff, and rger pieces. But I ſhall not trouble the reader particular deſcription of my own mechanics; let it o ſay, that in ſix weeks time, with the help of the ag, who performed the parts that required moſt I finiſhed a ſort of Indian canoe, but much lar- vering it with the ſkins of *yahoos* well ſtitched to- with hempen threads of my own making. My s likewiſe compoſed of the ſkins of the ſame ani- but I made uſe of the youngeſt I could get, the being too tough and thick; and I likewiſe provi- yſelf with four paddles. I laid in a ſtock of boiled of rabbets and fowls; and took with me two veſ- ne filled with milk, and the other with water. ied my canoe in a large pond near my maſter's and then corrected in it what was amiſs; ſtopping chinks with *yahoos* tallow, till I found it ſtanch, ble to bear me and my freight. And, when it was plete as I could poſſibly make it, I had it drawn arriage very gently by *yahoos* to the ſea-ſide, under nduct of the ſorrel-nag, and another ſervant.

en all was ready, and the day came for my de- e, I took leave of my maſter and lady, and the family, mine eyes flowing with tears, and my quite ſunk with grief. But his honour, out of cu- , and perhaps (if I may ſpeak it without vanity), out of kindneſs, was determined to ſee me in my ; and got ſeveral of his neighbouring friends to

accompany him. I was forced to wait above an ho for the tide, and then obſerving the wind very fortunat ly bearing towards the iſland to which I intended ſteer my courſe, I took a ſecond leave of my maſter: b as I was going to proſtrate myſelf to kiſs his hoof, did me the honour to raiſe it gently to my mouth. am not ignorant how much I have been cenſured mentioning this laſt particular. Detractors are ple to think it improbable, that ſo illuſtrious a perſon ſho deſcend to give ſo great a mark of diſtinction to a cr ture ſo inferior as I. Neither have I forgotten how ſome travellers are to boaſt of extraordinary favours t have received. But, if theſe cenſurers were better quainted with the noble and courteous diſpoſition of Houyhnhnms, they would ſoon change their opinion.

I paid my reſpects to the reſt of the Houyhnhnm his honour's company; then getting into my canoe puſhed off from ſhore.

CHAP. XI.

The author's dangerous voyage. He arrives at N Holland, hoping to ſettle there. Is wounded a an arrow by one of the natives. Is ſeized and c ried by force into a Portugueze ſhip. The great vilities of the captain. The author arrives at E land.

I BEGAN this deſperate voyage on February 1714-15, at 9 o' clock in the morning. The w was very favourable; however I made uſe at firſt onl my paddles; but conſidering I ſhould ſoon be weary, i that the wind might chop about, I ventured to ſet up little ſail; and thus, with the help of the tide, I went the rate of a league and a half an hour, as near as I co gueſs. My maſter and his friends continued on ſhore, till I was almoſt out of ſight; and I often he the ſorrel-nag (who always loved me) crying out, *h illa nyha majah yahoo*, Take care of thyſelf gentle *hoo*.

My deſign was, if poſſible, to diſcover ſome ſm iſla

l uninhabited, yet ſufficient by my labour to furniſh with the neceſſaries of life, which I would have ght a greater happineſs than to be firſt miniſter in the ſt court of Europe; ſo horrible was the idea I con- d of returning to live in the ſociety, and under the nment of *yahoos*. For, in ſuch a ſolitude as I de- I could at leaſt enjoy my own thoughts, and re- with delight on the virtues of thoſe inimitable Houy- ms, without any opportunity of degenerating into the and corruptions of my own ſpecies.

he reader may remember what I related, when my conſpired againſt me, and confined me to my cab- How I continued there ſeveral weeks without know- vhat courſe we took; and when I was put a-ſhore in ong-boat, how the ſailors told me with oaths, whe- true or falſe, that they knew not in what part of the d we were. However, I did then believe us to be it ten degrees ſouthward of the Cape of Good-Hope, bout 45 degrees ſouthern latitude, as I gathered from general words I overheard among them, being I oſed to the ſouth-eaſt in their intended voyage to iagaſcar. And although this were but little better conjecture, yet I reſolved to ſteer my courſe eaſt- d, hoping to reach the ſouth-weſt coaſt of New-Hol- l, and perhaps ſome ſuch iſland as I deſired lying ward of it. The wind was full weſt, and, by ſix he evening, I computed I had gone eaſt-ward at leaſt nteen leagues; when I ſpied a very ſmall iſland about f a league off, which I ſoon reached. It was nothing a rock with one creek naturally arched by the force tempeſts. Here I put in my canoe, and climbing a t of the rock, I could plainly diſcover land to the eaſt, ending from ſouth to north. I lay all night in my oe; and repeating my voyage early in the morning, I ived in ſeven hours at the ſouth-eaſt point of New- lland. This confirmed me in the opinion I have long ertained, that the *maps* and *charts* place this country leaſt three degrees more to the eaſt than it really is; ich thought I communicated many years ago to my rthy friend, Mr. Herman Moll, and gave him my ſons for it, although he hath rather choſen to follow or authors.

I ſaw

I ſaw no inhabitants in the place where I landed, and being unarmed, I was afraid of venturing far into the country. I found ſome ſhell-fiſh on the ſhore, and eat them raw, not daring to kindle a fire for fear of being diſcovered by the natives. I continued three days feeding on oyſters and limpits to ſave my own proviſions; and I fortunately found a brook of excellent water, which gave me great relief.

On the fourth day, venturing out early a little too far, I ſaw twenty or thirty natives upon a height, not above five hundred yards from me. They were ſtark-naked, men, women, and children, round a fire, as I could diſcover by the ſmoke. One of them ſpied me, and gave notice to the reſt; five of them advanced towards me, leaving the women and children at the fire. I made what haſte I could to the ſhore, and getting into my canoe, ſhoved off: the ſavages obſerving me retreat, ran after me; and, before I could get far enough into the ſea, diſcharged an arrow, which wounded me deeply on the inſide of my left knee (I ſhall carry the mark to my grave). I apprehended the arrow might be poiſoned, and paddling out of the reach of their darts (being a calm day) I made a ſhift to ſuck the wound, and dreſs it as well as I could.

I was at a loſs what to do, for I durſt not return to the ſame landing-place, but ſtood to the north, and was forced to paddle; for the wind, though very gentle, was againſt me, blowing north-weſt. As I was looking about for a ſecure landing-place, I ſaw a ſail to the north north-eaſt, which appearing every minute more viſible, I was in ſome doubt whether I ſhould wait for them or no; but at laſt my deteſtation of the *yahoo* race prevailed; and turning my canoe, I ſailed and paddled together to the ſouth, and got into the ſame creek from whence I ſet out in the morning, chuſing rather to truſt myſelf among theſe Barbarians, than live with European *yahoos*. I drew up my canoe as cloſe as I could to the ſhore, and hid myſelf behind a ſtone by the little brook, which, as I have already ſaid, was excellent water.

The ſhip came within half a league of this creek, and ſent out her long-boat with veſſels to take in freſh water (for the place, it ſeems, was very well known); but I did not obſerve it, till the boat was almoſt on ſhore; and it

was

:oo late to ſeek another hiding-place. The ſeamen
eir landing obſerved my canoe, and rummaging it all
eaſily conjectured that the owner could not be far
Four of them, well armed, ſearched every cranny
lurking-hole, till at laſt they found me flat on my
behind a ſtone. They gazed a while in admira-
it my ſtrange uncouth dreſs; my coat made of ſkins,
'ooden ſoaled ſhoes, and my furred ſtockings; from
ce however they concluded, I was not a native of
lace, who all go naked. One of the ſeamen, in
gueze, bid me riſe, and aſked who I was. I un-
ood that language very well, and getting upon my
ſaid I was a poor *yahoo* baniſhed from the Houy-
ms, and deſired they would pleaſe to let me depart.
admired to hear me anſwer them in their own
ie, and ſaw, by my complexion, I muſt be an Eu-
n; but were at a loſs to know what I meant by *ya-*
and Houyhnhnms, and at the ſame time fell a laugh-
t my ſtrange tone in ſpeaking, which reſembled the
ing of a horſe. I trembled all the while betwixt
and hatred: I again deſired leave to depart, and was
y moving to my canoe; but they laid hold on me,
ng to know, what country I was of? whence I
? with many other queſtions. I told them I was
in England, from whence I came about five years
and then their country and ours were at peace. I
efore hoped they would not treat me as an enemy,
I meant them no harm, but was a poor *yahoo* ſeek-
ome deſolate place where to paſs the remainder of
nfortunate life.

Then they began to talk, I thought I never heard or
any thing ſo unnatural; for it appeared to me as
ſtrous, as if a dog or cow ſhould ſpeak in England,
yahoo in Houyhnhm-land. The honeſt Portugueze
equally amazed at my ſtrange dreſs, and the odd
ner of delivering my words, which however they un-
ood very well. They ſpoke to me with great hu-
ity, and ſaid they were ſure the captain would carry
gratis to Liſbon, from whence I might return to my
country: that two of the ſeamen would go back to
ſhip, inform the captain of what they had ſeen, and
ive his orders; in the mean time, unleſs I would give

my

my ſolemn oath not to fly, they would ſecure me by force. I thought it beſt to comply with their propoſal. They were very curious to know my ſtory, but I gave them very little ſatisfaction; and they all conjectured, that my misfortunes had impaired my reaſon. In two hours the boat, which went loaden with veſſels of water, returned with the captain's command to fetch me on board. I fell on my knees to preſerve my liberty, but all was in vain; and the men having tied me with cords, heaved me into the boat, from whence I was taken into the ſhip, and from thence into the captain's cabin.

His name was Pedro de Mendez; he was a very courteous and generous perſon; he intreated me to give ſome account of myſelf, and deſired to know what I would eat or drink; ſaid I ſhould be uſed as well as himſelf, and ſpoke ſo many obliging things, that I wondered to find ſuch civilities from a *yahoo*. However, I remained ſilent and ſullen; I was ready to faint at the very ſmell of him and his men. At laſt I deſired ſomething to eat out of my own canoe; but he ordered me a chicken, and ſome excellent wine, and then directed that I ſhould be put to bed in a very clean cabbin. I would not undreſs myſelf, but lay on the bed-cloaths, and in half an hour ſtole out, when I thought the crew was at dinner, and getting to the ſide of the ſhip, was going to leap into the ſea, and ſwim for my life, rather than continue among *yahoos*; but one of the ſeamen prevented me, and having informed the captain, I was chained to my cabbin.

After dinner, Don Pedro came to me, and deſired to know my reaſon for ſo deſperate an attempt; aſſured me, he only meant to do me all the ſervice he was able, and ſpoke ſo very movingly, that at laſt I deſcended to treat him like an animal which had ſome little portion of reaſon. I gave him a very ſhort relation of my voyage; of the conſpiracy againſt me by my own men; of the country where they ſet me on ſhore, and of my five years reſidence there: All which he looked upon, as if it were a dream or a viſion, whereat I took great offence; for I had quite forgot the faculty of lying, ſo peculiar to *yahoos* in all countries where they preſide, and conſequently the diſpoſition of ſuſpecting truth in others of their own ſpecies. I aſked him, whether it were the cuſtom in his country

ortance, and I hope I ſhall ſeldom miſtake the day
vill happen; therefore, I think good to inform the
, that I all along make uſe of the *old ſtyle*, obſer-
England, which I deſire he will compare with that
news-papers, at the time they relate the actions I
on.

uſt add one word more: I know it hath been the
n of ſeveral learned perſons, who think well enough
true art of aſtrology, that the ſtars do only *in-*
and not *force* the actions or wills of men: and
ore, however I may proceed by right rules, yet I
t in prudence ſo confidently aſſure the events will
v exactly as I predict them.

ope I have naturally conſidered this objection, which
ne caſes is of no little weight. For example: a
may, by the influence of an over-ruling planet, be
ed or inclined to luſt, rage or avarice, and yet by
orce of reaſon overcome that evil influence; and
vas the caſe of Socrates *: but the great events of
vorld uſually depending upon numbers of men, it
t be expected they ſhould all unite to croſs their
ations, for purſuing a general deſign, wherein they
mouſly agree. Beſides, the influence of the ſtars
es to many actions and events, which are not any
in the power of reaſon; as ſickneſs, death, and
we commonly call accidents, with many more need-
o repeat.

it now it is time to proceed to my predictions, which
e begun to calculate from the time that the *ſun* en-
nto Aries. And this I take to be properly the be-
ng of the natural year. I purſue them to the time
he enters Libra, or ſomewhat more, which is the
period of the year. The remainder I have not yet

* A phyſiognomiſt being brought by Socrates's ſcholars, to exa-
the features of their maſter, pronounced him, according
e rules of art, paſſionate, intemperate, and libidinous; and
i he was reproached and derided by them for a judgment ſo
te from the truth, Socrates reſcued him from their inſult,
ſclaring, that his natural diſpoſition was ſuch as had been
ibed, before it was corrected by the ſtudy of philoſophy.
Ref.

adjuſted,

would not only draw numbers of people to ſee me, but probably put me in danger of being impriſoned or burnt by the *inquiſition*. The captain perſuaded me to accept a ſuit of cloaths newly made; but I would not ſuffer the taylor to take my meaſure. However, Don Pedro being almoſt of my ſize, they fitted me well enough. He accoutred me with other neceſſaries, all new, which I aired for twenty-four hours, before I would uſe them.

The captain had no wife, nor above three ſervants, none of which were ſuffered to attend at meals; and his whole deportment was ſo obliging, added to very good *human* underſtanding, that I really began to tolerate his company. He gained ſo far upon me, that I ventured to look out of the back window. By degrees I was brought into another room, from whence I peeped into the ſtreet, but drew my head back in a fright. In a week's time he ſeduced me down to the door. I found my terror gradually leſſened, but my hatred and contempt ſeemed to increaſe. I was at laſt bold enough to walk the ſtreet in his company, but kept my noſe well ſtopped with rue, or ſometimes with tobacco.

In ten days, Don Pedro, to whom I had given ſome account of my domeſtic affairs, put it upon me as a matter of honour and conſcience, that I ought to return to my native country, and live at home with my wife and children. He told me, there was an Engliſh ſhip in the port juſt ready to ſail, and he would furniſh me with all things neceſſary. It would be tedious to repeat his arguments, and my contradictions. He ſaid it was altogether impoſſible to find ſuch a ſolitary iſland as I had deſired to live in; but I might command in my own houſe; and paſs my time in a manner as recluſe as I pleaſed.

I complied at laſt, finding I could not do better. I left Liſbon, the 24th day of Nov. in an Engliſh merchantman, but who was the maſter I never enquired. Don Pedro accompanied me to the ſhip, and lent me twenty pounds. He took kind leave of me, and embraced me at parting, which I bore as well as I could. During this laſt voyage, I had no commerce with the maſter, or any of his men; but pretending I was ſick, kept cloſe in my cabbin. On the 5th of December 1715, we caſt anchor in the Downs about nine in the morning, and at

from his horſe. I have not been able to diſco-
her he will then die or not.
e 11th, will begin a moſt important ſiege, which
of all Europe will be upon: I cannot be more
r: for in relating affairs that ſo nearly concern
derates, and conſequently this kingdom, I am
confine myſelf, for ſeveral reaſons very obvious
ader.
e 15th, news will arrive of a very *ſurprizing* e-
in which nothing could be more unexpected.
e 19th, three noble ladies of this kingdom will,
ill expectation, prove with child, to the great
eir huſbands.
e 23d, a famous buffoon of the play-houſe will
culous death, ſuitable to his vocation.

This month will be diſtinguiſhed at home, by
diſperſing of thoſe ridiculous deluded enthuſiaſts,
y called the Prophets; occaſioned chiefly by ſee-
ime come, when many of their prophecies ſhould
:d, and then finding themſelves deceived by con-
nts. It is indeed to be admired, how any de-
in be ſo weak to fortel things near at hand,
very few months muſt of neceſſity diſcover the
: to all the world; in this point leſs prudent than
almanack-makers, who are ſo wiſe to wander in
and talk dubiouſly, and leave to the reader the
if interpreting.
e 1ſt of this month, a French general will be kill-
random ſhot of a cannon-ball.
e 6th, a fire will break out in the ſuburbs of Paris,
ill deſtroy above a thouſand houſes; and ſeems
: foreboding of what will happen, to the ſurprize
irope, about the end of the following month.
e 10th, a great battle will be fought, which will
four of the clock in the afternoon, and laſt till
ight with great obſtinacy, but no very deciſive
I ſhall not name the place, for the reaſons afore-
t the commanders on each left-wing will be kill-
I ſee bonfires, and hear the noiſe of guns for a

e 14th, there will be a falſe report of the French
ath.

CHAP. XII*.

The author's veracity. His deſign in publiſh work. His cenſure of thoſe travellers wh from the truth. The author clears himſelf j ſiniſter ends in writing. An objection a The method of planting colonies. His nativ commended. The right of the crown to thoſe deſcribed by the author, is juſtified. The di conquering them. The author takes his la the reader; propoſeth his manner of living j ture; gives good advice, and concludeth.

THUS, gentle reader, I have given thee hiſtory of my travels for ſixteen years ſeven months; wherein I have not been ſo ſtud nament as of truth. I could perhaps, like otl aſtoniſhed thee with ſtrange improbable tales; ther choſe to relate plain matter of fact in tl manner and ſtyle; becauſe my principal deſig inform, and not to amuſe thee.

It is eaſy for us who travel into remote which are ſeldom viſited by Engliſhmen, or ot peans, to form deſcriptions of wonderful anim ſea and land. Whereas a traveller's chief aim to make men wiſer and better, and to improve t by the bad, as well as good examples, of what tl concerning foreign places.

* I muſt confeſs, in the ſpirit of candour and ſince heartily wiſh this 12th chapter, which is, without exc dulleſt piece (at leaſt that I can remember) in his who were either burnt or annihilated. This, indeed, like his critics, I could eaſily have paſſed over uncenſured; p never obſerved it: and yet all that I mean by this gen (for I deſpiſe the reputation of a little cenſuring critic), the world, that I would ſcorn to approve, through thick the works of the moſt approved, conſummate genius, i rhat little knowledge which I have endeavoured to acqui tection to my own taſte and judgment. *Swift.*

ſtus reſigns his pretenſions, which he had again taken
r ſome time: Staniſlaus is peaceably poſſeſſed of the
e; and the king of Sweden declares for the Em-
.

annot omit one particular accident here at home;
near the end of this month, much miſchief will be
at Bartholomew fair, by the fall of a booth.

ptember. This month begins with a very ſurprizing
froſty weather, which will laſt near twelve days.

ıe Pope having long languiſhed laſt month, the ſwel-
in his legs breaking, and the fleſh mortifying, will
n the 11th inſtant: and in three weeks time, after a
ty conteſt, be ſucceeded by a cardinal of the *imperial*
ın, but a native of Tuſcany, who is now about ſixty
ears old.

he French army acts now wholly on the defenſive,
gly fortified in their trenches; and the young French
ſends overtures for a treaty of peace by the duke of
tua; which, becauſe it is a matter of ſtate that con-
ı us here at home, I ſhall ſpeak no farther of.

hall add but one prediction more, and that in myſti-
erms, which ſhall be included in a verſe out of Virgil.

Alter erit jam Tethys, et altera quæ vehat Argo
Delectos heroas.

pon the 25th day of this month, the fulfilling of this
ction will be manifeſt to every body.

his is the fartheſt I have proceeded in my calculations
he preſent year. I do not pretend that theſe are all
great events which will happen in this period, but
thoſe I have ſet down will infallibly come to paſs.
ill perhaps ſtill be objected, why I have not ſpoke
e particularly of affairs at home, or of the ſucceſs of
armies abroad, which I might, and could very largely
done; but thoſe in power have wiſely diſcouraged
from meddling in public concerns, and I was reſolved
o means to give the leaſt offence. This I will ven-
to ſay, that it will be a glorious campaign for the
es, wherein the Engliſh forces, both by ſea and land,
have their full ſhare of honour: that her majeſty
en ANNE will continue in health and proſperity;
that no ill accident will arrive to any in the chief
iſtry.

ders himſelf as the reaſoning, governing animal of his country? I ſhall ſay nothing of thoſe remote nations, where *yahoos* preſide; amongſt which the leaſt corrupted are the Brobdingnagians, whoſe wiſe maxims in morality and government it would be our happineſs to obſerve. But I forbear deſcanting farther, and rather leave the judicious reader to his own remarks and applications.

I am not a little pleaſed, that this work of mine can poſſibly meet with no cenſurers: for what objection can be made againſt a writer, who relates only plain facts, that happened in ſuch diſtant countries, where we have not the leaſt intereſt with reſpect either to trade or negotiations? I have carefully avoided every fault, with which common writers of travels are often too juſtly charged. Beſides, I meddle not the leaſt with any *party*, but write without paſſion, prejudice, or ill-will againſt any man, or number of men whatſoever. I write for the nobleſt end, to inform and inſtruct mankind, over whom I may, without breach of modeſty, pretend to ſome ſuperiority, from the advantages I received by converſing ſo long among the moſt accompliſhed Houyhnhnms. I write without any view towards profit or praiſe. I never ſuffer a word to paſs, that may look like reflection, or poſſibly give the leaſt offence, even to thoſe who are moſt ready to take it. So that, I hope, I may with juſtice pronounce myſelf an author perfectly blameleſs; againſt whom the tribes of anſwerers, conſiderers, obſervers, reflecters, detecters, remarkers, will never be able to find matter for exerciſing their talents.

I confeſs, it was whiſpered to me, that I was bound in duty, as a ſubject of England, to have given in a memorial to a ſecretary of ſtate at my firſt coming over; becauſe, whatever lands are diſcovered by a ſubject, belong to the crown. But I doubt whether our conqueſts, in the countries I treat of, would be as eaſy as thoſe of Ferdinando Cortez over the naked Americans. The Lilliputians, I think, are hardly worth the charge of a fleet and army to reduce them; and I queſtion whether it might be prudent or ſafe to attempt the Brobdingnagians: Or whether an Engliſh army would be much at their eaſe with the flying iſland over their heads. The Houyhnhnms, indeed, appear not to be ſo well prepared

for

or war, a ſcience to which they are perfect ſtrangers, and eſpecially againſt miſſive weapons. However, ſuppoſing myſelf to be a miniſter of ſtate, I could never give my advice for invading them. Their prudence, unanimity, unacquaintedneſs with fear, and their love of their country, would amply ſupply all defects in the military part. Imagine twenty thouſand of them breaking into the midſt of an European army, confounding the ranks, overturning the carriages, battering the warriors faces into mummy by terrible yerks from their hinder-hoofs; for they would well deſerve the character given to Auguſtus: *recalcitrat undique tutus*. But inſtead of propoſals for conquering that magnanimous nation, I rather wiſh they were in a capacity, or diſpoſition, to ſend a ſufficient number of their inhabitants for civilizing Europe, by teaching us the firſt principles of honour, juſtice, truth, temperance, public ſpirit, fortitude, chaſtity, friendſhip, benevolence, and fidelity: The *names* of all which virtues are ſtill retained among us in moſt languages, and are to be met with in modern, as well as ancient authors; which I am able to aſſert from my own ſmall reading.

But I had another reaſon, which made me leſs forward to enlarge his majeſty's dominions by my diſcoveries: To ſay the truth, I had conceived a few ſcruples with relation to the diſtributive juſtice of princes upon thoſe occaſions. For inſtance, a crew of pyrates are driven by a ſtorm, they know not whither; at length a boy diſcovers land from the top-maſt; they go on ſhore to rob and plunder; they ſee an harmleſs people, are entertained with kindneſs; they give the country a new name; they take formal poſſeſſion of it for their king; they ſet up a rotten plank or a ſtone for a memorial; they murder two or three dozen of the natives, bring away a couple more by force for a ſample, return home, and get their pardon. Here commences a new dominion, acquired with a title by *divine right*. Ships are ſent with the firſt opportunity; the natives driven out or deſtroyed; their princes tortured to diſcover their gold; a free licence given to all acts of humanity and luſt; the earth reeking with the blood of its inhabitants: and this execrable crew of butchers employed in ſo pious an expedition, is a *modern colony*,

[illegible] to convert and civilize an idolatrous and barbarous people.

But this deſcription, I confeſs, doth by no means affect the Britiſh nation, who may be an example to the whole world, for the wiſdom, care, and juſtice in planting colonies; their liberal endowments for the advancement of religion and learning; their choice of devout and able paſtors to propagate *chriſtianity*; their caution in ſtocking their provinces with people of ſober lives and converſations, from this the mother kingdom; their ſtrict regard to the diſtribution of juſtice, in ſupplying the civil adminiſtration through all their colonies with officers of the greateſt abilities, utter ſtrangers to corruption; and to crown all, by ſending the moſt vigilant and virtuous governors, who have no other views than the happineſs of the people over whom they preſide, and the honour of the King their maſter.

But as thoſe countries, which I have deſcribed, do not appear to have any deſire of being conquered, and enſlaved, murdered or driven out by colonies; nor abound either in gold, ſilver, ſugar, or tobacco; I did humbly conceive, they were by no means proper objects of our zeal, our valour, or our intereſt. However, if thoſe, whom it more concerns, think it fit to be of another opinion, I am ready to depoſe, when I ſhall be lawfully called, that no European did ever viſit theſe countries before me: I mean, if the inhabitants ought to be believed; unleſs a diſpute may ariſe, concerning the two *yahoos* ſaid to have been ſeen many ages ago upon a mountain in Houyhnhnm-land.

But, as to the formality of taking poſſeſſion in my ſovereign's name, it never came once into my thoughts; and if it had, yet, as my affairs then ſtood, I ſhould perhaps in point of prudence and ſelf-preſervation have put it off to a better opportunity.

Having thus anſwered the only objection that can ever be raiſed againſt me as a traveller; I here take a final leave of all my courteous readers, and return to enjoy my own ſpeculations in my little garden at Redriff; to apply thoſe excellent leſſons of virtue which I learned among the Houyhnhnms; to inſtruct the *yahoos* of my own family, as far as I ſhall find them docible animals;

to

f it were otherwiſe, I ſhould have the leſs to an-
r. We have a common form for all thoſe things;
foretelling the weather, we never meddle with
ut leave it to the printer, who takes it out of any
anack as he thinks fit; the reſt was my own in-
to make my almanack ſell, having a wife to main-
nd no other way to get my bread; for mending
es is a poor livelihood; and (added he, ſigh-
wiſh I may not have done more miſchief by my
than my aſtrology; though I had ſome good re-
rom my grandmother, and my own compoſitions
ich, as I thought could at leaſt do no hurt."
d ſome other diſcourſe with him, which now I
call to mind; and I fear I have already tired
ordſhip. I ſhall only add one circumſtance, that
death-bed he declared himſelf a non-conformiſt,
d a fanatic preacher to be his ſpiritual guide. Af-
f an hour's converſation I took my leave, being
ſtifled by the cloſeneſs of the room. I imagined
ld not hold out long, and therefore withdrew to
e coffee-houſe hard by, leaving a ſervant at the
vith orders to come immediately and tell me,
as he could, the minute when Partridge ſhould
which was not above two hours after; when,
g upon my watch, I found it to be above five mi-
ıfter ſeven; by which it is clear that Mr. Bicker-
ras miſtaken almoſt four hours in his calculation.
other circumſtances he was exact enough. But
:r he hath not been the cauſe of this poor man's
as well as the prediction, may be very reaſon-
liſputed. However, it muſt be confeſſed, the
is odd enough, whether we ſhould endeavour to
ıt for it by chance, or the effect of imagination:
y own part, though I believe no man hath leſs
n theſe matters, yet I ſhall wait with ſome im-
ce, and not without ſome expectation, the fulfilling
Bickerſtaff's ſecond prediction, that the Cardinal
ailles is to die upon the fourth of April, and if
ıould be verified as exactly as this of poor Partridge,
own I ſhould be wholly ſurprized, and at a loſs,
ıould infallibly expect the accompliſhment of all
ſt.

reaſon, are no more proud of the good qualities th
ſeſs, than I ſhould be for not wanting a leg or ar
which no man in his wits would boaſt of, althou
muſt be miſerable without them. I dwell the lon
on this ſubject, from the deſire I have to make the
of an Engliſh *yahoo* by any means not inſupportabl
therefore I here intreat thoſe, who have any tinc
this abſurd vice, that they will not preſume to c
my ſight.

*** To mortify pride, which indeed was not made for n
produces not only the moſt ridiculous follies, but the moſt c
calamity, appears to have been one general view of the auth
very part of theſe travels. Perſonal ſtrength and beauty, the
and the virtue of mankind, become objects, not of pride, bu
mility, in the diminutive ſtature and contemptible weakneſs
Lilliputians; in the horrid deformity of the Brobdingnagians
learned folly of the Laputians; and in the parallel drawn
our manners and thoſe of the Houyhnhnms. *Hawkeſ.*

Swift's Gulliver is a direct, plain, and bitter ſatire, againſt
numerable follies and corruptions in law, politics, learning,
and religion. And without diſpute theſe manifold corruptio
in a courſe of ages, by the refinements and gloſſes of iniquito
arrived at laſt to ſuch ſtrength and effrontery, as to render it
ſible for all the wit and genius that ever warmed the imagin
a ſatiriſt, to laſh them with any degree of ſeverity proporti
that exceſs of perturbation and miſchief which they ſeverally
in the great circle of ſociety. All therefore, which can be
a wiſe man (ſeeing that by nature he is appointed to act, for t
of thirty, fifty, or ſeventy years, ſome ridiculous ſilly part
fantaſtic theatre of miſery, vice, and corruption), is either to
with Heraclitus, the iniquities of the world; or, which is th
chearful, and therefore I do preſume the more eligible co
laugh with Democritus, at all the knaves and fools upon
And accordingly we find, that Dr. Swift has, in theſe travels,
a ſort of ridicule and ſatire, pointed ſo directly againſt the dep
of human kind, and ſupported with ſuch an abundance of w
pleaſantry, as indeed more than perſuade us to believe, t
intention was either to laugh vice and immorality, if it were p
quite out of the world; or at leaſt to avenge the cauſe of virt
all the patrons or abettors of iniquity. Swift.

TRITICAL ESSAY upon the FACULTIES of the MIND *.

To———

SIR,

BEING so great a lover of antiquities, it was reasonable to suppose you would be very much obliged with any thing that was new. I have been of late offended with many writers of essays and moral discourses, for running into stale topics and thread-bare quotations, and not handling their subject fully and closely: all which errors have carefully avoided in the following essay, which I have proposed for a pattern for young writers to imitate. The thoughts and observations being entirely new, the quotations untouched by others, the subject of mighty importance, and treated with much order and perspicuity, it hath cost me a great deal of time; and I desire you will accept and consider it as the utmost effort of my genius.

PHilosophers say, that man is a microcosm, or little world, resembling in miniature every part of the

* This essay will make you smile. *Orrery.*

In this piece the spirit of ridicule is very highly displayed. The thor gravely pretends, that this subject is of mighty importance; at his sentiments are entirely new; that his quotations are enouched by others; and, above all, that he has treated his subject th much order, fulness, and perspicuity: on which account he ith proposed it as a pattern for young writers to imitate, and desires may be considered as the utmost effort of his genius. Whereas, fact, the subject is of little importance, the sentiments are old d stale, the quotations are thread-bare; and, to complete his ridile, he has treated his subject in a light, careless, rambling, superial manner, without order, fulness, meaning, or perspicuity: and erefore it is only to be considered, like the *Meditation on a broomk*, [vol. 5. p. 372.] in a farcical, satiric light, designed purely to pose the folly and temerity of those brainless, illiterate scribblers, o are eternally plaguing their cotemporaries with a parcel of wild coherent, nonsensical trash. *Swift.*

great

great; and, in my opinion, the body natural may be compared to the body politic: and if this be ſo, how can the Epicurean's opinion be true, that the univerſe was formed by a fortuitous concourſe of atoms; which I will no more believe, than that the accidental jumbling of the letters of the alphabet could fall by chance into a moſt ingenious and learned treatiſe of philoſophy. *Riſum teneatis amici?* [Hor.] This falſe opinion muſt needs create many more; it is like an error in the firſt concoction, which cannot be corrected in the ſecond; the foundation is weak, and whatever ſuperſtructure you raiſe upon it, muſt of neceſſity fall to the ground. Thus men are led from one error to another, until with Ixion they embrace a cloud inſtead of Juno; or, like the dog in the fable, loſe the ſubſtance in gaping at the ſhadow: For ſuch opinions cannot cohere; but like the iron and clay in the toes of Nebuchadnezzar's image, muſt ſeparate and break in pieces. I have read in a certain author, that Alexander wept, becauſe he had no more worlds to conquer; which he needed not have done, if the fortuituous concourſe of atoms could create one; but this is an opinion fitter for that many-headed beaſt the vulgar to entertain, than for ſo wiſe a man as Epicurus; the corrupt part of his ſect only borrowed his name, as the monkey did the cat's claw to draw the cheſnut out of the fire.

However, the firſt ſtep to the cure is to know the diſeaſe; and though truth may be difficult to find, becauſe, as the philoſopher obſerves, ſhe lives in the bottom of a well, yet we need not, like blind men, grope in open day-light. I hope I may be allowed among ſo many far more learned men to offer my mite, ſince a ſtander-by may ſometimes perhaps ſee more of the game, than he that plays it. But I do not think a philoſopher obliged to account for every phænomenon in nature, or drown himſelf with Ariſtole, for not being able to ſolve the ebbing and flowing of the tide, in that fatal ſentence he paſt upon himſelf, *Quia te non capio, tu capies me.* Wherein he was at once the judge and the criminal, the accuſer and executioner. Socrates, on the other hand, who ſaid he knew nothing, was pronounced by the oracle to be the wiſeſt man in the world.

But to return from this digreſſion, I think it as clear

as

ſays I, pray be adviſed by a friend, and make the
of your ſpeed out of my doors; for I hear my wife's
e (which, by the bye, is pretty diſtinguiſhable), and in
t corner of the room ſtands a good cudgel, which
ebody has felt before now; if that light in her hands,
ſhe know the buſineſs you come about, without con-
ing the ſtars, I can aſſure you it will be employed ve-
nuch to the detriment of your perſon. Sir, cries he,
ring with great civility, I perceive extreme grief for
loſs of the doctor diſorders you a little at preſent, but
y in the morning I will wait on you with all neceſſary
erials. Now I mention no Mr. Bickerſtaff; nor do
y, that a certain ſtar-gazing 'ſquire has been playing
executor before his time; but I leave the world to
ge; and he that puts things and things fairly together,
not be much wide of the mark.

Well, once more I got my doors cloſed, and prepared
bed, in hopes of a little repoſe after ſo many ruffling
entures; juſt as I was putting out my light in order to
another bounces as hard as he can knock; I open the
dow, and aſk who is there, and what he wants; I am
the Sexton, replies he, and come to know whether
doctor left any orders for a funeral ſermon, and where
is to be laid, and whether his grave is to be plain or
cked? Why, ſirrah, ſays I, you know me well e-
igh; and you know I am not dead, and how dare
affront me after this manner? Alack-a-day, Sir, re-
s the fellow, why it is in print, and the whole town
ows you are dead; why, there is Mr. White the join-
s but fitting ſcrews to your coffin; he will be here with
n an inſtant: he was afraid you would have wanted it
ore this time. Sirrah, ſirrah, ſays I, you ſhall know
morrow, to your coſt, that I am alive, and alive like to

Why, it is ſtrange, Sir, ſays he, you ſhould make ſuch
ecret of your death to us that are your neighbours;
ooks as if you had a deſign to defraud the church
its dues; and let me tell you, for one that has
ed ſo long by the heavens, that is unhandſomely done.
ſt, hiſt, ſays another rogue that ſtood by him; away;
ctor, into your flannel gear as faſt as you can, for here
a whole pack of diſmals coming to you with their black
ipage, and how indecent will it look for you to ſtand

frightening

aps be cenſured for my free opinions by thoſe carp-
Momus's, whom authors worſhip as the Indians do the
l, for fear. They will endeavour to give my repu-
on as many wounds as the man in the almanack; but
alue it not; and perhaps, like flies, they may buz ſo
en about the candle, till they burn their wings. They
iſt pardon me, if I venture to give them this advice, not
rail at what they cannot underſtand: it does but diſ-
ver that ſelf-tormenting paſſion of envy, than which the
reateſt tyrant never invented a more cruel torment.

Invidiâ Siculi non invenere tyranni
Tormentum majus —— JUV.

I muſt be ſo bold to tell my critics and witlings, that
they can no more judge of this, than a man that is born
blind can have any true idea of colours. I have always
obſerved that your empty veſſels ſound loudeſt: I value
their laſhes as little as the ſea did thoſe of Xerxes, when
he whipped it †. The utmoſt favour a man can expect
from them is, that which Polyphemus promiſed Ulyſſes,
that he would devour him the laſt: they think to ſubdue
a writer as Cæſar did his enemy, with a *veni, vidi, vi-
ci*. I confeſs I value the opinion of the judicious few, a
Rymer, a Dennis, or a W——k; but for the reſt, to
give my judgment at once, I think the long diſpute a-
mong the philoſophers about a *vacuum* may be deter-
mined in the affirmative, that it is to be found in a cri
tic's head. They are at beſt but the drones of th
learned world, who devour the honey, and will n
work themſelves; and a writer need no more rega
them, than the moon does the barking of a little ſen
leſs cur. For, in ſpight of their terrible roaring, you n
with half an eye diſcover the *aſs* under the *lion*'s ſkin

But to return to our diſcourſe: Demoſthenes b
aſked what was the firſt part of an orator, replied, *act*

over every man's ſhoulder two ſatchels, of which one hun
fore, and contained the faults of his neighbour; and the
behind, which contained his own.

† It is told of Xerxes, that when the ſea broke dow
bridge of boats, which he had laid over the Helleſpont,
dered it to be laſhed, and fetters to be thrown into it.

nat was the ſecond, *action:* what was the third, *tion:* and ſo on *ad infinitum.* This may be true in o-tory; but contemplation in other things exceeds acti-. And therefore a wiſe man is never leſs alone, than nen he is alone:

Nunquam minus ſolus, quam cum ſolus.

And Archimedes, the famous mathematician, was ſo ent upon his problems, that he never minded the ſol-r who came to kill him. Therefore, not to detract om the juſt praiſe that belongs to orators, they ought to nſider that nature, which give us two eyes to ſee, and o ears to hear, has given us but one tongue to ſpeak, herein however ſome do ſo abound, that the virtuoſi, no have been ſo long in ſearch for the perpetual moti-, may infallibly find it there.

Some men admire republics, becauſe orators flouriſh ere moſt, and are the great enemies of tyrany: but y opinion is, that one tyrant is better than a hundred. ſides, theſe orators inflame the people, whoſe anger is ally but a ſhort fit of madneſs.

Ira furor brevis eſt. —— HOR.

After which, laws are like cobwebs, which may catch nall flies, but let waſps and hornets break through. ut in oratory the greateſt art is to hide art.

Artis eſt celare artem.

But this muſt be the work of time; we muſt lay hold n all opportunities, and let ſlip no occaſion, elſe we ſhall e forced to weave Penelope's web, unravel in the night hat we ſpun in the day. And therefore I have obſerv-l, that time is painted with a lock before, and bald be-nd, ſignifying thereby, that we muſt take time (as we y) by the forelock, for when it is once paſt, there is o recalling it.

The mind of man is at firſt (if you will pardon the xpreſſion) like a *tabula raſa,* or like wax, which, while is ſoft, is capable of any impreſſion, till time has har-ened it. And at length death, that grim tyrant, ſtops s in the midſt of our career. The greateſt conquerors ave at laſt been conquered by death, which ſpares none, rom the ſceptre to the ſpade.

Mors omnibus communis.

All rivers go to the ſea, but none return from it.

Xerxes wept when he beheld his army, to conſider t
in leſs than an hundred years they would be all de
Anacreon was choaked with a grape-ſtone; and viol
joy kills as well as violent grief. There is nothing
this world conſtant, but inconſtancy; yet Plato thou
that if virtue would appear to the world in her own
tive dreſs, all men would be enamoured with her.
now, ſince intereſt governs the world, and men neg
the golden mean, Jupiter himſelf, if he came on
earth, would be deſpiſed, unleſs it were, as he did
Danae, in a golden flower: for we now-a-days wor
the riſing ſun, and not the ſetting.

Donec eris felix multos numerabis amicos.

Thus have I, in obedience to your commands, ven
ed to expoſe myſelf to cenſure in this critical age. W
ther I have done right to my ſubject, muſt be lef
the judgment of the learned reader: however, I c
not but hope, that my attempting of it may be an
couragement for ſome able pen to perform it with m
ſucceſs.

PREDICTIO

A Vindication of Isaac Bickerstaff, Eſq; againſt what is objected to him by Mr. Partridge, in his almanack for the preſent year 1709.

By the ſaid Isaac Bickerstaff, Eſq;

Written in the year 1709.

Mr. Partridge hath been lately pleaſed to treat me after a very rough manner, *in that which is called*, his almanack for the preſent year: ſuch uſage is very undecent from *one gentleman to another*, and doth not at all contribute to the diſcovery of truth, which ought to be the great end in all diſputes of the *learned*. To call a man *fool* and *villain*, and *impudent fellow*, only for differing from him in a point merely ſpeculative, is, in my humble opinion, a very improper ſtyle for a perſon of *his education*. I appeal to the *learned world*, whether in my laſt year's predictions I gave him the leaſt provocation for ſuch unworthy treatment. Philoſophers have differed in all ages; but the diſcreteſt among them have always differed as became philoſophers. Scurrility and paſſion, in a controverſy among *ſcholars*, is juſt ſo much of nothing to the purpoſe, and, at beſt, a tacit confeſſion of a weak cauſe: my concern is not ſo much for my own reputation, as that of the *republic of letters*, which Mr. Partridge hath endeavoured to wound through my ſides. If men of public ſpirit muſt be ſupercilioufly treated for their ingenious attempts, how will true uſeful knowledge be ever advanced? I wiſh Mr. Partridge knew the thoughts which *foreign univerſities* have conceived of his ungenerous proceedings with me; but I am too tender of his reputation to publiſh them to the world. That ſpirit of envy and pride, which blaſts ſo many riſing genius's in our nation, is yet unknown among *profeſſors* abroad: the neceſſity of juſtifying myſelf will excuſe my vanity, when I tell the reader, that I have near a hundred *honorary*

letters

letters from ſeveral parts of Europe (ſome as far as Muſcovy), in praiſe of my performance; beſides ſeveral others, which, as I have been credibly informed, were opened in the poſt-office, and never ſent me. It is true, the *inquiſition* in Portugal was * pleaſed to burn my predictions, and condemn the author and readers of them; but I hope at the ſame time, it will be conſidered, in how deplorable a ſtate *learning* lies at preſent in that kingdom: and, with the profoundeſt veneration for *crowned heads*, I will preſume to add, that it a little concerned his majeſty of Portugal to interpoſe his authority in behalf of a *ſcholar* and a *gentleman*, the ſubject of a nation with which he is now in ſo ſtrict an alliance. But the other kingdoms and ſtates of Europe have treated me with more candour and generoſity. If I had leave to print the Latin letters tranſmitted to me from foreign parts, they would fill a volume, and be a full defence againſt all that Mr. Partridge, or his accomplices of the Portugal *inquiſition*, will be ever able to object; who, by the way, are the only enemies my predictions have ever met with at home or abroad. But I hope, I know better what is due to the honour of a *learned correſpondence* in ſo tender a point. Yet ſome of thoſe illuſtrious perſons will perhaps excuſe me for tranſcribing a paſſage or two in my vindication †. The moſt learned monſieur Leibnitz thus addreſſes to me his third letter: *illuſtriſſimo Bickerſtaffio aſtrologiæ inſtauratori*, &c. Monſieur *le Clerc*, quoting my predictions in a treatiſe he publiſhed laſt year, is pleaſed to ſay, *ita nuperrime Bickerſtaffius, magnum illud Angliæ ſidus.* Another great profeſſor writing of me, has theſe words: *Bickerſtaffius, nobilis Anglus, aſtrologorum hujuſce ſeculi facile princeps.* Signior *Magliabecchi*, the *Great Duke's* famous library-keeper, ſpends almoſt his whole letter in compliments and praiſes. It is true, the renowned *profeſſor* of aſtronomy at Utrecht, ſeems to differ from

* This is fact, as the author was aſſured by Sir Paul Methuen, then ambaſſador to that crown.

† The quotations here inſerted, are in imitation of Dr. Bentley, in ſome part of the famous controverſy between him and Mr. Boyle, afterwards Earl of Orrery.

me

almanacks to convince any reaſonable man, that not ſo much as underſtand common grammar and that they are not able to ſpell any word out of road, nor even in their prefaces to write com- e or intelligible Engliſh. Then for their obſer- ınd predictions, they are ſuch as will equally ſuit or country in the world. *This month a certain rſon will be threatened with death or ſickneſs.* news-papers will tell them; for there we find ıd of the year, that no month paſſes without the ſome perſon of note; and it would be hard, if be otherwiſe, when there are at leaſt two thou- ſons of note in this kingdom, many of them old, almanack-maker has the liberty of chuſing the ſeaſon of the year, where he may fix his predic- \gain, *this month an eminent clergyman will be ſ;* of which there may be ſome hundreds, half with one foot in the grave. Then, *ſuch a pla- ıch a houſe, ſhews great machinations, plots and ries, that may in time be brought to light:* after if we hear of any diſcovery, the aſtrologer gets ›ur; if not, his prediction ſtill ſtands good. And *God preſerve King William from all his open and nemies, Amen.* When, if the King ſhould hap- ıave died, the aſtrologer plainly foretold it; o- it paſſeth but for the pious ejaculation of a loyal though it unluckily happened in ſome of their ks, that poor King William was prayed for ma- hs after he was dead, becauſe it fell out, that he ›ut the beginning of the year.

ıention no more of their impertinent predictions, .ve we to do with their advertiſements about *pills ık for the venereal diſeaſe?* or their mutual in verſe and proſe of Whig and Tory, where- e ſtars have little to do?

ng long obſerved and lamented theſe, and a hun- ıer abuſes of this art, too tedious to repeat, I re- o proceed in a new way, which I doubt not will ıe general ſatisfaction of the kingdom: I can this ›duce but a ſpecimen of what I deſign for the fu- aving employed moſt part of my time in adjuſting recting the calculations I made ſome years paſt,

diſpute, I am ſenſible the eyes not only of England, but of all Europe, will be upon us; and the *learned* in every country will, I doubt not, take part on that ſide, where they find moſt appearance of reaſon and truth.

Without entering into criticiſms of *chronology* about the hour of his death, I ſhall only prove that Mr. Partridge is not alive. And my firſt argument is thus: above a thouſand gentlemen having bought his almanacks for this year, merely to find what he ſaid againſt me; at every line they read, they would lift up their eyes, and cry out, betwixt rage and laughter, *they were ſure no man alive ever writ ſuch damned ſtuff as this.* Neither did I ever hear that opinion diſputed: ſo that Mr. Partridge lies under a *dilemma*, either of diſowning his almanack, or allowing himſelf to be *no man alive*. But now if an *uninformed* carcaſe walks ſtill about, and is pleaſed to call itſelf Partridge, Mr. Bickerſtaff does not think himſelf any way anſwerable for that. Neither had the ſaid carcaſe any right to beat the poor boy, who happened to paſs by it in the ſtreet, crying, *a full and true account of* Dr. Partridge's *death*, etc.

Secondly, Mr. Partridge pretends to tell fortunes, and recover ſtollen goods; which all the pariſh ſays, he muſt do by converſing with the devil and other evil ſpirits: and no wiſe man will ever allow, he could converſe perſonally with either till after he was dead.

Thirdly, I will plainly prove him to be dead out of his own almanack for this year, and from the very paſſage, which he produceth to make us think him alive. He there ſays, *he is not only now alive, but was alſo alive upon that very* 29th *of* March, *which I foretold he ſhould die on:* by this, he declares his opinion, that a man may be alive now, who was not alive a twelvemonth ago. And indeed, there lies the ſophiſtry of his argument. He dares not aſſert, he was alive ever ſince that 29th of *March*, but that he *is now alive, and was ſo on that day:* I grant the latter; for he did not die till night, as appears by the printed account of his death, in a *letter to a lord;* and whether he be ſince revived, I leave the world to judge. This indeed is perfect cavilling, and I am aſhamed to dwell any longer upon it.

Fourthly, I will appeal to Mr. Partridge himſelf, whether

ther it be probable I could have been ſo indiſcreet, to begin my predictions with the *only* falſhood, that ever was pretended to be in them; and this is in an affair at home, where I had ſo many opportunities to be exact; and muſt have given ſuch advantages againſt me to a perſon of Mr. Partridge's wit and learning, who, if he could poſſibly have raiſed one ſingle objection more againſt the truth of my prophecies, would hardly have ſpared me.

And here I muſt take occaſion to reprove the above-mentioned writer of the relation of Mr. Partridge's death, in a *letter to a lord*; who was pleaſed to tax me with a miſtake of *four whole hours* in my calculation of that event. I muſt confeſs, this cenſure pronounced with an air of certainty, in a matter that ſo nearly concerned me, and by a *grave judicious author*, moved me not a little. But though I was at that time out of town, yet ſeveral of my friends, whoſe curioſity had led them to be exactly informed (for as to my own part, having no doubt at all in the matter, I never once thought of it), aſſured me, I computed to ſomething under half an hour; which (I ſpeak my private opinion) is an error of no very great magnitude, that men ſhould raiſe a clamour about it. I ſhall only ſay, it would not be amiſs, if that author would henceforth be more tender of other men's reputations as well as his own. It is well there were no more miſtakes of that kind; if there had, I preſume he would have told me of them with as little ceremony.

There is one objection againſt Mr. Partridge's death, which I have ſometimes met with, though indeed very ſlightly offered, that he ſtill continues to write almanacks. But this is no more than what is common to all of that profeſſion; Gadbury, poor Robin, Dove, Wing, and ſeveral others, do yearly publiſh their almanacks; though ſeveral of them have been dead ſince before the *revolution*. Now the natural reaſon of this I take to be, that whereas it is the privilege of other authors *to live after their deaths*, almanack-makers are alone excluded; becauſe their diſſertations treating only upon the minutes as they paſs, become uſeleſs as thoſe go off. In conſideration of which, *time*, whoſe *regiſters* they are, gives them a leaſe in reverſion, to continue their works after their death.

I ſhould not have given the public or myſelf the trouble of this vindication, if my name had not been made uſe of by ſeveral perſons, to whom I never lent it; one of which, a few days ago, was pleaſed to father on me a new ſett of predictions. But I think theſe are things too ſerious to be trifled with. It grieved me to the heart, when I ſaw my labours, which had coſt me ſo much thought and watching, bawled about by common hawkers, which I only intended for the weighty conſideration of the graveſt perſons. This prejudiced the world ſo much at firſt, that ſeveral of my friends had the aſſurance to aſk me, whether I were in jeſt? to which I only anſwered coldly, *that the event would ſhew.* But it is the talent of our age and nation, to turn things of the greateſt importance into ridicule. When the end of the year had *verified all my predictions*, out comes Mr. Partridge's almanack, diſputing the point of his death; ſo that I am employed, like the general who was forced to kill his enemies twice over, whom a *necromancer* had raiſed to life. If Mr. Partridge hath practiſed the ſame experiment upon himſelf, and be again alive, long may he continue ſo; that doth not in the leaſt contradict my veracity: but I think I have clearly proved, by *invincible demonſtration*, that he died at fartheſt within half an hour of the time I foretold, and not four hours ſooner, as the above-mentioned author, in his letter to a lord, hath maliciouſly ſuggeſted, with deſign to blaſt my credit, by charging me with ſo groſs a miſtake.

A famous PREDICTION of MERLIN, the Britiſh Wizard *.

Written above a thouſand years ago, and relating to the year 1709.

With explanatory notes, by T. N. Philomath.

Written in the year 1709.

LAST year was publiſhed a paper of predictions, pretended to be written by one Iſaac Bickerſtaff, Eſq; ut the true deſign of it was to ridicule the art of aſtro-ogy, and expoſe its profeſſors as ignorant or impoſtors. gainſt this imputation, Dr. Partridge hath learnedly indicated himſelf in his almanack for that year.

For

* Dr. Swift in his preface to this piece would inſinuate, that what e publiſhes to the world is a tranſlation of Merlin's prophecy two undred years old. The main deſign of the Doctor in this predi-tion, if he was really in earneſt, (which I verily believe he was not, I am perſuaded that he only writ this prophecy in order to vex ne Whigs, and to fret that ungrateful miniſtry which had forgot-en the obligations he had conferred upon them), was, to encourage Anne to a ſecond marriage, in order that her majeſty might re-air, if poſſible, that infinite loſs ſhe had ſuſtained by the Duke of loceſter, who, by all accounts, was one of the fineſt princes that ver was born in England, and accordingly was univerſally regretted y the whole nation, the fanatical party and all their black adherents nly excepted. This appears from the 11th, 12th, 13th, and 14th nes of the prophecy,

And without diſpute, as in England there were many thouſands, ho were deſirous to ſee a prince deſcended from a Queen whom ey loved with ſuch ardour and affection; ſo, in the wildneſs of eir imagination, they endeavoured to perſuade her Majeſty at the ge of about forty-five to marry a ſecond time. But whether it was owing

For a farther vindication of this famous art, I have thought fit to preſent the world with the following prophecy. The original is ſaid to be of the famous Merlin, who lived about a thouſand years ago; and the following tranſlation is two hundred years old; for it ſeems to be written near the end of Henry the ſeventh's reign. I found it in an old edition of Merlin's prophecies, imprinted at London by John Hawkins in the year 1530, *page* 39. I ſet it down word for word in the old orthography, and ſhall take leave to ſubjoin a few explanatory notes.

Seven and ten addyd to nine,
Of Fraunce her woe this is the ſygne,
Tamys rivere twys y-frozen,
Walke ſans wetying ſhoes ne hozen.
Then comyth foorthe, ich underſtonde,
From Towne of Stoffe to fattyn Londe,

owing to that exceſſive regard which ſhe bore unto the memory of her beloved, the Prince of Denmark; or whether it was becauſe ſhe never had a child after the age of five or ſix and twenty; or whether it was for ſome political reaſon or other, ſhe refuſed in this reſpect to gratify the inclinations of her people; which however, as animoſities and factions were then riſing to an exceſſive height, ſhe had cauſe to repent of before the time of her deceaſe. For, as the Queen was driven to ſuch inexpreſſible ſtraits by the fury and machinations of the contending parties, that, with all her experience in government, ſhe knew not whom to truſt; if ſhe had married ſome wiſe and thoughtful prince, entirely remote from all pretenſions to the crown, (ſuppoſing that ſuch a one could have been found in Europe at that time), ſhe might have paſſed the remainder of her life with more eaſe and tranquillity. For as a prince in that ſituation would have had nothing more to do, than to have made the Queen happy and her reign glorious, he might have acted as moderator between both parties, ſecured unto himſelf the eſteem of all the wiſe and virtuous, and perhaps, after the deceaſe of the Queen, might have been highly regarded by her ſucceſſor during the remainder of his life. But alas! party-rage carried all before it, and every ſcheme of accommodation was equally rejected by Whigs and Tories. *Swift.*

An

An herdie Chyftan, woe the morne
To Fraunce, that ever he was born.
Then ſhall the fyſhe beweyle his boſſe:
Nor ſhall grin berrys make up the loſſe.
Yonge Symnele ſhall again miſcarrye:
And Norway's pryd *again ſhall marrey.
And from the tree where bloſums feele,
Ripe fruit ſhall come, and all is wele;
Reaums ſhall dance honde in honde,
And it ſhall be merrye in old Inglonde:
Then old Inglonde ſhall be no more,
And no man ſhall be ſorie therefore.
Geryon ſhall have three hedes agayne,
Till Hapſburge makyth them but twayne.

Explanatory notes.

Seven and ten. This line deſcribes the year when theſe ents ſhall happen. Seven and ten makes ſeventeen, hich I explain ſeventeen hundred, and this number ad-d to nine, makes the year we are now in; for it muſt: underſtood of the natural year, which begins the firſt January.

Tamys rivere twys, &c. The river Thames frozen vice in one year, ſo as man cuold walk on it, is a very. ynal accident, which perhaps hath not fallen out for ſe-ral hundred years before, and is the reaſon why ſome trologers have thought, that this prophecy could never: fulfilled, becauſe they imagined ſuch a thing would ver happen in our climate.

From town of Stoffe, &c. This is a plain deſignation the Duke of Marlborough: one kind of ſtuff uſed to tten land is called Marle, and every body knows that orough is a name for a town; and this way of expreſſi-n is after the uſual dark manner of old aſtrological pre-ctions.

* Q. Anne is called *Norway's pryd*, becauſe ſhe had vouchſaf-l to marry the Prince of Denmark; and we all know, that orway is part of the dominion belonging to that crown. *Swift.*

Then

Then ſhall the fyſhe, &c. By the *fiſh*, is underſtood the *Dauphin* of France, as their kings eldeſt ſons are called: it is here ſaid, he ſhall lament the loſs of the Duke of Burgundy, called the Boſſe, which is an old Engliſh word for *hump-ſhoulder*, or *crook-back*, as that Duke is known to be; and the prophecy ſeems to mean, that he ſhould be overcome or ſlain. By the *green berry*, in the next line, is meant the young Duke of Berry, the *Dauphin*'s third ſon, who ſhall not have valour or fortune enough to ſupply the loſs of his eldeſt brother.

Young Symnele, &c. By Symnele is meant the pretended Prince of Wales, who, if he offers to attempt any thing againſt England, ſhall miſcarry as he did before. Lambert Symnel is the name of a young man, noted in our hiſtories for perſonating the ſon (as I remember) of Edward IV.

And Norway's pryd, &c. I cannot gueſs who is meant by Norway's *pride* *; perhaps the reader may, as well as the ſenſe of the two following lines.

Reaums ſhall, &c. Reaums, or, as the word is now, *realms*, is the old name for *kingdoms*: and this is a very plain prediction of our happy *union*, with the felicities that ſhall attend it. It is added that Old England ſhall be no more, and yet no man ſhall be ſorry for it. And indeed, properly ſpeaking, England is now no more, for the whole iſland is one kingdom under the name of Britain.

Geryon ſhall, &c. This prediction, though ſomewhat obſcure, is wonderfully adapted. Geryon is ſaid to have been a king of Spain, whom Hercules ſlew. It was a fiction of the poets, that he had three heads, which the author ſays he ſhall have again: that is, Spain ſhall have three kings: which is now wonderfully verified; for beſides the King of Portugal, which properly is part of Spain, there are now two rivals for Spain, Charles and Philip: but Charles being deſcended from the count of Hapſburgh, founder of the Auſtrian family, ſhall ſoon make thoſe heads but two, by overturning Philip, and driving him out of Spain.

Some of theſe predictions are already fulfilled; and it is highly probable the reſt may be in due time; and I

* Queen Anne.

think

think I have not forced the words by my explication, into any other ſenſe than what they will naturally bear. If this be granted, I am ſure it muſt be alſo allowed, that the author (whoever he were) was a perſon of extraordinary ſagacity; and that aſtrology brought to ſuch perfection as this, is by no means an art to be deſpiſed, whatever Mr. Bickerſtaff, or other merry gentlemen are pleaſed to think. As to the tradition of theſe lines having been writ in the original by Merlin, I confeſs I lay not much weight upon it; but it is enough to juſtify their authority, that the book from whence I have tranſcribed them, was printed 170 years ago, as appears by the title-page. For the ſatisfaction of any gentleman, who may be either doubtful of the truth, or curious to be informed, I ſhall give order to have the very book ſent to the printer of this paper, with directions to let any body ſee it that pleaſes, becauſe I believe it is very ſcarce.

The

The WONDERFUL WONDER of WONDERS.

THERE is a certain perſon lately arrived at this city, whom it is very proper the world ſhould be informed of. His character may perhaps be thought very inconſiſtent, improbable, and unnatural; however I intend to draw it with the utmoſt regard to truth. This I am the better qualified to do, becauſe he is a ſort of *dependent* upon our family, and *almoſt* of the ſame *age*; though I cannot directly ſay, I have ever *ſeen* him. He is a native of this country, and hath lived long among us; but what appears wonderful, and hardly credible, was never ſeen *before* by any mortal.

It is true indeed, he always chuſes the *loweſt* place in company, and contrives it ſo, to keep *out of ſight*. It is reported however, that in his younger days he was frequently *expoſed* to *view*, but always againſt his will, and was ſure to *ſmart* for it.

As to his family, he came into the world a younger brother, being of *ſix* children the *fourth* in order of (1) birth; of which the eldeſt is now *head* of the houſe; the ſecond and third carry *arms*; but the two youngeſt are only *footmen*: ſome indeed add, that he hath likewiſe a twin-brother, who lives *over-againſt* him, and keeps a (2) *victualling-houſe*; he hath the reputation to be a *cloſe*, *griping*, *ſqueezing* fellow; and that when his bags are *full*, he is often *needy*; yet when the fit takes him, as faſt as he gets, he *lets it fly*.

When in *office*, no one *diſchargeth* himſelf, or *doth his buſineſs* better. He hath *ſometimes ſtrained hard* for an honeſt livelihood; and never got a *bit*, till every body elſe had *done*.

One practice appears very blameable in him; that every morning he privately frequents *unclean houſes* where any modeſt perſon would bluſh to be ſeen. And although this be generally known, yet the world, as cenſorious as it is, hath been ſo kind to overlook this infirmity in him. To deal impartially; it muſt be granted, that he is too great a lover of himſelf, and very often

conſults

s his own *eaſe* at the expence of his beſt friends:
is is one of his *blind-ſides*; and the beſt of men I
e not without *them*.
hath been conſtituted by the *higher* powers in the
of *receiver-general*, in which employment ſome
enſured him for playing *faſt* and *looſe*. He is like-
verſeer of the *golden mines*, which he daily inſpect-
when his health will permit him.
was long bred under a (3) *maſter of arts*, who in-
good *principles* in him, but theſe were ſoon *cor-*
d. I know not whether this deſerves mention; that
ſo very capricious, as to take it for an equal affront
ſk either of *kiſſing* or *kicking* him, which hath occa-
d a thouſand quarrels: however no body was ever
at a ſufferer for faults, which he neither was, nor
ly could be guilty of.
his *religion* he hath thus much of the quaker, that
ands *always covered*, even in the preſence of the
; in moſt other points a perfect (4) *idolater*, al-
gh he endeavours to *conceal* it; for he is known to
daily ſacrifices to certain *ſubterraneous nymphs*,
n he worſhips in an *humble poſture*, *prone on his*
and *ſtripts ſtark-naked*; and ſo leaves his *offerings*
d him, which the (5) *prieſts* of thoſe goddeſſes are
ul enough to remove upon certain ſeaſons with the
oſt privacy at *midnight*, and from thence maintain
ſelves and families. In all *urgent neceſſities* and
ures, he applies himſelf to theſe deities, and ſome-
s even in the *ſtreets* and *high-ways*, from an opinion
thoſe powers have an influence in all places, al-
gh their peculiar reſidence be in caverns under
nd. Upon theſe *occaſions* the faireſt ladies will not
e to *lend* their *hands* to aſſiſt him: for, although
are aſhamed to have him *ſeen* in their company, or
ſo much as to hear him *named*; yet it is well known,
he is one of their *conſtant followers*.
politics, he always ſubmits to what is *uppermoſt*;
he peruſes pamphlets *on both ſides* with great impar-
y, though ſeldom till *every body elſe hath done with*
.

His *learning* is of a mixed kind, and he may properly
alled a *helluo librorum*, or another *Jacobus de Vora-*
gine;

gine; though his ſtudies are chiefly confined to *ſchool-men, commentators,* and *German divines,* together with *modern poets* and *critics*: and he is an *atomic* philoſopher, ſtrongly maintaining a *void* in *nature,* which he ſeems to have fairly proved by many *experiments.*

I ſhall now proceed to deſcribe ſome particular qualities, which, in ſeveral inſtances ſeem to diſtinguiſh this perſon from the common race of other mortals.

His *grandfather* was a member of the *rump*-parliament, as the *grandſon* is of the *preſent,* where he often *riſes,* ſometimes *grumbles,* but never *ſpeaks.* However he lets nothing paſs *willingly,* but what is *well digeſted.* His courage is indiſputable, for he will take the boldeſt man alive *by the noſe.*

He is generally the *firſt a-bed* in the family, and the *laſt up*; which is to be lamented; becauſe when he happens to *riſe before* the reſt, it hath been thought to forebode *good fortune to his ſuperiors.*

As wiſdom is acquired by age, ſo by every new (6) *wrinkle in his face,* he is reported to gain ſome *new knowledge.*

In him we may obſerve the true effects and conſequences of *tyranny* in a ſtate: for, as he is a great *oppreſſor* of all *below* him, ſo there is no-body more *oppreſſed* by thoſe *above* him: yet in his time he hath been ſo highly in favour, that many *illuſtrious perſons* have been entirely indebted to *him* for their *preferments.*

He hath diſcovered, from his own experience, the true *point,* wherein all human actions, projects, and deſigns do chiefly *terminate*; and how *mean* and *ſordid* they are *at the bottom.*

It behoves the public to keep him *quiet*; for his *frequent murmurs* are a certain ſign of *inteſtine* tumults.

No philoſopher ever lamented more the luxury, for which theſe nations are ſo juſtly taxed; it hath been known to coſt him (7) *tears of blood*: for, in his own nature, he is far from being *profuſe*; though indeed he never ſtays a night at a gentleman's houſe without *leaving ſomething behind him.*

He receives with great ſubmiſſion whatever his patrons think fit to give him; and when they lay *heavy burthens* upon him, which is frequently enough, he gets rid of them

em as ſoon as he can; but not without *ſome labour* nd *much grumbling*.

He is a perpetual *hanger-on*; yet no body knows how o be *without him*. He patiently ſuffers himſelf to be *pt under*, but loves to be well uſed, and in that caſe ill ſacrifice his *vitals* to give you *eaſe*: and he hath ardly one acquaintance, for whom he hath not been *ound*; yet, as far as we can find, was never known to *ſe* any thing by it.

He is obſerved to be very (8) *unquiet* in the company f a Frenchman in *new cloaths*, or a young *coquette*.

He is, in ſhort, the ſubject of much *mirth* and *railliery*, hich he ſeems to take well enough; though it hath not een obſerved, that ever any *good thing* came from himelf.

There is ſo general an opinion of his juſtice, that ometimes very *hard caſes* are left to his deciſion; and hile he *ſits* upon them, he carries himſelf exactly *even etween both ſides*, except where ſome *knotty point* ariſes; nd then he is obſerved to *lean* a little to the *right* or *left* s the matter inclines him; but his reaſons for it are ſo manifeſt and convincing, that every man approves them.

POSTSCRIPT.

Gentle Reader.

THOUGH I am not inſenſible how many thouſand perſons have been, and ſtill are, with great dexterity *handling* this ſubject, and no leſs aware of what infinite reams of paper have been *laid out upon it*: however, in my opinion, no man living has *touched* it with greater nicety and more delicate turns, than our author. But becauſe there is ſome intended obſcurity in this relation; and curioſity, inquiſitive of *ſecrets*, may poſſibly not enter into the *bottom* and *depth* of the ſubject, it was thought not improper to take off the veil, and gain the reader's favour by enlarging his *inſight*. *Ars enim non habet inimicum niſi ignorantem*. It is well known, that it has been the policy of all times to deliver down *important* ſubjects by emblem and riddle, and not to ſuffer the knowledge of truth to be derived to us in plain and ſimple terms, which are generally as ſoon forgotten as conceived. For this reaſon the *heathen* religion is moſtly couched

under *mythology*. For the like reaſon (this being a FUNDAMENTAL in its kind) the author has thought fit to wrap up his treaſure in *clean linen*, which it is our buſineſs to lay *open*, and ſet in a due light; for I have obſerved, upon any accidental diſcovery, the leaſt *glimpſe* has given a great diverſion to the eager ſpectator, as many ladies could teſtify, *were it proper*, or *the caſe would admit*.

The politeſt companies have vouchſafed to ſmile at the *bare* name, and ſome people of faſhion have been ſo little ſcrupulous of *bringing it in play*, that it was the uſual ſaying of a knight and a man of good breeding, *That whenever he aroſe, his a-ſe roſe with him.*

NOTES.

(1) He alludes to the manner of our birth, the *head* and arms appearing before the poſteriors and the two feet, which he calls the *footmen*.

(2) *Victualling-houſe.*] The *belly*, which receives and digeſts our nouriſhment.

(3) *Maſter of arts.*] Perſius: *magiſter artis, ingeniique largitor venter.*

(4) *Idolater.*] Alludes to the ſacrifices offered by the Romans to the goddeſs Cloacina.

(5) *Prieſts.*] Gold-finders, who perform their office in the night-time: but our author further ſeems to have an eye to the cuſtom of the heathen prieſts ſtealing the offerings in the night; of which ſee more in the ſtory of Bell and the Dragon.

(6) *Wrinkle.*] This refers to a proverb—*You have one wrinkle in your a-ſe more than you had before.*

(7) *Tears of blood.*] *Hæmorrhoids*, according to the phyſicians, are a frequent conſequence of intemperance.

(8) *Unquiet.*] Their tails being generally obſerved to be moſt reſtleſs.

The

WONDER of ALL the WONDERS, that ever the WORLD wondered at.

For all perſons of quality and others.

JEWLY arrived at this city of Dublin the famous artiſt John Emanuel Schoitz, who, to the great ize and ſatisfaction of all ſpectators, is ready to do following wonderful performances; the like before r ſeen in this kingdom.

e will heat a bar of iron red-hot, and thruſt it into a el of gun-powder before all the company, and yet it not take fire.

e lets any gentleman charge a blunderbuſs with the gun-powder, and twelve leaden bullets; which blun- uſs the ſaid artiſt diſcharges full in the face of the company, without the leaſt hurt, the bullets ſticking e wall behind them.

e takes any gentleman's own ſword, and runs it thro' ſaid gentleman's body, ſo that the point appears dy at the back to all the ſpectators; then he takes the ſword, wipes it clean, and returns it to the owner, receives no manner of hurt.

e takes a pot of ſcalding oil, and throws it by great es full directly at the ladies, without ſpoiling their ths or burning their ſkins.

e takes any perſon of quality's child, from two years to ſix, and lets the child's own father or mother take ce in their hands; then the artiſt takes the child in rms, and toſſes it upon the point of the pike, where it s, to the great ſatisfaction of all ſpectators; and is taken off without ſo much as a hole in his coat.

e mounts upon a ſcaffold juſt over the ſpectators, and thence throws down a great quantity of large tiles ſtones, which fall like ſo many pillows, without ſo h as diſcompoſing either perukes or head-dreſſes.

e takes any perſon of quality up to the ſaid ſcaffold, ch perſon pulls off his ſhoes, and leaps nine foot di-

rectly down on a board prepared on purpoſe, full of ſharp ſpikes ſix inches long, without hurting his feet or damaging his ſtockings.

He places the ſaid board on a chair, upon which a lady ſits down with another lady in her lap, while the ſpikes, inſtead of entering into the under-lady's fleſh, will feel like a velvet cuſhion.

He takes any perſon of quality's footman, tyes a rope about his bare neck, and draws him up by pullies to the ceiling, and there keeps him hanging as long as his maſter or the company pleaſes, the ſaid footman, to the wonder and delight of all beholders, having a pot of ale in one hand and a pipe in the other; and when he is let down, there will not appear the leaſt mark of the cord about his neck.

He bids a lady's maid put her finger into a cup of clear liquor like water, upon which her face and both her hands are immediately withered like an old woman of fourſcore; her belly ſwells as if ſhe were within a week of her time, and her legs are as thick as mill-poſts; but upon putting her finger into another cup, ſhe becomes as young and handſome, as ſhe was before.

He gives any gentleman leave to drive forty twelve-penny nails up to the head in a porter's backſide, and then places the ſaid porter on a loadſtone chair, which draws out every nail, and the porter feels no pain.

He likewiſe draws the teeth of half a dozen gentlemen, mixes and jumbles them in a hat, gives any perſon leave to blindfold him, and returns each their own, and fixes them as well as ever.

With his fore-finger and thumb he thruſts ſeveral gentlemens and ladies eyes out of their heads, without the leaſt pain, at which time they ſee an unſpeakable number of beautiful colours; and after they are entertained to the full, he places them again in their proper ſockets, without any damage to the ſight.

He lets any gentleman drink a quart of hot melted lead, and by a draught of prepared liquor, of which he takes part himſelf, he makes the ſaid lead paſs through the ſaid gentleman before all the ſpectators, without any damage; after which it is produced in a cake to the company.

With

ith many other wonderful performances of art, too us here to mention.

ne/ſaid artiſt has performed before moſt kings and es in Europe with great applauſe.

e performs every day (except Sundays), from ten of lock to one in the forenoon; and from four till ſeven e evening, at the new inn in Smithfield.

he firſt ſeat a Britiſh crown, the ſecond a Britiſh crown, and the loweſt a Britiſh ſhilling.

. B. The beſt hands in town are to play at the ſhow.

A PROPOSAL for correcting, improving, and ascertaining the ENGLISH TONGUE *.

In a LETTER to the Most Honourable ROBERT Earl of OXFORD and MORTIMER, Lord High Treasurer of GREAT BRITAIN.

To the Most Honourable ROBERT Earl of OXFORD, &c.

My LORD,

WHAT I had the honour of mentioning to your lordship some time ago in conversation, was not a new thought just then started by accident or occasion, but

* It is well known, that if the Queen had lived a year or two longer, this proposal would, in all probability, have taken effect. For the Lord Treasurer had already nominated several persons, without distinction of quality or party, who were to compose a society for the purposes mentioned by the author; and resolved to use his credit with her Majesty, that a fund should be applied to support the expence of a large room, where the society should meet, and for other incidents. But this scheme fell to the ground, partly by the dissensions among the great men at court, but chiefly by the lamented death of that glorious princess. *Dub. edit.*

This piece might have been a very useful performance, if it had been longer, and less eclipsed by compliments to the noble person to whom it is addressed. It seems to have been intended as a preface to some more enlarged design: at the head of which such an introduction must have appeared with great propriety. A work of this kind is much wanted, as our language, instead of being improved, is every day growing worse and more debased. We bewilder ourselves in various orthography; we speak and we write at random; and if a man's common conversation were to be committed to paper, he would be startled *for to* find himself guilty in a *few* sentences, of so many solecisms and such false English. I believe we

the result of long reflexion; and I have been confirmed in my sentiments by the opinion of some very judicious persons,

the only people in the Christian world, who repeat the Lord's
er in an ungrammatical manner; and I remember to have heard,
when a motion was made in the convocation to alter the word
:h for the word *who*, the proposition was rejected by the majori
This instance may shew you of what sort of men, the most
ned, and even the most reverend assemblies are sometimes com-
:d. But let us consider the conduct of a neighbouring nation.
w industrious have the French been to improve their language?
to what a state of perfection have they brought it? Rome, by
conquests, made her dialect universal: France, by her policy,
done the same. By policy, I mean the encouragement of arts
sciences; which will often render a nation more powerful than
is. Nothing has contributed so much to the purity and excel-
ce of the French tongue, as the noble academies established for
t purpose: and, until some public work of the same kind is un-
taken in England; we cannot flatter ourselves with any hopes of
ending the errors, or ascertaining the limits of our style. I shall
presume even to whisper to you, that I think a design of this
t is sufficiently momentous to attract the consideration of our
islative powers. Their thoughts are otherwise employed, and
ir faculties otherwise applied. But I will venture to say, that if
our hospitals for lunatics, an hospital was added for the reception
l support of men of sense and learning, it would be of the high-
honour to the present age, and of no less advantage to posterity.
all it an hospital, because I suppose it to be erected for the benefit
such persons, whose infirm fortunes, or diseased revenues, may
ve rendered the strength and abilities of their minds weak and
less to the public; for I entirely agree with Aristotle, where he
s, in the words of his scholiast, *Eum praeclara et magna vix posse
qui et praestare, cui facultates desunt: quonium per amicos et civilem
entiam, velati per instrumenta, necesse est pleraque effici.* The re-
ctions that arise from this theme, I find, are driving me beyond
e bounds: therefore I shall only add, that I heartily wish you may
ink an attention to your native language as useful and improving
study as can be pursued, in whatever station of life Providence
ay allot you. *Orrery.*

perſons, with whom I conſulted. They all agree, that nothing would be of greater uſe towards the improvement of knowledge and politeneſs, than ſome effectual method for *correcting*, *enlarging* and *aſcertaining* our language; and they think it a work very poſſible to be compaſſed under the protection of a prince, the countenance and encouragement of a miniſtry, and the care of proper perſons choſen for ſuch an undertaking. I was glad to find your lordſhip's anſwer in ſo different a ſtyle, from what hath been commonly made uſe of on the like occaſions for ſome years paſt, *That all ſuch thoughts muſt be deferred to a time of peace*: a topic which ſome have carried ſo far, that they would not have us by any means think of preſerving our civil or religious conſtitution, becauſe we are engaged in a war abroad. It will be among the diſtinguiſhing marks of your miniſtry, my Lord, that you have a genius above all ſuch regards, and that no reaſonable propoſal for the honour, the advantage, or the ornament of your country, however foreign to your more immediate office, was ever neglected by you. I confeſs, the merit of this candour and condeſcenſion is very much leſſened, becauſe your lordſhip hardly leaves us room to

In this epiſtle Dr. Swift complains to the Earl of Oxford as firſt miniſter, in the name of all the learned and polite perſons of the nation, that our language is extremely imperfect; that its daily improvements are by no means equal to its daily corruptions; that the pretenders to poliſh and refine it have chiefly multiplied abuſes and abſurdities; and that in many inſtances it offends againſt every part of grammar. He proves with irreſiſtible force of reaſon, that our language ought to be refined to a certain ſtandard, and then fixed for ever: he remarks the ſeveral inconveniencies which ariſe perpetually from our ſtupid inattention to theſe matters. He doth not however preſcribe any methods for aſcertaining the language, but throws out ſome general obſervations, leaving the reſt to the inſpection of that ſociety, which he hoped would have been ſpeedily inſtituted by the Lord Treaſurer. But this ſcheme fell to the ground, partly by the diſſenſions among the great men at court, and chiefly by the lamented death of Q. Anne, that ever glorious princeſs. *Swift.*

offer

offer our good wiſhes; removing all our difficulties, and ſupplying our wants, faſter than the moſt viſionary projector can adjuſt his ſchemes. And therefore, my lord, the deſign of this paper is not ſo much to offer you *ways* and *means*, as to complain of a *grievance*, the redreſſing of which is to be your own work, as much as that of paying the *nation's debt*, or opening a trade into the South-ſea; and though not of ſuch immediate benefit as either of theſe, or any other of your glorious actions, yet perhaps in future ages not leſs to your honour.

My lord, I do here, in the name of all the learned and polite perſons of the nation, complain to your lordſhip as *firſt miniſter*, that our language is extremely imperfect; that its daily improvements are by no means in proportion to its daily corruptions; that the pretenders to poliſh and refine it have chiefly multiplied abuſes and abſurdities; and, that in many inſtances it offends againſt ever part of grammar. But leſt your lordſhip ſhould think my cenſure to ſevere, I ſhall take leave to be more particular.

I believe your lordſhip will agree with me, in the reaſon why our language is leſs refined than thoſe of Italy, Spain, or France. It is plain, that the Latin tongue in its purity was never in this iſland, towards the conqueſt of which few or no attempts were made till the time of Claudius; neither was that language ever ſo vulgar in Britain, as it is known to have been in Gaul and Spain. Further, we find that the Roman legions here were at length all recalled to help their country againſt the Goths, and other barbarous invaders. Mean time, the Britons left to ſhift for themſelves, and daily harraſſed by cruel inroads from the Picts, were forced to call in the Saxons for their defence; who conſequently reduced the greateſt part of the iſland to their own power, drove the Britons into the moſt remote and mountainous parts, and the reſt of the country in cuſtoms, religion, and language, became wholly Saxon. This I take to be the reaſon, why there are more Latin words remaining in the Britiſh tongue than in the old Saxon, which, excepting ſome few variations in the orthography, is the ſame in moſt original words with our preſent Engliſh, as well as with the German and other Northern dialects.

Edward.

Edward the *confeſſor*, having lived long in France, appears to be the firſt who introduced any mixture of the French tongue with the Saxon; the court affecting what the prince was fond of, and others taking it up for a faſhion, as it is now with us. William *the conqueror* proceeded much farther; bringing over with him vaſt numbers of that nation, ſcattering them in every monaſtery, giving them great quantities of land, directing all pleadings to be in that language, and endeavouring to make it univerſal in the kingdom. This at leaſt is the opinion generally received: but your lordſhip hath fully convinced me, that the French tongue made yet a greater progreſs here under Harry *the ſecond*, who had large territories on that continent, both from his father and his wife, made frequent journeys and expeditions thither, and was always attended with a number of his countrymen, retainers at his court. For ſome centuries after, there was a conſtant intercourſe between France and England, by the dominions we poſſeſſed there, and the conqueſts we made; ſo that our language between two and three hundred years ago, ſeems to have had a greater mixture with French than at preſent; many words having been afterwards rejected, and ſome ſince the time of Spencer; although we have ſtill retained not a few, which have been long antiquated in France. I could produce ſeveral inſtances of both kinds, if it were of any uſe or entertainment.

To examine into the ſeveral circumſtances by which the language of a country may be altered, would force me to enter into a wide field. I ſhall only obſerve, that the Latin, the French, and the Engliſh, ſeem to have undergone the ſame fortune. The firſt, from the days of Romulus to thoſe of Julius Cæſar, ſuffered perpetual changes: and by what we meet in thoſe authors who occaſionally ſpeak on that ſubject, as well as from certain fragments of old laws, it is manifeſt that the Latin, three hundred years before Tully, was as unintelligible in his time, as the Engliſh and French of the ſame period are now; and theſe two have changed as much ſince William *the conqueror* (which is but little leſs than ſeven hundred years) as the Latin appears to have done in the like term. Whether our language or the French will decline

is faſt as the Roman did, is a queſtion, that would perhaps admit more debate than it is worth. There were many reaſons for the corruptions of the laſt: as, the change of their government to a tyranny, which ruined the ſtudy of eloquence, there being no further uſe or encouragement for popular orators: their giving not only the freedom of the city, but capacity for employments, to ſeveral towns in Gaul, Spain, and Germany, and other diſtant parts, as far as Aſia; which brought a great number of foreign pretenders into Rome: the ſlaviſh diſpoſition of the ſenate and people, by which the wit and eloquence of the age were wholly turned into panegyric, the moſt barren of all ſubjects: the great corruption of manners, and introduction of foreign luxury, with foreign terms to expreſs it, with ſeveral others that might be aſſigned; not to mention thoſe invaſions from the Goths and Vandals, which are too obvious to inſiſt on.

The Roman language arrived at great perfection, before it began to decay: and the French, for theſe laſt fifty years, hath been poliſhing as much as it will bear, and appears to be declining by the natural inconſtancy of that people, and the affectation of ſome late authors to introduce and multiply cant words, which is the moſt ruinous corruption in any language. La Bruyere, a late celebrated writer among them, makes uſe of many new terms, which are not to be found in any of the common dictionaries before his time. But the Engliſh tongue is not arrived to ſuch a degree of perfection, as to make us apprehend any thoughts of its decay; and if it were once refined to a certain ſtandard, perhaps there might be ways found out to fix it for ever, or at leaſt till we were invaded and made a conqueſt by ſome other ſtate; and even then our beſt writings might probly be preſerved with care, and grow into eſteem, and the authors have a chance for immortality.

But without ſuch great revolutions as theſe (to which we are, I think, leſs ſubject than kingdoms upon the continent), I ſee no abſolute neceſſity why any language ſhould be perpetually changing; for we find many examples to the contrary. From Homer to Plutarch are above a thouſand years; ſo long at leaſt the purity of the Greek tongue may be allowed to laſt, and we know not

how

ſchool in England for that accompliſhment; and ſo will remain, till better care be taken in the education of our young nobility, that they may ſet out into the world with ſome foundation of literature, in order to qualify them for patterns of politeneſs. The conſequence of this defect upon our language may appear from the plays, and other compoſitions written for entertainment within fifty years paſt; filled with a ſucceſſion of affected phraſes, and new conceited words, either borrowed from the current ſtyle of the court, or from thoſe, who, under the character of men of wit and pleaſure, pretended to give the law. Many of theſe refinements have already been long antiquated, and are now hardly intelligible; which is no wonder, when they were the product only of ignorance and caprice.

I have never known this great town without one or more *dunces* of figure, who had credit enough to give riſe to ſome new word, and propagate it in moſt converſations, though it had neither humour, nor ſignificancy. If it ſtruck the preſent taſte, it was ſoon transferred into the plays and current ſcribbles of the week, and became an addition to our language; while the men of wit and learning, inſtead of early obviating ſuch corruptions, were too often ſeduced to imitate and comply with them.

There is another ſett of men, who have contributed very much to the ſpoiling of the Engliſh tongue; I mean the poets, from the time of the reſtoration. Theſe gentlemen, although they could not be inſenſible how much our language was already overſtocked with monoſyllables, yet, to ſave time and pains, introduced that barbarous cuſtom of abbreviating words, to fit them to the meaſure of their verſes; and this they have frequently done ſo very injudiciouſly, as to form ſuch harſh unharmonious ſounds, that none but a northern ear could endure; they have joined the moſt obdurate conſonants without one intervening vowel, only to ſhorten a ſyllable; and their taſte in time became ſo depraved, that what was at firſt a poetical licence not to be juſtified, they made their choice, alledging, that the words pronounced at length ſounded faint and languid. This was a pretence to take up the ſame cuſtom in proſe! ſo that moſt of the books we ſee now a-days, are full of theſe manglings and abbre-

that women in their manner of corrupting words, do naturally discard the consonants, as we do the vowels. What I am going to tell your lordship appears very trifling: that more than once, where some of both sexes were in company, I have persuaded two or three of each to take a pen, and write down a number of letters joined together, just as it came into their heads; and, upon reading this gibberish, we have found that which the men had wrote, by the frequent encountering of rough consonants, to sound like High-Dutch; and the other, by the women, like Italian, abounding in vowels and liquids. Now, though I would by no means give ladies the trouble of advising us in the reformation of our language, yet I cannot help thinking, that since they have been left out of all meetings, except parties at play, or where worse designs are carried on, our conversation hath very much degenerated.

In order to reform our language, I conceive, my lord, that a free judicious choice should be made of such persons, as are generally allowed to be best qualified for such a work, without any regard to quality, party or profession. These, to a certain number at least, should assemble at some appointed time and place, and fix on rules by which they design to proceed. What methods they will take, is not for me to prescribe. Your lordship, and other persons in great employment, might please to be of the number: and I am afraid such a society would want your instruction and example as much as your protection; for I have, not without a little envy, observed of late the style of some great ministers very much to exceed that of any other productions.

The persons who are to undertake this work will have the example of the French before them to imitate, where these have proceeded right, and to avoid their mistakes. Besides the grammar-part, wherein we are allowed to be very defective, they will observe many gross improprieties, which however authorised by practice, and grown familiar, ought to be discarded. They will find many words that deserve to be utterly thrown out of our language, many more to be corrected, and perhaps not a few long since antiquated, which ought to be restored on account of their energy and sound.

, I would undertake to ſhew your lordſhip ſeveral
s, where the beauties of this kind are ſo predomi-
, that, with all your ſkill in languages, you could
· be able either to read or underſtand them.
it I am very much miſtaken, if many of theſe falſe
:ments among us do not ariſe from a principle, which
d quite deſtroy their credit, if it were well under-
and conſidered. For I am afraid, my lord, that,
all the real good qualities of our country, we are
·ally not very polite. This perpetual diſpoſition to
en our words, by retrenching the vowels, is nothing
but a tendency to lapſe into the barbarity of thoſe
hern nations, from whom we are deſcended, and
e languages labour all under the ſame defect. For
worthy our obſervation, that the Spaniards, the
ch, and the Italians, although derived from the
Northern anceſtors with ourſelves, are with the ut-
difficulty taught to pronounce our words, which the
les and Danes, as well as the Germans and the
h, attain to with eaſe, becauſe our ſyllables reſem-
ıeirs in the roughneſs and frequency of conſonants.
, as we ſtruggle with an ill climate to improve the
:r kinds of fruits, are at the expence of walls to re-
and reverberate the faint rays of the ſun, and fence
ıſt the Northern blaſts, we ſometimes, by the help of
ɔd ſoil, equal the productions of warmer countries,
have no need to be at ſo much coſt and care. It is
ıme thing with reſpect to the politer arts among us;
he ſame defect of heat which gives a fierceneſs to
atures, may contribute to that roughneſs of our lan-
:, which bears ſome analogy to the harſh fruit of
r countries. For I do not reckon that we want a
·s more than the reſt of our neighbours: but your
ıip will be of my opinion, that we ought to ſtruggle
theſe natural diſadvantages as much as we can, and
·reful whom we employ, whenever we deſign to cor-
:hem, which is a work that has hitherto been aſſu-
by the leaſt qualified hands. So, that if the choice
ɔeen left to me, I would rather have truſted the re-
ıent of our language, as far as it relates to ſound, to
ıdgment of the women, than of illiterate court-fops,
witted poets, and univerſity-boys. For it is plain,

ſerve in the *communion-ſervice*, that of *burial*, and other parts.

But when I ſay, that I would have our language, after it is duly corrected, always to laſt, I do not mean that it ſhould never be enlarged. Provided that no word, which a ſociety ſhall give a ſanction to, be afterwards antiquated and exploded, they may have liberty to receive whatever new ones they ſhall find occaſion for; becauſe then the old books will yet be always valuable according to their intrinſic worth, and not thrown aſide on account of unintelligible words and phraſes, which appear harſh and uncouth, only becauſe they are out of faſhion. Had the Roman tongue continued vulgar in that city till this time, it would have been abſolutely neceſſary, from the mighty changes that have been made in law and religion, from the many terms of art required in trade and in war, from the new inventions that have happened in the world, from the vaſt ſpreading of navigation and commerce, with many other obvious circumſtances, to have made great additions to that language; yet the antients would ſtill have been read and underſtood with pleaſure and eaſe. The Greek tongue received many enlargements between the time of Homer and that of Plutarch; yet the former author was probably as well underſtood in Trajan's time as the latter. What Horace ſays of *words going off and periſhing like leaves, and new ones coming in their place*, is a misfortune he laments, rather than a thing he approves; but I cannot ſee why this ſhould be abſolutely neceſſary, or, if it were, what would have become of his *monumentum aere perennius?*

Writing by memory only, as I do at preſent, I would gladly keep within my depth; and therefore ſhall not enter into further particulars. Neither do I pretend more than to ſhew the uſefulneſs of this deſign, and to make ſome general obſervations, leaving the reſt to that ſociety, which I hope will owe its inſtitution and patronage to your lordſhip. Beſides, I would willingly avoid repetition, having about a year ago communicated to the public much of what I had to offer upon this ſubject, by the hands of an ingenious gentleman, who for a long time did thrice a week divert or inſtruct the kingdom by his papers; and is ſuppoſed to purſue the ſame deſign at preſen

ſent under the title of Spectator. This author, who hath tried the force and compaſs of our language with ſo much ſucceſs, agrees entirely with me in moſt of my ſentiments relating to it; ſo do the greateſt part of the men of wit and learning, whom I have had the happineſs to converſe with; and therefore I imagine that ſuch a ſociety would be pretty unanimous in the main points.

Your Lordſhip muſt allow, that ſuch a work as this brought to perfection, would very much contribute to the glory of her Majeſty's reign; which ought to be recorded in words more durable than braſs, and ſuch as our poſterity may read a thouſand years hence with pleaſure as well as admiration. I always diſapproved that falſe compliment to princes, that the moſt laſting monument they can have, is the hearts of their ſubjects. It is indeed their greateſt preſent felicity to reign in their ſubject's hearts; but theſe are too periſhable to preſerve their memories, which can only be done by the pens of able and faithful hiſtorians. And I take it to be your lordſhip's duty, as *prime miniſter*, to give order for inſpecting our language, and rendering it fit to record the hiſtory of ſo great and good a princeſs. Beſides, my Lord, as diſtintereſted as you appear to the world, I am convinced, that no man is more in the power of a prevailing favourite paſſion than yourſelf; I mean that deſire of true and laſting honour, which you have borne along with you through every ſtage of your life. To this you have often ſacrificed your intereſt, your eaſe, and your health: for preſerving and increaſing this you have expoſed your perſon to ſecret treachery and open violence. There is not perhaps an example in hiſtory of any miniſter, who in ſo ſhort a time hath performed ſo many great things, and overcome ſo many difficulties. Now, though I am fully convinced, that you fear God, honour your Queen, and love your country, as much as any of your fellow-ſubjects, yet I muſt believe, that the deſire of fame hath been no inconſiderable motive to quicken you in the purſuit of thoſe actions which will beſt deſerve it. But at the ſame time I muſt be ſo plain as to tell your lordſhip, that if you will not take ſome care to ſettle our language, and put it into a ſtate of continuance, I cannot promiſe

that

that your memory ſhall be preſerved above an hundred years, farther than by imperfect tradition.

As barbarous and ignorant as we were in former centuries, there were more effectual care taken by our anceſtors to preſerve the memory of times and perſons, than we find in this age of learning and politeneſs, as we are pleaſed to call it. The rude Latin of the Monks is ſtill very intelligible; whereas, had their records been delivered down only in the vulgar tongue, ſo barren and ſo barbarous, ſo ſubject to continual ſucceeding changes, they could not now be underſtood, unleſs by antiquaries, who make it their ſtudy to expound them. And we muſt at this day have been content with ſuch poor abſtracts of our Engliſh ſtory, as laborious men of low genius would think fit to give us: and even theſe in the next age would be likewiſe ſwallowed up in ſucceeding collections. If things go on at this rate, all I can promiſe your lordſhip, is, that, about two hundred years hence, ſome painful compiler, who will be at the trouble of ſtudying old language, may inform the world, that in the reign of Queen Anne, Robert Earl of Oxford, a very wiſe and excellent man, was made *high-treaſurer*, and ſaved his country, which in thoſe days was almoſt ruined by a *foreign war*, and a *domeſtic faction*. Thus much he may be able to pick out, and willing to transfer into his new hiſtory; but the reſt of your character, which I or any other writer may now value ourſelves by drawing, and the particular account of the great things done under your miniſtry, for which you are already ſo celebrated in moſt parts of Europe, will probably be dropped, on account of the antiquated ſtyle and manner they are delivered in. How then ſhall any man, who hath a genius for hiſtory equal to the beſt of the ancients, be able to undertake ſuch a work with ſpirit and chearfulneſs, when he conſiders that he will be read with pleaſure but a very few years, and in an age or two ſhall hardly be underſtood without an interpreter? This is like employing an excellent ſtatuary to work upon mouldering ſtone. Thoſe, who apply their ſtudies to preſerve the memory of others, will always have ſome concern for their own. And I believe it is for this reaſon, that ſo few writers among us of any diſtinction have turned their thoughts to ſuch a

diſcouraging

diſcouraging employment: for the beſt Engliſh hiſtorian muſt lie under this mortification, that, when his ſtyle grows antiquated, he will be only conſidered as a tedious relator of facts; and perhaps conſulted in his turn among other neglected authors to furniſh materials for ſome future collector.

I doubt your lordſhip is but ill entertained with a few ſcattered thoughts upon a ſubject, that deſerves to be treated with ability and care: however, I muſt beg leave to add a few words more, perhaps not altogether foreign to the ſame matter. I know not whether that which I am going to ſay may paſs for caution, advice, or reproach, any of which will be juſtly thought very improper from one in my ſtation to one in yours. However, I muſt venture to affirm, that if genius and learning be not encouraged under your lordſhip's adminiſtration, you are the moſt inexcuſable perſon alive. All your other virtues, my Lord, will be defective without this; your affability, candor, and good nature; that perpetual agreeableneſs of converſation, ſo diſengaged in the midſt of ſuch a weight of buſineſs and oppoſition; even your juſtice, prudence, and magnanimity, will ſhine leſs bright without it. Your lordſhip is univerſally allowed to poſſeſs a very large portion in moſt parts of literature; and to this you owe the cultivating thoſe many virtues which otherwiſe would have been leſs adorned, or in a lower perfection. Neither can you acquit yourſelf of theſe obligations, without letting the arts in their turn ſhare your influence and protection: beſides, who knows but ſome *true genius* may happen to ariſe under your miniſtry, *exortus ut aetherius ſol.* Every age might perhaps produce one or two of theſe to adorn it, if they were not ſunk under the cenſure and obloquy of plodding, ſervile, imitating pedants: I do not mean by a true genius, any bold writer, who breaks through the rules of decency to diſtinguiſh himſelf by the ſingularity of his opinions: but one, who upon a deſerving ſubject is able to open new ſcenes, and diſcover a vein of true and noble thinking, which never entered into any imagination before: every ſtroke of whoſe pen is worth all the paper blotted by hundreds of others in the compaſs of their lives. I know, my Lord, your friends all offer in your defence, that,

that, in your private capacity, you never refuſe purſe and credit to the ſervice and ſupport of lear ingenious men: and that ever ſince you have been blic employment, you have conſtantly beſtowed y vours on the moſt deſerving perſons. But I deſi lordſhip not to be deceived: we never will ad theſe excuſes, nor will allow your private liberal great as it is, to attone for your exceſſive public But here again I am afraid moſt good ſubjects will in in your defence, by alledging the deſperate conditi found the nation in, and the neceſſity there was able and faithful a ſteward to retrieve it, if poſſi the utmoſt frugality. We grant all this, my Lor then it ought likewiſe to be conſidered, that you h ready ſaved ſeveral millions to the public, and tha we aſk is too inconſiderable to break into any rules ſtricteſt good huſbandry. The French King beſt bout half a dozen penſions to learned men in ſever of Europe, and perhaps a dozen in his own kin which in the whole do probably not amount to l income of many a private commoner in Engla have more contributed to the glory of that prince any million he hath otherwiſe employed. For le like all true merit, is eaſily ſatisfied; whilſt the fa counterfeit is perpetually craving, and never t hath enough. The ſmalleſt favour given by a prince, as a mark of eſteem, to reward the endo of the mind, never fails to be returned with pra gratitude, and loudly celebrated to the world. known ſome years ago ſeveral penſions given to l lar perſons (how deſervedly I ſhall not enquir one of which, if divided into ſmaller parcels, an buted by the crown, to thoſe who might upon c diſtinguiſh themſelves by ſome extraordinary pro of wit or learning, would be amply ſufficient to the end. Or if any ſuch perſons were above (as every great *genius* certainly is, with very m conveniencies of life), a medal, or ſome mark of e on, would do full as well.

But I forget my province, and find myſelf projector before I am aware; although it be one laſt characters under which I ſhould deſire to ap

ore your Lordſhip, eſpecially when I have the ambiti-
on of aſpiring to that of being, with the greateſt reſpect
nd truth,

MY LORD,,

Your Lordſhip's

moſt obedient, moſt obliged,

and moſt humble ſervant,

London, Feb. 22.
1711-12.

Some

Some FREE THOUGHTS upon the SENT STATE of AFFAIRS*.

Written in the year 1714.

WHATEVER may be thought or practiſed by found politicians, they will hardly be able t vince the reaſonable part of mankind, that the moſt

* About a month before the demiſe of Queen Anne, th having laboured to reconcile the miniſters to each other witho ceſs, retired to the houſe of a friend in Berkſhire, and nev them more. But, during this retreat, he wrote the followin tiſe, which he thought might be of ſome uſe even in that ju and ſent it up to London to be printed: but, upon ſome dif in opinion between the author and the late Lord Bolingbrok publication was delayed till the Queen's death; and then he s his copy. It was afterwards placed in the hands of the late man Barber, from whom it was obtained to be printed. Th of the miniſtry by this animoſity among themſelves, was long ſeen and foretold by Swift; and it appears by Lord Bolingl letter to Sir William Wyndham, that in his heart he renoun friendſhip for Oxford long before the concluſion of the peace, t it did not appear till afterwards. "The peace", ſays he, " " had been judged to be the only ſolid foundation whereu " could erect a Tory ſyſtem, and yet when it was made we " ourſelves at a ſtand; nay, the very work, which ought t " been the baſis of our ſtrength, was in part demoliſhed befc " eyes, and we were ſtoned with the ruins of it." This probably rendered the diſunion of the miniſtry viſible; ſome pally endeavouring to ſecure themſelves, ſome ſtill labouring tabliſh at all events the party they had eſpouſed, which ſ thing but "increaſe of mortification and nearer approach " in". And it is not to be wondered, that when this

rt, eaſy, ſafe, and lawful way to any good end is not re eligible, than one directly contrary in ſome or all of ſe qualities. I have been frequently aſſured by great niſters, that politics were nothing but common ſenſe; ich, as it was the only true thing they ſpoke, ſo it s the only thing they could have wiſhed I ſhould not ieve. God hath given the bulk of mankind a capaci- to underſtand reaſon when it is fairly offered; and by ſon they would eaſily be governed, if it were left to ir choice. Thoſe princes in all ages, who were moſt tinguiſhed for their myſterious ſkill in government, nd by the event, that they had ill conſulted their own et, or the eaſe and happineſs of their people; nor h poſterity remembered them with honour; ſuch as ſander and Philip among the Greeks, Tiberius in me, Pope Alexander the ſixth and his ſon Cæſar Bor-, queen Catherine de Medicis, Philip the ſecond of ain, with many others. Nor are examples leſs fre- ent of miniſters, famed for men of deep intrigue, whoſe litics have produced little more than murmurings, facti- s, and diſcontents, which uſually terminated in the grace and ruin of the authors.

I can recollect but three occaſions in a ſtate, where the lents of ſuch men may be thought neceſſary; I mean in tate where the prince is obeyed and loved by his ſub- ts: firſt, in the negociation of a peace; ſecondly, in juſting the intereſts of our own country with thoſe of e nations round us, watching the ſeveral motions of ir neighbours and allies, and preſerving a due balance nong them: laſtly, in the management of parties and ctions at home. In the firſt of theſe caſes I have often ard it obſerved, that plain good ſenſe and a firm ad- rence to the point, have proved more effectual than all oſe arts, which I remember a great foreign miniſter uſ-

ritten, the Dean's attempts to reconcile his friends were unſucceſ- l; for Bolingbroke declares, that he abhorred Oxford to ſuch a gree, that he would rather have ſuffered baniſhment or death, than ave taken meaſures in concert with him to have avoided either. *Hawkeſ.*

When you have read this pamphlet, *digito compeſce labellum.* Or- ery.

ed in contempt to call the *ſpirit of negociating*. In t
ſecond caſe much wiſdom and a thorough knowledge in
fairs, both foreign and domeſtic, are certainly require
after which I know no talents neceſſary beſides meth
and ſkill in the common forms of buſineſs. In the l
caſe, which is that of managing parties, there ſeems
deed to be more occaſion for employing this gift of t
lower politics, whenever the tide runs high againſt t
court and miniſtry, which ſeldom happens under any t
lerable adminiſtration, while the true intereſt of the n
tion is purſued. But, here in England (for I do not pr
tend to eſtabliſh maxims of government in general) wh
the prince and miniſtry, the clergy, the majority of lan
ed-men, and bulk of the people, appear to have the ſa
views and the ſame principles, it is not obvious to m
how thoſe at the helm can have many opportunities
ſhewing their ſkill in myſtery and refinement, beſi
what themſelves think fit to create.

I have been aſſured by men long practiſed in buſine
that the ſecrets of court are much fewer than we ge
rally ſuppoſe; and I hold it for the greateſt ſecret
court, that they are ſo: becauſe the firſt ſprings of gr
events, like thoſe of great rivers, are often ſo mean a
ſo little, that in decency they ought to be hid: and the
fore miniſters are ſo wiſe to leave their proceedings to
accounted for by reaſoners at a diſtance, who oft
mould them into ſyſtems, that do not only go down
ry well in the coffee-houſe, but are ſupplies for pa
phlets in the preſent age, and may probably furniſh m
terials for memoirs and hiſtories in the next.

It is true indeed, that even thoſe who are very ne
the court, and are ſuppoſed to have a large ſhare in
management of public matters, are apt to deduct wro
conſequences, by reaſoning upon the cauſes and moti
of thoſe actions wherein themſelves are employed.
great miniſter puts you a caſe, and aſks your opinion, l
conceals an eſſential circumſtance, upon which the wh
weight of the matter turns; then he deſpiſeth your
derſtanding for counſelling him no better, and conclu
he ought to truſt entirely to his own wiſdom. Thus
grows to abound in ſecrets and reſerves, even towa
thoſe, with whom he ought to act in the greateſt co

dence and concert; and thus the world is brought to judge, that whatever be the iſſue and event, it was all foreſeen, contrived, and brought to paſs by ſome maſter-ſtroke of his politics.

I could produce innumerable inſtances, from my own memory and obſervation, of events imputed to the profound ſkill and addreſs of a miniſter, which in reality were either the mere effect of negligence, weakneſs, humour, paſſion, or pride, or, at beſt, but the natural courſe of things left to themſelves.

During this very ſeſſion of parliament, a moſt ingenious gentleman, who hath much credit with thoſe in power, would needs have it, that in the late diſſenſions at court, which grew too high to be any longer a ſecret, the whole matter was carried with the utmoſt dexterity on one ſide, and with manifeſt ill conduct on the other. To prove this, he made uſe of the moſt plauſible topics, drawn from the nature and diſpoſition of the ſeveral perſons concerned, as well as of her majeſty; all which he knows as much of as any man: and gave me a detail of the whole, with ſuch an appearance of probability, as committed to writing would paſs for an admirable piece of ſecret hiſtory. Yet I am at the ſame time convinced by the ſtrongeſt reaſons, that the iſſue of thoſe diſſenſions, as to the part they had in the court and houſe of lords, was partly owing to very different cauſes, and partly to the ſituation of affairs, from whence in that conjuncture they could not eaſily terminate otherwiſe than they did, whatever unhappy conſequences they may have for the future.

In like manner I have heard a phyſician pronounce with great gravity, that he had cured ſo many patients of malignant fevers, and as many more of the ſmall pox; whereas in truth nine parts in ten of thoſe who recovered, owed their lives to the ſtrength of nature and a good conſtitution, while ſuch a one happened to be their doctor.

But, while it is ſo difficult to learn the ſprings and motives of ſome facts, and ſo eaſy to forget the circumſtances of others, it is no wonder they ſhould be ſo groſly miſrepreſented to the public, by curious inquiſitive heads, who proceed altogether upon conjectures, and in reaſoning upon affairs of ſtate, are ſure to be miſtaken, by

ſearching too deep. And as I have known this to be frequent error of many others, ſo I am ſure it hath b perpetually mine, whenever I have attempted to diſco the cauſe of political events by refinement and conj ture; which I muſt acknowledge hath very much aba my veneration for what they call *arcana imperii*, whe of I dare pronounce, that the fewer there are in any miniſtration, it is juſt ſo much the better.

What I have hitherto ſaid, hath by no means b intended to detract from the qualities requiſite in the who are truſted with the adminiſtration of public affai on the contrary, I know no ſtation of life, where gr abilities and virtues of all kinds are ſo highly neceſſa and where the want of any is ſo quickly or univerſa felt. A great miniſter hath no virtue for which the pu lic may not be the better, nor any defect by which t public is not certainly a ſufferer. I have known m than once or twice, within four years paſt, an omiſſion, appearance very ſmall, prove almoſt fatal to a wh ſcheme, and very hardly retrieved. It is not alwa ſufficient for the perſon at the helm, that he is intre in his nature, free from any tincture of avarice or c ruption, and that he hath great natural and acquired bilities.

I never thought the reputation of much ſecrecy wa character of any advantage to a miniſter, becauſe it all other men upon their guard to be as ſecret as he, a was conſequently the occaſion that perſons and thi were always miſrepreſented to him: becauſe likewiſe, t great an affectation of ſecrecy is uſually thought to be tended with thoſe little intrigues and refinements, whi among the vulgar denominate a man a great politicia but among others is apt, whether deſervedly or no, acquire the opinion of cunning: a talent, which diff as much from the true knowledge of government, as t of an attorney from an able lawyer. Neither indeed I altogether convinced, that this habit of multiplying crets may not be carried on, ſo far as to ſtop that co munication which is neceſſary, in ſome degree, among who have any conſiderable part in the management public affairs: becauſe I have obſerved the inconveni cies ariſing from a want of love between thoſe who w

to give directions, to *have* been of as ill conſequence as any that could happen from the diſcovery of ſecrets. I ſuppoſe, when a building is to be erected, the model may be the contrivance only of one head; and it is ſufficient that the under-workmen be ordered to cut ſtones into certain ſhapes, and place them in certain poſitions: but the ſeveral maſter-builders muſt have ſome general knowledge of the deſign, without which they can give no orders at all. And, indeed, I do not know a greater mark of an able miniſter, than that of rightly adapting the ſeveral faculties of men; nor is any thing more to be lamented than the impracticableneſs of doing this in any great degree under our preſent circumſtances, while ſo many ſhut themſelves out by adhering to a faction, and while the court is enſlaved to the impatience of others, who deſire to ſell their vote, or their intereſt, as dear as they can. But whether this hath not been ſubmitted to more than was neceſſary, whether it hath not been dangerous in the example, and pernicious in the practice, I will leave to the enquiry of thoſe who can better determine.

It may be matter of no little admiration to conſider in ſome lights the ſtate of affairs among us for four years paſt. The queen finding herſelf, and the majority of her kingdom, grown weary of the avarice and inſolence, the miſtaken politics, and deſtructive principles of her former miniſters; calls to the ſervice of the public another ſet of men, who, by confeſſion of their enemies, had equal abilities at leaſt with their predeceſſors; whoſe intereſt made it neceſſary for them (although their inclinations had been otherwiſe) to act upon thoſe maxims which were moſt agreeable to the conſtitution in church and ſtate; whoſe birth and patrimonies gave them weight in the nation; and who (I ſpeak of thoſe who were to have the chief part in affairs) had long lived under the ſtricteſt bonds of friendſhip: with all theſe advantages, ſupported by a vaſt majority of the landed intereſt, and the inferior clergy almoſt to a man, we have ſeveral times ſeen the preſent adminiſtration in the greateſt diſtreſs, and very near the brink of ruin, together with the cauſe of the church and monarchy committed to their charge; neither doth it appear to me at the minute I am now writ-

ting, that their power or duration are upon any tolerable foot of ſecurity: which I do not ſo much impute to the addreſs and induſtry of their enemies, as to ſome failures among themſelves, which I think have been full as viſible in their cauſes as their effects.

Nothing hath given me greater indignation than to behold a miniſtry, who came with the advantages I have repreſented, acting ever ſince upon the defenſive in the Houſe of Lords with a majority on their ſide, and, inſtead of calling others to account, as it was reaſonably expected, miſpending their time and loſing many opportunities of doing good, becauſe a ſtruggling faction kept them continually in play. This courage among the adverſaries of the court was inſpired into them by various incidents, for every one of which I think the *miniſters*, or (if that was the caſe) the *miniſter* alone is to anſwer.

For, firſt, that race of politicians, who in the cant phraſe are called the *whimſicals* *, was never ſo numerous, or at leaſt ſo active, as it hath been ſince the great change at court; many of thoſe who pretended wholly to be in with the principles upon which her majeſty and her new ſervants proceeded, either abſenting themſelves with the utmoſt indifference, in thoſe conjunctures where on the whole cauſe depended, or iding directly with the enemy.

I very well remember, when this miniſtry was not above a year old, there was a little murmuring among ſuch as are called the higher Tories or Churchmen, that quicker progreſs was not made in removing thoſe of the diſcontented party out of employments. I remember likewiſe, the reaſonings upon this matter were various even among many who were allowed to know a good deal of the inſide of the court: ſome ſuppoſed the queen was at firſt prevailed on to make that great change, with

* Whimſicals were Tories who had been eager for the concluſion of the peace till the treaties were perfected, then they could come up to no direct approbation. In the clamour raiſed about the danger of the ſucceſſion, they joined the Whigs, and declared direct againſt their party, and affected in moſt other points a moſt glorious neutrality. See Bolingbroke's letter to Wyndam, p. 48. 45

t

no other view than that of acting for the future upon a *moderating ſcheme*, in order to reconcile both parties; and I believe there might poſſibly have been ſome grounds for this ſuppoſition. Others conceived the employments were left undiſpoſed of, in order to keep alive the hopes of many more impatient candidates than ever could be gratified. This hath ſince been looked on as a very high train of politics, and to have ſucceeded accordingly; becauſe it is the opinion of many, that the numerous pretenders to places would never have been kept in order, if all expectation had been cut off. Others were yet more refined; and thought it neither wiſe nor ſafe wholly to extinguiſh all oppoſition from the other ſide; becauſe in the nature of things it was abſolutely neceſſary that there ſhould be parties in an Engliſh parliament; and a faction already odious to the people might be ſuffered to continue with leſs danger than any new one that could ariſe. To confirm this, it was ſaid, that the majority in the Houſe of Commons was too great on the ſide of the High-church, and began to form themſelves into a body (by the name of the October-club) in order to put the miniſtry under ſubjection. Laſtly, the danger of introducing too great a number of unexperienced men at once into office, was urged as an irrefragable reaſon for making changes by ſlow degrees. To diſcard an able officer from an employment, or part of a commiſſion, where the revenue or trade were concerned, for no other reaſon but differing in ſome principles of government, might be of terrible conſequence.

However, it is certain, that none of theſe excuſes were able to paſs among men, who argued only from the principles of general reaſon. For firſt, they looked upon all ſchemes of comprehenſion to be as viſionary and impoſſible in the ſtate, as in the church. Secondly, while the ſpirit raiſed by the trial of Dr. Sacheverel continued in motion, men were not ſo keen upon coming *in* themſelves, as to ſee their enemies *out*, and deprived of all aſſiſtance to do miſchief: and it is urged further, that this general ambition of hunting after places, grew chiefly from ſeeing them ſo long undiſpoſed of, and from too general an encouragement by promiſes, to all who were thought capable of doing either good or hurt. Thirdly, the

the fear of creating another party in caſe the preſent faction were wholly ſubdued, was in the opinion of plain men, and in regard to the ſituation of our affairs, too great a ſacrifice of the nation's ſafety to the *genius* of politics; conſidering how much was to be done, and how little time might probably be allowed. Beſides, the diviſions of a Houſe of Commons into *court* and *country* parties, which was the evil they ſeemed to apprehend, could never be dangerous to a good miniſtry, who had the true intereſt and conſtitution of their country at heart: as for the apprehenſion of too great a majority in the Houſe of Commons, it appeared to be ſo vain, that upon ſome points of importance the court was hardly able to procure one. And the October-club, which appeared ſo formidable at firſt to ſome politicians, proved in the ſequel to be the chief ſupport of thoſe who ſuſpected them. It was likewiſe very well known that the greateſt part of thoſe men, whom the former miniſtry left in poſſeſſion of employments, were loudly charged with inſufficiency or corruption, over and above their obnoxious tenets in religion and government; ſo that it would have been a matter of ſome difficulty to make a worſe choice; beſides, that plea for keeping men of factious principles in employment upon the ſcore of their abilities, was thought to be extended a little too far, and conſtrued to take in all employments whatſoever, although many of them required no more abilities than would ſerve to qualify a gentleman-uſher at court: ſo that this laſt excuſe for the very ſlow ſteps made in diſarming the adverſaries of the crown, was allowed indeed to have more plauſibility, but leſs truth than any of the former.

I do not here pretend to condemn the counſels or actions of the preſent miniſtry: their ſafety and intereſt are viſibly united with thoſe of the public; they are perſons of unqueſtionable abilities, altogether unſuſpected of avarice or corruption, and have the advantage to be further recommended by the dread and hatred of the oppoſite faction. However, it is manifeſt that the zeal of their friends hath been cooling towards them for above two years paſt; they have been frequently deſerted or diſtreſſed upon the moſt preſſing occaſions, and very near giving up in deſpair: their characters have been e

v

reated with the utmoſt barbarity and injuſtice in both houſes, by ſcurrilous and enraged orators; while their neareſt friends, and even thoſe who muſt have a ſhare in heir diſgrace, never offered a word in their vindication.

When I examine with myſelf what occaſions the miniſtry may have given for this coldneſs, inconſtancy, and liſcontent among their friends, I at the ſame time recolect the various conjectures, reaſonings and ſuſpicions, vhich have run ſo freely for three years paſt, concerning he deſigns of the court: I do not only mean ſuch conjectures, as are born in a coffee-houſe, or invented by the nalice of a party, but alſo the concluſions (however miſtaken) of wiſe and good men, whoſe quality and ſtation itted them to underſtand the reaſon of public proceedings, and in whoſe power it lay to recommend or diſgrace an adminiſtration to the people. I muſt therefore take the boldneſs to aſſert, that all theſe diſcontents, how ruinous ſoever they may prove in the conſequences, have moſt unneceſſarily ariſen from the want of a due *communication* and *concert*. Every man muſt have a light ſufficient for the length of the way he is appointed to go; there is a degree of confidence due to all ſtations; and a petty conſtable will neither act chearfully or wiſely without that ſhare of it which properly belongs to him: although the main ſpring in a watch be out of ſight, there is an intermediate communication between it and the ſmalleſt wheel, or elſe no uſeful motion could be performed. This reſerved myſterious way of acting, upon points where there appeared not the leaſt occaſion for it, and towards perſons, who at leaſt, in right of their poſts, expected a more open treatment, was imputed to ſome hidden deſign, which every man conjectured to be the very thing he was moſt afraid of. Thoſe who profeſſed the height of what is called the church principle, ſuſpected, that a *comprehenſion* was intended, wherein the *moderate* men on both ſides might be equally employed. Others went farther, and dreaded ſuch a comprehenſion, as directly tending to bring the old exploded principles and perſons once more into play. Again, ſome affected to be uneaſy about the ſucceſſion, and ſeemed to think there *was a view of introducing* that perſon, whatever he is, *who pretends to claim* the crown by inheritance. Others,

thers, eſpecially of late, ſurmiſed on the contrary, tha demands of the houſe of Hanover were induſtriouſl mented by ſome in power, without the privity of —— or ——. Now, although theſe accuſations too inconſiſtent to be all of them true, yet they maliciouſly ſuffered to paſs, and thereby took off mu that popularity, which thoſe at the helm ſtood in nee to ſupport them under the difficulties of a long perpl negociation, a daily addition of public debts, and ar haulted treaſury.

But the effects of this myſtical manner of proce did not end here: for the late diſſenſions betwee great men at court (which have been, for ſome time the public entertainment of every coffee-houſe) are ſa have ariſen from the ſame fountain; while on on very great reſerve, and certainly very great reſent on the other *, if we may believe general report (pretend to know no farther) have inflamed animoſiti ſuch a height, as to make all reconcilement impracti Suppoſing this to be true, it may ſerve for a great of humiliation to mankind, to behold the habits an ſions of men, otherwiſe highly accompliſhed, trium over intereſt, friendſhip, honour, and their own per ſafety, as well as that of their country, and probal a moſt gracious princeſs, who hath intruſted it to A ſhip's crew quarrelling in a ſtorm, or while thei mies are within gun-ſhot, is but a faint idea of this infatuation: of which, although it be hard to ſay en ſome people may think perhaps I have already ſai much.

Since this unhappy incident, the deſertion of fi and loſs of reputation have been ſo great, that I d ſee how the miniſters could have continued many i in their ſtations, if their oppoſers of all kinds had a about the methods by which they ſhould be ruined their preſervation hitherto ſeems to reſemble his, had two poiſons given him together of contrary opera

It may ſeem very impertinent in one of my le

* Lord Oxford's reſerve was the cauſe of Bolingbrok ſentment. *Hawkeſ.*

point out to thoſe who ſit at the helm, what courſe they ought to ſteer. I know enough of courts to be ſenſible, how mean an opinion great miniſters have of moſt men's underſtanding; to a degree, that in any other ſcience would be called the groſſeſt pedantry. However, unleſs I offer my ſentiments in this point, all I have hitherto ſaid, will be to no purpoſe.

The general wiſhes and deſires of a people are perhaps more obvious to other men, than to miniſters of ſtate. There are two points of the higheſt importance, wherein a very great majority of the kingdom appear perfectly hearty and unanimous. Firſt, that the church of England ſhould be preſerved entire in all her rights, powers and privileges; all doctrines relating to government diſcouraged, which ſhe condemns; all ſchiſms, ſects and hereſies diſcountenanced and kept under due ſubjection, as far as conſiſts with the lenity of our conſtitution; her open enemies (among whom I include at leaſt diſſenters of all denominations) not truſted with the ſmalleſt degree of civil or military power; and her ſecret adverſaries, under the names of Whigs, Low-church, Republicans, Moderation-men and the like, receive no marks of favour from the crown, but what they ſhould deſerve by a ſincere reformation.

Had this point been ſteadily purſued in all its parts, for three years paſt, and aſſerted as the avowed reſolution of the court, there muſt probably have been an end of faction, which hath been able ever ſince with ſo much vigour to diſturb and inſult the adminiſtration. I know very well, that ſome refiners pretend to argue for the uſefulneſs of parties in ſuch a government as ours: I have ſaid ſomething of this already, and have heard a great many idle wiſe topics upon the ſubject. But I ſhall not argue that matter at preſent; I ſuppoſe, if a man thinks it neceſſary to *play* with a *ſerpent*, he will chuſe one of a kind that is leaſt miſchievous; otherwiſe, although it appears to be cruſhed, it may have life enough to ſting him to death. So, I think it is not ſafe tampering with the preſent faction, at leaſt at this juncture: firſt, becauſe their principles and practices have been already very dangerous to the conſtitution in church and ſtate: ſecondly, becauſe they are highly irritated with the loſs of their

power,

power, full of venom and vengeance, and prepared
execute every thing that rage or malice can ſuggeſt: l
principally, becauſe they have prevailed by miſrepreſ
tations and other artifices, to make the ſucceſſor look
on them as the only perſons he can truſt: upon wh
account they cannot be too ſoon, or too much diſabl
neither will England ever be ſafe from the attempt
this wicked confederacy, until their ſtrength and inte
ſhall be ſo far reduced, that for the future it ſhall not
in the power of the crown, although in conjunction w
any rich and factious body of men, to chuſe an ill m
rity in the Houſe of Commons.

One ſtep very neceſſary to this great work, will b
regulate the army, and chiefly thoſe troops which in t
turns have the care of her Majeſty's perſon; who
moſt of them fitter to guard a prince under on *high c*
of juſtice, than ſeated on the throne. The pecu
hand of Providence hath hitherto preſerved her Maje
encompaſſed, whether ſleeping or travelling, by her e
mies: but ſince religion teacheth us, that Provide
ought not to be tempted, it is ill-venturing to truſt t
precious life any longer to thoſe, who, by their public
haviour and diſcourſe, diſcover their impatience to ſe
at an end; that they may have liberty to be the inſ
ments of glutting at once the revenge of their pati
and their own. It ſhould be well remembered, wha
ſatisfaction theſe gentlemen (after the example of t
betters) were ſo ſanguine to expreſs upon the Que
laſt illneſs at Windſor, and what threatenings they
of refuſing to obey their general, in caſe that illneſs
proved fatal. Nor do I think it a want of charity to
pect, that, in ſuch an evil day, an enraged faction wo
be highly pleaſed with the power of the ſword, and w
great connivance leave it ſo long unſheathed, until t
were got rid of their moſt formidable adverſaries.
the mean time it muſt be a very melancholy proſp
that, whenever it ſhall pleaſe God to viſit us with this
lamity, thoſe who are paid to be defenders of the
power, will ſtand ready for any acts of violence, th
Junto, compoſed of the greateſt enemies to the conſtit
on, ſhall think fit to enjoin them.

The other point of great importance is the ſec

proteſtant ſucceſſion in the houſe of Hanover: not from any partiality to that illuſtrious houſe, further than as it hath had the honour to mingle with the blood royal of England, and is the neareſt branch of our legal line reformed from popery. This point hath one advantage over the former, that both parties profeſs to deſire the ſame bleſſing for poſterity, but differ about the means of ſecuring it. From whence it hath come to paſs, that the proteſtant ſucceſſion, in appearance the deſire of the whole nation, hath proved the greateſt topic of ſlander, jealouſy, ſuſpicion and diſcontent.

I have been ſo curious as to aſk ſeveral acquaintances among the oppoſite party, whether they, or their leaders, did really ſuſpect there had been ever any deſign in the miniſtry to weaken the ſucceſſion in favour of the *pretender*, or of any other perſon whatſoever. Some of them freely anſwered in the negative: others were of the ſame opinion, but added, they did not know what might be done in time, and upon farther provocations: others again ſeemed to believe the affirmative, but could never produce any plauſible grounds for their belief. I have likewiſe been aſſured by a perſon of ſome conſequence, that, during a very near and conſtant familiarity with the great men at court for four years paſt, he never could obſerve, even in thoſe hours of converſation where there is uſually leaſt reſtraint, that one word ever paſſed among them to ſhew a diſlike to the preſent ſettlement; although they would ſometimes lament, that the falſe repreſentation of their's and the kingdom's enemies had made ſome impreſſions in the mind of the ſucceſſor. As to my own circle of acquaintance, I can ſafely affirm, that, excepting thoſe who are *nonjurors* by profeſſion, I have not met with above two perſons who appeared to have any ſcruples concerning the preſent limitation of the crown. I therefore think it may very impartially be pronounced, that the number of thoſe, who wiſh to ſee the ſon of the abdicated prince upon the throne, is altogether inconſiderable. And further, I believe it will be found, that there are none who ſo much dread any attempt he *ſhall make* for the recovery of his imagined *rights, as the Roman* Catholics of England; who love *their freedom and* properties too well to deſire his entrance

trance by a French army, and a field of blood; who muſt continue upon the ſame foot if he changeth his religion, and muſt expect to be the firſt and greateſt ſufferer if he ſhould happen to fail.

As to the perſon of this nominal prince, he lies under all manner of diſadvantages: the vulgar imagine him to have been a child impoſed upon the nation, by the fraudulent zeal of his parents and their bigotted counſellors; who took ſpecial care, againſt all the rules of common policy, to educate him in their hateful ſuperſtition, ſucked in with his milk and confirmed in his manhood, too ſtrong to be now ſhaken by Mr Leſley *; and a counterfeit converſation will be too groſs to paſs upon the kingdom, after what we have ſeen and ſuffered from the like practice in his father. He is likewiſe ſaid to be of weak intellectuals, and an unſound conſtitution: he was treated contemptibly enough by the young princes of France, even during the war; is now wholly neglected by that crown, and driven to live in exile upon a ſmall exhibition: he is utterly unknown in England, which he left in the cradle: his father's friends are moſt of them dead, the reſt antiquated or poor. Six and twenty years have almoſt paſt ſince the *revolution*, and the bulk of thoſe who are now moſt in action, either at court, in parliament, or public offices, were then boys at ſchool or the univerſities, and look upon that great change to have happened during a period of time for which they are not accountable. The logic of the higheſt tories is now, that this was the eſtabliſhment they found, as ſoon as they arrived to a capacity of judging; that they had no hand in turning out the late king, and therefore have no crime to anſwer for, if it were any: that the inheritance to the crown is fixed in purſuance of laws made ever ſince their remembrance, by which all papiſts are excluded, and they have no other rule to go by: that they will no more diſpute King William the *third*'s title, than King William

* Leſley was a nonjuring clergyman, who wrote a letter from Barleduc in Lorrain, the place of the pretender's reſidence, addreſſed to a member of parliament in London, in praiſe and on behalf of his prince. The letter was printed, and publicly handed about in London. Hawkeſ.

the

he *firſt*'s; ſince they muſt have recourſe to hiſtory for both: that they have been inſtructed in the doctrines of paſſive obedience, non-reſiſtance and hereditary-right, and find them all neceſſary for preſerving the preſent eſtabliſhment in church and ſtate, and for continuing the ſucceſſion in the houſe of Hanover, and muſt, in their own opinion, renounce all thoſe doctrines, by ſetting up any other title to the crown. This, I ſay, ſeems to be the political creed of all the high-principled men I have for ſome time met with of forty years old and under; which although I do not pretend to juſtify in every part, yet I am ſure it ſets the Proteſtant ſucceſſion upon a much firmer foundation, than all the indigeſted ſchemes of thoſe who profeſs to act upon what they call *revolution-principles*.

Neither ſhould it perhaps be ſoon forgotten, that, during the greateſt licentiouſneſs of the preſs, while the ſacred character of the Queen was every day inſulted in factious papers and ballads, not the leaſt reflecting inſinuation ever appeared againſt the Hanover family, whatever occaſion was offered to intemperate pens, by the raſhneſs or indiſcretion of one or two miniſters from thence.

From all theſe conſiderations, I muſt therefore lay it down as an unconteſtable truth, that the ſucceſſion to theſe kingdoms in the illuſtrious houſe of Hanover, is as firmly ſecured as the nature of the thing can poſſibly admit; by the oaths of all thoſe who are intruſted with any office, by the very principles of thoſe who are termed the *high-church*, by the general inclinations of the people, by the inſignificancy of that perſon who claims it from inheritance, and the little aſſiſtance he can expect, either from princes abroad, or adherents at home.

However, ſince the virulent oppoſers of the queen and her adminiſtration, have ſo far prevailed by their emiſſaries at the court of Hanover, and by their practices upon one or two ignorant, unmannerly *meſſengers* from thence, as to make the *elector* deſire ſome farther ſecurity, and ſend over a *memorial* here to that end: the great queſtion is, how to give reaſonable ſatisfaction to his highneſs, and (what is infinitely of greater conſequence) at the ſame time, conſult the honour and ſafety of the queen, whoſe quiet *poſſeſſion* is of much more conſequence to us

of the preſent age, than his *reverſion*. The ſubſtan his *memorial*, if I retain it right, is to deſire that one of his family might live in England, with ſu maintenance as is uſual to thoſe of the royal blood, that certain *titles* ſhould be conferred upon the reſt, cording to antient cuſtom. The *memorial* doth not cify which of the family ſhould be invited to reſide and if it had, I believe however, her majeſty w have looked upon it as a circumſtance left to her choice.

But, as all this is moſt manifeſtly unneceſſary in i and only in compliance with the miſtaken doubts of a ſumptive heir; ſo the nation would (to ſpeak in the guage of Mr. Steel) EXPECT, that her majeſty ſhou made perfectly eaſy from that ſide for the future more to be alarmed with apprehenſions of *viſits* o *mands of writs*, where * ſhe hath not thought fit to any *invitation*. The nation would likewiſe *expect*, there ſhould be an end of all private commerce bet that court and the leaders of a party here; and, tha electoral *highneſs* ſhould *declare* himſelf entirely ſat with all her majeſty's proceedings, her treaties of and commerce, her alliances abroad, her choice of ſters at home, and particularly in her moſt gracious deſcenſions to his requeſt: that he would upon all per occaſions, and in the moſt public manner, diſ his utter diſlike of factious perſons and principles, b ſpecially of that party, which, under the pretence ter of his protection, hath ſo long diſquieted the dom: and laſtly, that he would acknowledge the neſs of the queen, and juſtice of the nation, in ſo ſecuring the ſucceſſion to his family.

It is indeed a problem which I could never com hend, why the court of Hanover, who have all a thought themſelves ſo perfectly ſecure in the affect

* Baron Schutz, envoy extraordinary from the elector of nover, demanded a *writ* for the Electoral Prince to ſit houſe of peers as Duke of Cambridge, and it was expected his Highneſs would have made a viſit to the court of Lord *Hawkeſ*.

the principles, and the profeſſions of the *low-church* party, ſhould not have endeavoured, according to the uſual politics of princes, to gain over thoſe who were repreſented as their enemies; ſince theſe ſuppoſed enemies had made ſo many advances, were in poſſeſſion of all the powers, had framed the very ſettlement to which that illuſtrious family owes its claim; had all of them abjured the pretender; were now employed in the great offices of ſtate, and compoſed a majority in both houſes of parliament. Not to mention, that the queen herſelf, with the bulk of the landed gentry and commonalty throughout the kingdom, were of the number. This, one would think, might be a ſtrength ſufficient not only to *obſtruct* but to *beſtow* a ſucceſſion: and ſince the preſumed heir could not but be perfectly ſecure of the other party, whoſe greateſt avowed grievance was the pretended danger of his future rights; it might therefore ſurely have been worth his while, to have made at leaſt one ſtep towards cultivating a fair correſpondence with the power in poſſeſſion. Neither could thoſe, who are called his friends, have blamed him, or with the leaſt decency enter into any engagements for defeating his title.

But why may not the reaſons of this proceeding in the *elector* be directly contrary to what is commonly imagined? Methinks I could endeavour to believe, that his highneſs is thoroughly acquainted with both parties; is convinced, that no true member of the church of England can eaſily be ſhaken in his principles of loyalty, or forget the obligation of an oath, by any provocation: That *theſe* are therefore the people he intends to rely upon, and keeps only fair with the *others* from a *true* notion he hath of their doctrines, which prompt them to forget their duty upon every motive of intereſt or ambition. If this conjecture be right, his highneſs cannot ſure but entertain a very high eſteem of ſuch miniſters, who continue to act under the dread and appearance of a ſucceſſor's utmoſt diſpleaſure, and the threats of an enraged faction, whom he is ſuppoſed alone to favour, and to be guided entirely in his judgment of Britiſh affairs and perſons by their opinions.

But to return from this digreſſion: the preſence of that

infant prince * among us could not, I think, in any ſort, be inconſiſtent with the ſafety of the queen; he would be in no danger of being corrupted in his principles, or expoſed in his perſon by vicious companions; he could be at the head of no factious clubs and cabals, nor be attended by a hired rabble, which his flatterers might repreſent as popularity. He would have none of that impatience which the frailty of human nature gives to expecting heirs. There would be no pretence for men to make their court by affecting German modes and *refinements* in dreſs or behaviour: nor would there be an occaſion of inſinuating to him, how much more his levee was frequented than the anti-chambers of St. James's. Add to all this, the advantages of being educated in our religion, laws, language, manners, nature of the government, each ſo very different from thoſe he would leave behind. By which likewiſe he might be highly uſeful to his father, if that prince ſhould happen to ſurvive his majeſty.

The late King William, who, after his marriage with the lady Mary of England, could have no probable expectation of the crown, and very little even of being queen's huſband, (the Duke of York having a young wife) was no ſtranger to our language or manners, and went often to the chapel of his princeſs; which I obſerve the rather, becauſe I could heartily wiſh the like diſpoſition were in another court, and becauſe it may be diſagreeable to a prince to take up new doctrines on a ſudden, or ſpeak to his ſubjects by an interpreter.

An ill-natured or inquiſitive man may ſtill, perhaps, deſire to preſs the queſtion farther, by aſking, what is to be done, in caſe it ſhould ſo happen, that this malevolent working party at home hath credit enough with the court of Hanover, to continue the ſuſpicion, jealouſy, and uneaſineſs there againſt the queen and her miniſtry; to make ſuch demands be ſtill inſiſted on, as are by no means thought proper to be complied with; and in the mean

* The infant prince was the ſon of the electoral prince of Hanover, who might be choſen to reſide here in conſequence of the Memorial. See p. 378. *Hawkeſ.*

tim

time to ſtand at arms length with her majeſty, and in cloſe conjunction with thoſe who oppoſe her.

I take the anſwer to be eaſy; in all conteſts, the ſafeſt way is to put thoſe we diſpute with, as much *in the wrong* as we can. When her Majeſty ſhall have offered ſuch or the like conceſſions as I have above mentioned, in order to remove thoſe ſcruples, artificially raiſed in the mind of the expectant heir, and to divide him from that faction by which he is ſuppoſed to have been miſled; ſhe hath done as much as any prince can do, and more than any other would probably do in her caſe; and will be juſtified before God and man, whatever be the event. The equitable part of thoſe who now ſide againſt the court, will probably be more temperate; and, if a due diſpatch be made in placing the civil and military power in the hands of ſuch as wiſh well to the conſtitution, it cannot be any way for the quiet or intereſt of a ſucceſſor to gratify ſo ſmall a faction, as will probably then remain, at the expence of a much more numerous and conſiderable part of his ſubjects. Neither do I ſee how the principles of ſuch a party, either in religion or government, will prove very agreeable, becauſe I think Luther and Calvin ſeem to have differed as much as any two among the reformers: and becauſe a German prince will probably be ſuſpicious of thoſe who think they can never depreſs the prerogative enough.

But ſuppoſing, once for all, as far as poſſible, that the *elector* ſhould utterly refuſe to be upon any terms of confidence with the preſent miniſtry, and all others of their principles, as enemies to him and the ſucceſſion; nor eaſy with the queen herſelf, but upon ſuch conditions as will not be thought *conſiſtent with her ſafety and honour*; and continue to place all his hopes and truſt in the diſcontented party: I think it were humbly to be wiſhed, that whenever the ſucceſſion ſhall take place, the alterations intended by the new prince ſhould be made by *himſelf*, and not by his *deputies*; becauſe I am of opinion, that the clauſe empowering the ſucceſſor to appoint a *latent unlimited* number, additional to the ſeven *regents* named in the *act*, went upon a ſuppoſition, that the *ſecret committee* would be of ſuch, whoſe enmity and contrary principles diſpoſed them to confound the reſt. King

William

William, whoſe title was much more controverted than that of her Majeſty's ſucceſſor can ever probably be, did for ſeveral years leave the adminiſtration of the kingdom in the hands of Lords Juſtices, during the height of a war, and while the abdicated prince himſelf was frequently attempting an invaſion: from whence one might imagine, that the regents appointed by parliament upon the demiſe of the crown, would be able to keep the peace during an abſence of a *few* weeks without any *colleagues*. However, I am pretty confident that the only reaſon, why a power was given of chuſing *dormant* viceroys, was to take away all pretence of a neceſſity to invite over *any* of the family here, during her Majeſty's life. So that I do not well apprehend what arguments the *elector* can uſe to inſiſt upon *both*.

To conclude; the only way of ſecuring the conſtitution in church and ſtate, and conſequently this very Proteſtant ſucceſſion itſelf, will be by leſſening the power of our domeſtic adverſaries as much as can poſſibly conſiſt with the lenity of our government; and if this be not ſpeedily done, it will be eaſy to point where the nation is to fix the blame; for we are well aſſured, that ſince the account her Majeſty received of the cabals, the triumphs, the inſolent behaviour of the whole faction during her late illneſs at Windſor, ſhe hath been as willing to ſee them deprived of all power to do miſchief, as any of her moſt zealous and loyal ſubjects can deſire.

THOUGHTS

HOUGHTS on VARIOUS SUBJECTS.

VE have juſt enough religion to make us hate, but not enough to make us love one another.

Reflect on things paſt, as wars, negociations, factions, . we enter ſo little into thoſe intereſts, that we wonder w men could poſſibly be ſo buſy and concerned for ngs ſo tranſitory; look on the preſent times, we find ſame humour, yet wonder not at all.

A wiſe man endeavours, by conſidering all circumſtan-, to make conjectures, and form concluſions; but the alleſt accident interveening (and in the courſe of affairs s impoſſible to foreſee all) does often produce ſuch turns d changes, that at laſt he is juſt ſo much in doubt of e-nts as the moſt ignorant and unexperienced perſon.

Poſitiveneſs is a good quality for preachers and orators, cauſe he that would obtrude his thoughts and reaſons on a multitude, will convince others the more, as he pears convinced himſelf.

How is it poſſible to expect that mankind will take vice, when they will not ſo much as take warning?

forget whether advice be among the loſt things which iſtotle ſays are to be found in the moon; that and time ght to have been there.

No preacher is liſtened to but time, which gives us the ne train and turn of thought that elder people have ed in vain to put into our heads before.

When we deſire or ſollicit any thing, our minds run olly on the good ſide or circumſtances of it; when it obtained, our minds run wholly on the bad ones.

In a *glaſs-houſe* the workmen often fling in a ſmall antity of freſh coals, which ſeems to diſturb the fire, but y much enlivens it. This ſeems to allude to a gentle ring of the paſſions, that the mind may not languiſh.

Religion ſeems to have grown an infant with age, and quires miracles to nurſe it as it had in its infancy.

All fits of pleaſure are balanced by an equal degree of

pain.

pain or languor; it is like ſpending this year part of the next year's revenue.

The latter part of a wiſe man's life is taken up in curing the follies, prejudices, and falſe opinions he had contracted in the former.

Would a writer know how to behave himſelf with relation to poſterity, let him conſider in old books what he finds that he is glad to know, and what omiſſions he moſt laments.

Whatever the poets pretend, it is plain they give immortality to none but themſelves: it is Homer and Virgil we reverence and admire, not Achilles or Æneas. With hiſtorians it is quite the contrary; our thoughts are taken up with the actions, perſons, and events we read, and we little regard the authors.

When a true genius appears in the world, you may know him by this ſign, that the dunces are all in confederacy againſt him.

Men who poſſeſs all the advantages of life, are in a ſtate where there are many accidents to diſorder and diſcompoſe, but few to pleaſe them.

It is unwiſe to puniſh cowards with ignominy; for if they had regarded that, they would not have been cowards: death is their proper puniſhment, becauſe they fear it moſt.

The greateſt inventions were produced in the times of ignorance; as the uſe of the *compaſs*, *gun-powder*, and *printing*; and by the dulleſt nation, as the Germans.

One argument to prove that the common relations of *ghoſts* and *ſpectres* are generally falſe, may be drawn from the opinion held, that ſpirits are never ſeen by more than one perſon at a time; that is to ſay, it ſeldom happens to above one perſon in a company to be poſſeſſed with any high degree of ſpleen or melancholy.

I am apt to think, that in the day of judgment there will be ſmall allowance given to the wiſe for their want of morals, and to the ignorant for their want of faith, becauſe both are without excuſe. This renders the advantages equal of ignorance and knowledge. But ſome ſcruples in the wiſe, and ſome vices in the ignorant, will perhaps be forgiven upon the ſtrength of temptation, to each.

The

The value of ſeveral circumſtances in ſtory leſſens very much by diſtance of time, though ſome minute circumſtances are very valuable; and it requires great judgment in a writer to diſtinguiſh.

It is grown a word of courſe, for writers to ſay, This critical age, as divines ſay, This ſinful age.

It is pleaſant to obſerve how free the preſent age is in laying taxes on the next: *Future ages ſhall talk of this; this ſhall be famous to all poſterity:* whereas their time and thoughts will be taken up about preſent things, as ours are now.

The *Camæleon*, who is ſaid to feed upon nothing but air, hath of all animals the nimbleſt tongue.

When a man is made a ſpiritual peer he loſes his ſirname; when a temporal, his Chriſtian name.

It is in diſputes as in armies, where the weaker ſide ſets up falſe lights, and makes a great noiſe, to make the enemy believe them more numerous and ſtrong than they really are.

Some men, under the notions of weeding out prejudices, eradicate virtue, honeſty, and religion.

In all well-inſtituted commonwealths, care has been taken to limit mens poſſeſſions; which is done for many reaſons, and among the reſt, for one which perhaps is not often conſidered, that when bounds are ſet to mens deſires, after they have acquired as much as the laws will permit them, their private intereſt is at an end, and they have nothing to do but take care of the public.

There are but three ways for a man to revenge himſelf of the cenſure of the world; to deſpiſe it, to return the like, or to endeavour to live ſo as to avoid it: the firſt of theſe is uſually pretended, the laſt is almoſt impoſſible, the univerſal practice is for the ſecond.

Herodotus tells us, that in cold countries beaſts very ſeldom have horns, but in hot they have very large ones. This might bear a very pleaſant application.

I never heard a finer piece of ſatire againſt *lawyers*, than that of *aſtrologers*, when they pretend by rules of art to tell when a ſuit will end, and whether to the advantage of the plaintiff or defendant; thus making the matter depend entirely upon the influence of the ſtars, without the leaſt regard to the merits of the cauſe.

The

The expreſſion in Apocrypha, about Tobit an dog following him, I have often heard ridiculed, yet mer has the ſame words of Telemachus more than ſ and Virgil ſays ſomething like it of Evander. A take the book of Tobit to be partly poetical.

I have known ſome men poſſeſſed of good qua which were very ſerviceable to others, but uſele themſelves; like a ſun-dial on the front of a hou inform the neighbours and paſſengers, but not the o within.

If a man would regiſter all his opinions upon love litics, religion, learning, &c. beginning from his and ſo go on to old age, what a bundle of inconſiſt and contradictions would appear at laſt?

What they do in Heaven we are ignorant of; they do not we are told expreſly, that they neither ry, nor are given in marriage.

When a man obſerves the choice of ladies now-a in the diſpenſing of their favours, can he forbear p ſome veneration to the memory of thoſe mares men ed by Xenophon †, who, while their manes wer that is, while they were in their beauty, would neve mit the embraces of an aſs.

It is a miſerable thing to live in ſuſpence; it i life of a ſpider.

Vive quidem, pende tamen, improba, dixit.

‖ Ovid. Meta

The Stoical ſcheme of ſupplying our wants by lop off our deſires, is like cutting off our feet when we ſhoes.

Phyſicians ought not to give their judgment of re on, for the ſame reaſon that butchers are not admi to be jurors upon life and death.

The reaſon, why ſo few marriages are happy, is cauſe young ladies ſpend their time in making nets, in making cages.

If a man will obſerve as he walks the ſtreets, I lieve he will find the merrieſt countenances in mourn coaches.

Nothing more unqualifies a man to act with prude

† De Re Equeſtri.

than a misfortune that is attended with ſhame and guilt.

The power of fortune is confeſſed only by the miſerable; for the happy impute all their ſucceſs to prudence or merit.

Ambition often puts men upon doing the meaneſt offices: ſo climbing is performed in the ſame poſture with creeping.

Ill company is like a dog, who dirts thoſe moſt whom he loves beſt.

Cenſure is the tax a man pays to the public for being eminent.

Although men are accuſed for not knowing their own weakneſs, yet perhaps as few know their own ſtrength. It is in men as in ſoils, where ſometimes there is a vein of gold which the owner knows not of.

Satire is reckoned the eaſieſt of all wit: but I take it to be otherwiſe in very bad times: for it is as hard to ſatirize well a man of diſtinguiſhed vices, as to praiſe well a man of diſtinguiſhed virtues. It is eaſy enough to do either to people of moderate characters.

Invention is the talent of youth, and judgment of age; ſo that our judgment grows harder to pleaſe, when we have fewer things to offer it: this goes through the whole commerce of life. When we are old, our friends find it difficult to pleaſe us, and are leſs concerned whether we be pleaſed or no.

No wiſe man ever wiſhed to be younger.

An idle reaſon leſſens the weight of the good ones you gave before.

The motives of the beſt actions will not bear too ſtrict an inquiry. It is allowed, that the cauſe of moſt actions, good or bad, may be reſolved into the love of ourſelves; but the ſelf-love of ſome men inclines them to pleaſe others; and the ſelf-love of others is wholly employed in pleaſing themſelves. This makes the great diſtinction between virtue and vice. Religion is the beſt motive of all actions, yet religion is allowed to be the higheſt inſtance of ſelf-love.

When the world has once begun to uſe us ill, it af-

wards continues the ſame treatment with leſs ſcruple of ceremony, as men do to a whore.

Old men view beſt at a diſtance with the eyes of their underſtanding as well as with thoſe of nature.

Some people take more care to hide their wiſdom than their folly.

Arbitrary power is the natural object of temptation to a prince, as wine or women to a young fellow, or a bribe to a judge, or avarice to old age, or vanity to a woman.

Anthony Henley's farmer dying of an *aſthma*, ſaid, Well, if I can get this breath once *out*, I'll take care it ſhall never get *in* again.

The humour of exploding many things under the name of trifles, fopperies, and only imaginary goods, is a very falſe proof either of wiſdom or magnanimity, and a great check to virtuous actions. For inſtance, with regard to fame, there is in moſt people a reluctance and unwillingneſs to be forgotten. We obſerve even among the vulgar, how fond they are to have an inſcription over their grave. It requires but little philoſophy to diſcover and obſerve that there is no intrinſic value in all this; however, if it be founded in our nature, as an incitement to virtue, it ought not to be ridiculed.

Complaint is the largeſt tribute heaven receives, and the ſincereſt part of our devotion.

The common fluency of ſpeech in many men, and moſt women, is owing to a ſcarcity of matter, and a ſcarcity of words; for whoever is a maſter of language, and hath a mind full of ideas, will be apt in ſpeaking to heſitate upon the choice of both: whereas common ſpeakers have only one ſet of ideas, and one ſet of words to clothe them in; and theſe are always ready at the mouth: ſo people come faſter out of a church when it is almoſt empty, than when a croud is at the door.

Few are qualified to *ſhine* in company; but it is in moſt mens power to be agreeable. The reaſon therefore why converſation runs ſo low at preſent, is not the want of underſtanding, but pride, vanity, ill-nature, affectation, ſingularity, poſitiveneſs, or ſome other vice, the effect of a wrong education.

To be vain is rather a mark of humility than pride. Vain

Vain men delight in telling what honours have been done them, what great company they have kept, and the like; by which they plainly confeſs that theſe honours were more than their due, and ſuch as their friends would not believe if they had not been told: whereas a man truly proud thinks the greateſt honours below his merit, and conſequently ſcorns to boaſt. I therefore deliver it as a maxim, That whoever deſires the character of a proud man, ought to conceal his vanity.

Law, in a free country, is, or ought to be, the determination of the majority of thoſe who have property in land.

One argument uſed to the diſadvantage of providence, I take to be a very ſtrong one in its defence. It is objected, that ſtorms and tempeſts, unfruitful ſeaſons, ſerpents, ſpiders, flies, and other noxious or troubleſome animals, with many more inſtances of the like kind, diſcover an imperfection in nature, becauſe human life would be much eaſier without them: but the deſign of providence may clearly be perceived in this proceeding. The motions of the ſun and moon; in ſhort, the whole ſyſtem of the univerſe, as far as philoſophers have been able to diſcover and obſerve, are in the utmoſt degree of regularity and perfection; but where-ever God hath left to man the power of interpoſing a remedy by thought or labour, there he hath placed things in a ſtate of imperfection on purpoſe to ſtir up human induſtry, without which life would ſtagnate, or indeed rather could not ubſiſt at all: *Curis acuunt mortalia corda.*

Praiſe is the daughter of preſent power.

How inconſiſtent is man with himſelf?

I have known ſeveral perſons of great fame for wiſdom in public affairs and councils governed by fooliſh ſervants.

I have known great miniſters, diſtinguiſhed for wit and learning, who preferred none but dunces.

I have known men of great valour cowards to their wives.

I have known men of the greateſt cunning perpetually cheated.

I knew three great miniſters, who could exactly com-

pute and ſettle the accounts of a kingdom, but were wholly ignorant of their own œconomy.

The preaching of divines helps to preſerve well-inclined men in the courſe of virtue, but ſeldom or never reclaims the vitious.

Princes uſually make wiſer choices than the ſervants whom they truſt for the diſpoſal of places: I have known a prince, more than once, chuſe an able miniſter; but I never obſerved that miniſter to uſe his credit in the diſpoſal of an employment to a perſon whom he thought the fitteſt for it. One of the greateſt in this age owned and excuſed the matter from the violence of parties, and the unreaſonableneſs of friends.

Small cauſes are ſufficient to make a man uneaſy, when great ones are not in the way: for want of a *block* he will ſtumble at a *ſtraw*.

Dignity, high ſtation, or great riches, are in ſome ſort neceſſary to old men, in order to keep the younger at a diſtance, who are otherwiſe too apt to inſult them upon the ſcore of their age.

Every man deſires to live long; but no man would be old. Love of flattery in moſt men proceeds from the mean opinion they have of themſelves; in women from the contrary.

If books and laws continue to increaſe as they have done for fifty years paſt, I am in ſome concern for future ages, how any man will be learned, or any man a lawyer.

Kings are commonly ſaid to have *long hands*; I wiſh they had as *long ears*.

Princes in their infancy, childhood, and youth, are ſaid to diſcover prodigious parts and wit, to ſpeak things that ſurpriſe and aſtoniſh: ſtrange, ſo many hopeful princes, and ſo many ſhameful kings! If they happen to die young, they would have been prodigies of wiſdom and virtue: if they live, they are often prodigies indeed, but of another ſort.

Politics, as the word is commonly underſtood, are nothing but corruptions, and conſequently of no uſe to a good king, or a good miniſtry; for which reaſon courts are ſo over-run with politics.

Silex

Silenus, the foſter-father of Bacchus, is always carried by an *aſs*, and has horns on his head. The moral is, that drunkards are led by fools, and have a great chance to be cuckolds.

Venus, a beautiful good-natured lady, was the goddeſs of love; Juno, a terrible ſhrew, the goddeſs of marriage: and they were always mortal enemies.

Thoſe who are againſt religion, muſt needs be fools: and therefore we read, that, of all animals, God refuſed the *firſt-born* of an aſs.

A very little wit is valued in a woman, as we are pleaſed with a few words ſpoken plain by a parrot.

A nice man is a man of naſty ideas.

Apollo was held the god of phyſic, and ſender of diſeaſes. Both were originally the ſame trade, and ſtill continue.

Old men and comets have been reverenced for the ſame reaſon; their long beards, and pretences to foretel events.

A perſon was aſked at court, what he thought of an ambaſſador, and his train, who were all embroidery and lace, full of bows, cringes, and geſtures; he ſaid, it was Solomon's importation, *gold and apes.*

There is a ſtory in Pauſanias of a plot for betraying of a city diſcovered by the braying of an *aſs*: the cackling of *geeſe* ſaved the *capitol*, and Catiline's conſpiracy was diſcovered by a *whore*. Theſe are the only three animals, as far as I remember, famous in hiſtory as *evidences* and *informers*.

Moſt ſorts of diverſion in men, children, and other animals, are an imitation of fighting.

Auguſtus meeting an *aſs* with a *lucky name*, foretold himſelf good fortune. I meet many aſſes, but none of them have lucky names.

If a man makes me keep my diſtance, the comfort is, he keeps his at the ſame time.

Who can deny that all men are violent lovers of truth, when we ſee them ſo poſitive in their errors, which they will maintain out of their zeal to truth, although they contradict themſelves every day of their lives?

That was excellently obſerved, ſay I, when I read a paſſage

paſſage in an author, where his opinion agrees with mine. When we differ, there I pronounce him to be *miſtaken*.

Very few men, properly ſpeaking, live at preſent, but are providing to live another time.

As univerſal a practice as lying is, and as eaſy a one as it ſeems, I do not remember to have heard three good lies in all my converſation, even from thoſe who were moſt celebrated in that faculty.

The End of the FOURTH VOLUME.